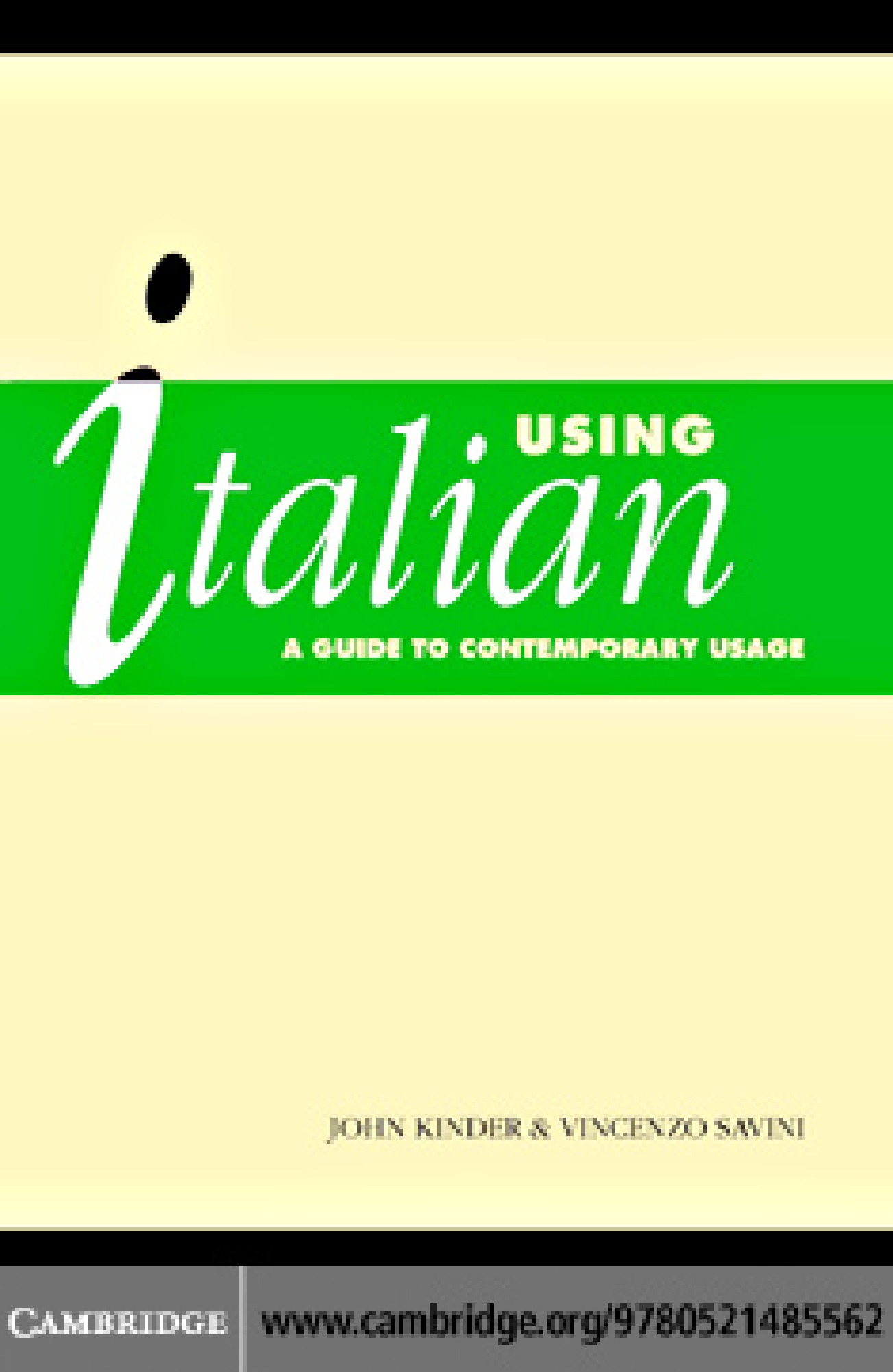

USING
Italian
A GUIDE TO CONTEMPORARY USAGE
JOHN KINDER & VINCENZO SAVINI
CAMBRIDGE
www.cambridge.org/9780521485562

VISIT…

This page intentionally left blank

Using Italian

This is a guide to Italian usage for students who have already acquired the basics of the language and wish to extend their knowledge. Unlike conventional grammars, it gives special attention to those areas of vocabulary and grammar which cause most difficulty to English speakers. Careful consideration is given throughout to questions of style, register, and politeness which are essential to achieving an appropriate level of formality or informality in writing and speech. The book surveys the contemporary linguistic scene and gives ample space to the new varieties of Italian that are emerging in modern Italy. The influence of the dialects in shaping the development of Italian is also acknowledged. Clear, readable and easy to consult via its two indexes, this is an essential reference for learners seeking access to the finer nuances of the Italian language.

J. J. KINDER is Associate Professor of Italian at the Department of European Languages and Studies, University of Western Australia. He has published widely on the Italian language spoken by migrants and their children.

V. M. SAVINI is tutor in Italian at the Department of European Languages and Studies, University of Western Australia. He works as both a tutor and a translator.

Companion titles to *Using Italian*

Using French (third edition)
A guide to contemporary usage
R. E. BATCHELOR and M. H. OFFORD
(ISBN 0 521 64177 2 hardback)
(ISBN 0 521 64593 X paperback)

Using Spanish
A guide to contemporary usage
R. E. BATCHELOR AND C. J. POUNTAIN
(ISBN 0 521 42123 3 hardback)
(ISBN 0 521 26987 3 paperback)

Using German (Second edition)
A guide to contemporary usage
MARTIN DURRELL
(ISBN 0 521 82307 2 hardback)
(ISBN 0 521 53000 8 paperback)

Using Russian
A guide to contemporary usage
DEREK OFFORD
(ISBN 0 521 45130 2 hardback)
(ISBN 0 521 45760 2 paperback)

Using Japanese
A guide to contemporary usage
WILLIAM McCLURE
(ISBN 0 521 64155 1 hardback)
(ISBN 0 521 64614 6 paperback)

Using French Synonyms
R. E. BATCHELOR AND M. H. OFFORD
(ISBN 0 521 37277 1 hardback)
(ISBN 0 521 37878 8 paperback)

Using Russian Synonyms
TERENCE WADE AND NIJOLE WHITE
(ISBN 0 521 79084 0 hardback)
(ISBN 0 521 79405 6 paperback)

Using Spanish Synonyms
R. E. BATCHELOR
(ISBN 0 521 44160 9 hardback)
(ISBN 0 521 44694 5 paperback)

Using German Synonyms
MARTIN DURRELL
(ISBN 0 521 46552 4 hardback)
(ISBN 0 521 46954 6 paperback)

Using Italian Synonyms
HOWARD MOSS AND VANNA MOTTA
(ISBN 0 521 47506 6 hardback)
(ISBN 0 521 47573 2 paperback)

Using French Vocabulary
JEAN H. DUFFY
(ISBN 0 521 57040 9 hardback)
(ISBN 0 521 57851 5 paperback)

Using Spanish Vocabulary
R. E. BATCHELOR AND MIGUEL A. SAN JOSÈ
(ISBN 0 521 81042 6 hardback)
(ISBN 0 521 00862 X paperback)

Using Italian Vocabulary
MARCEL DANESI
(ISBN 0 521 81882 6 hardback)
(ISBN 0 521 52425 3 paperback)

Further titles in preparation

Using Italian

A guide to contemporary usage

J. J. KINDER and V. M. SAVINI

CAMBRIDGE
UNIVERSITY PRESS

CAMBRIDGE UNIVERSITY PRESS
Cambridge, New York, Melbourne, Madrid, Cape Town, Singapore, São Paulo

Cambridge University Press
The Edinburgh Building, Cambridge CB2 8RU, UK
Published in the United States of America by Cambridge University Press, New York

www.cambridge.org
Information on this title: www.cambridge.org/9780521485562

© J. J. Kinder and V. M. Savini 2004

This publication is in copyright. Subject to statutory exception and to the provision of relevant collective licensing agreements, no reproduction of any part may take place without the written permission of Cambridge University Press.

First published in print format 2004

ISBN-13 978-0-511-55558-9 eBook (Dawsonera)

ISBN-13 978-0-521-48556-2 paperback

Cambridge University Press has no responsibility for the persistence or accuracy of urls for external or third-party internet websites referred to in this publication, and does not guarantee that any content on such websites is, or will remain, accurate or appropriate.

Contents

Preface and acknowledgments *page* xvii
Abbreviations xviii

1 Varieties of language 1

1.1 The Italian language today 1
1.2 The dialects 2
1.3 Dialect and language in contemporary Italy 2
1.4 Dialect and Italian in contact 4
1.5 Registers of language 5
1.6 Examples of regional variation: pronunciation 5
1.7 Examples of regional variation: grammar 7
1.8 Examples of register variation: grammar 8
1.9 Examples of regional variation: vocabulary 10
1.10 Extracts illustrating registers of Italian 12
Example of R1 (Sicilian and Northern varieties) 12
Example of R1 (Roman variety) 15
Example of R1 (Tuscan variety) 16
Example of written R1–2: SMS messages 17
Example of spoken R2: *Un'agenzia di viaggi* 19
Example of spoken R2: TV game show 20
Example of R2–3: magazine editorial 22
Example of R3: written communication from bank to its customers 24
Example of R3: police report 25
Example of R3: formal letter 27

WORDS AND THEIR MEANINGS

2 Misleading similarities 30

2.1 Similar form – different meaning: False friends 30
2.1.1 'Falsi amici' I 30
2.1.2 'Falsi amici' II: English (or English looking) words with different meanings in Italian 39

2.2 Similar form – partly similar meaning: Partial deceptive cognates 41
2.3 Paronyms with similar meanings 51
2.3.1 Paronyms with similar meanings: a general list 52
2.3.2 Paronyms with similar meanings: misleading "alterati" 66
2.4 Paronyms with different meanings 67
2.5 Verbs with similar stems 70
2.6 Gender paronyms 75
2.6.1 Gender paronyms with similar meanings 75
2.6.2 Gender paronyms with different meanings 79
2.7 Deceptive minimal pairs 83
2.8 Other types of misleading similarities 87

3 Fields of meaning – "Synonyms" 89

4 Complex verbal expressions 158

4.1 Single English verbs corresponding to complex Italian expressions 158
4.2 Single Italian verbs corresponding to complex English expressions 160
4.3 Complex Italian expressions corresponding to complex English expressions 161
4.4 Italian "impersonal" verbs 162
4.5 Verbal expressions with **la**, **ne**, **ci** 164
4.5.1 Idiomatic verbal expressions with **la** 164
4.5.2 Idiomatic verbal expressions with **ne** 166
4.5.3 Idiomatic verbal expressions with **ci** 166

5 Affective suffixes 168

5.1 Diminutive suffixes 169
5.2 Augmentative suffixes 172
5.3 Suffixes for verbs 173

6 Idioms, similes, and proverbs 174

6.1 Idioms 174
6.2 Similes based on adjectives 184
6.3 Similes based on verbs 185
6.4 Other proverbial comparisons 185
6.5 Proverbs 186

7 Personal names 188

7.1 The ancient world: Greece and Rome 189
7.2 The Bible 189
7.2.1 Old Testament 189
7.2.2 New Testament 190

7.3 The Middle Ages to the twentieth century 190
7.3.1 Non-Italian names 190
7.3.2 Italian names with a Latinized or Anglicized form in English 191

8 Geographical and astronomical names 192

8.1 Italy: administrative regions 193
8.2 Italy: cities 193
8.3 Continents 196
8.4 Europe: countries and regions 196
8.5 The Americas: countries and regions 199
8.6 Asia: countries and regions 199
8.7 Africa: countries and regions 200
8.8 Oceania: countries and regions 201
8.9 Historical or mythical places 202
8.10 Cities of the world 203
8.11 Rivers of the world 205
8.12 Mountains and volcanoes of the world 205
8.13 Planets, stars, and constellations 206

9 Abbreviations and acronyms 207

9.1 Titles and other frequently used abbreviations 208
9.2 International organizations 212
9.3 Italian non-political organizations 213
9.4 Italian official political organizations, unions etc. 214

10 Latin expressions and sayings 217

10.1 Latin expressions 217
10.2 Latin proverbs and mottoes 220

11 Grammatical terms 221

11.1 Grammatical terms 221
11.2 Punctuation marks 224
11.3 Other common terms and expressions 225

12 Numerals and telephone conventions 226

12.1 Numerals and mathematical conventions 226
12.1.1 Decimals 226
12.1.2 Mathematical operations 226
12.1.3 Ordinal numbers 226
12.2 Telephone conventions 227
12.2.1 Telephone numbers 227
12.2.2 Telephone alphabet 227

13 Measurement 229

13.1 Length 230
13.2 Weight 231
13.3 Area 232
13.4 Volume 233
13.5 Capacity (liquid) 233
13.6 Currency 234
13.7 Temperature 234
13.8 Time 235

THE CLAUSE – combining words

14 Gender 239

14.1 Gender and sex 239
14.1.1 Persons 239
14.1.2 Animals 240
14.2 Formation of masculine/feminine pairs 240
14.2.1 Unrelated m-f nouns 241
14.2.2 Related m-f nouns: anomalous m-f correspondence 242
14.2.3 Related nouns: patterns of m-f correspondence 242
14.3 Gender associated with types of noun 243
14.4 Gender associated with noun ending 245
14.5 Gender of compound nouns 248
14.5.1 Verb + noun 248
14.5.2 Noun + noun 249
14.5.3 Noun + adjective/adjective + noun 250
14.5.4 Other compounds 250
14.6 Homonyms distinguished by gender 252
14.7 Nouns with both masculine and feminine plurals 253

15 Number 256

15.1 Formation of plurals 256
15.2 Plural of compound nouns 258
15.3 Italian plurals which correspond to English singulars 259
15.4 Italian singulars which correspond to English plurals 260
15.5 Number concord 261

16 Pronouns 262

16.1 First- and second-person pronouns 262
16.2 Third-person pronouns 263
16.3 Order of object pronouns 265
16.4 Pronouns and verb 266
16.5 Pronouns of address 268

17 Comparison 270

17.1 Comparison of inequality 270
17.1.1 Nouns and pronouns 270
17.1.2 Other parts of speech 271
17.1.3 Alternatives to **di**/**che** 272
17.2 Comparison of equality 272
17.3 Comparison involving a clause 273
17.4 Superlatives 273
17.5 Irregular comparatives and superlatives 274

18 Word order 276

18.1 Subject and verb 276
18.2 Subject, verb, and object 277
18.3 Verbs, objects, and adverbs 279
18.4 Noun and adjective 280
18.5 Numerals and **altro** 283

19 Negation 284

19.1 **No** 284
19.2 **Non** 285
19.3 Negative pronouns, adjectives, and adverbs 286
19.4 Apparent negatives 288
19.5 Negation of single words 288
19.6 Other negative expressions 289

20 Periphrases 290

20.1 **Stare** + gerund 290
20.2 **Stare a** + infinitive, **essere dietro a** + infinitive 291
20.3 **Andare** + gerund 291
20.4 **Venire** + gerund 292

21 Verbs of movement 293

22 Auxiliary verbs in compound tenses 295

22.1 Verbs that always take **avere** 295
22.2 Verbs that always take **essere** 296
22.3 Verbs that take either, according to grammatical construction 298
22.4 Verbs that take either, according to meaning 302
22.5 Modal verbs 306
22.6 Pronouns and auxiliaries 307

23 The passive 308

23.1 Passive with **venire** 308
23.2 Passive with **andare** 309

23.3 Passive with **rimanere** and **restare** 309
23.4 Expression of the agent 309
23.5 Indirect objects 310
23.6 Other ways of expressing the passive 310

24 Reflexives and impersonals 311

24.1 Direct reflexives 311
24.2 Indirect reflexives 311
24.3 Reciprocal reflexives 312
24.4 Inherent reflexives 312
24.5 The reflexive as marker of the intransitive 313
24.6 The passive reflexive 314
24.7 The impersonal reflexive with transitive verbs 314
24.8 The impersonal reflexive with intransitive verbs 315
24.9 Other impersonal subjects 316
24.10 Impersonal objects 316

THE SENTENCE – combining clauses

25 Italian prepositions 321

25.1 **a** 321
25.1.1 Basic meanings 321
25.1.2 Expressing time 322
25.1.3 Expressing rate 322
25.1.4 Expressing manner 322
25.1.5 Expressing place 323
25.1.6 Expressing kind 324
25.1.7 Expressing instrument 324
25.1.8 Adverbial idioms with **a** 324
25.1.9 "Personal" **a** 325
25.1.10 Complex prepositional expressions with **a** 325
25.2 **attraverso** 326
25.2.1 Movement 326
25.2.2 Used as an adverb 326
25.3 **con** 326
25.3.1 Basic meanings 326
25.3.2 In adverbial phrases 327
25.3.3 Idiomatic expressions with **con** 327
25.4 **contro** 327
25.4.1 Before nouns and pronouns 327
25.4.2 Used as adverb 328
25.5 **da** 328
25.5.1 Basic meanings 328
25.5.2 Expressing time 329
25.5.3 Expressing purpose 329
25.5.4 Expressing characteristics or description 329

25.5.5 **da** used with **parte** 330
25.5.6 With a verb in the infinitive 330
25.5.7 Adverbial expressions with **da** 331
25.6 **davanti a**, **prima di**, **avanti**, **di fronte a** 331
25.6.1 Basic meanings 331
25.6.2 Used as adverbs 332
25.7 **di** 332
25.7.1 Basic meanings 332
25.7.2 In expressions of description or origin 333
25.7.3 Expressing time 333
25.7.4 Expressing price and measurement 333
25.7.5 Idiomatic expressions 334
25.7.6 "Grammatical" uses of **di** 334
25.8 **dietro**, **dopo** 335
25.8.1 **dietro** 335
25.8.2 **dopo** 335
25.8.3 **dopo**, **dietro**, and **indietro** used as adverbs 335
25.9 **fino a**, **sino a**, **verso** 336
25.10 **fuori** 336
25.10.1 Used as preposition 336
25.10.2 Used as adverb 337
25.11 **in** 337
25.11.1 Basic meanings 337
25.11.2 Expressing location or movement 337
25.11.3 Expressing change 338
25.11.4 Expressing time 338
25.11.5 Expressing manner, means, or material 338
25.11.6 Common idioms and expressions involving **in** 339
25.11.7 In complex prepositional expressions 339
25.12 **per** 340
25.12.1 Basic meanings 340
25.12.2 Expressing movement 340
25.12.3 Expressing time 340
25.12.4 Expressing purpose 341
25.12.5 Expressing reason or cause 341
25.12.6 In expressions of quantity 341
25.12.7 Common idioms and expressions involving **per** 341
25.13 **sotto** 342
25.13.1 Basic meanings 342
25.13.2 Idiomatic expressions with parts of the body 342
25.13.3 Used as an adverb 342
25.14 **su**, **sopra** 343
25.14.1 Basic meanings 343
25.14.2 Expressing location or direction 343
25.14.3 Expressing time or number 343
25.14.4 **su** expressing subject-matter 344
25.14.5 **su** in idiomatic expressions 344
25.14.6 **su** and **sopra** used as adverbs 345

25.15 **tra**, **fra** 345
25.15.1 Basic meanings 345
25.15.2 Expressing time or distance 346
25.15.3 Common idioms and expressions involving **tra**, **fra** 346

26 English prepositions 347

26.1 **about** 347
26.1.1 In the sense of "concerning" 347
26.1.2 In the sense of "approximately" 347
26.2 **above** 348
26.3 **according to** 348
26.4 **across** 348
26.5 **along** 348
26.6 **among** 348
26.7 **as** 349
26.8 **at** 349
26.8.1 Expressing place 349
26.8.2 Expressing time 349
26.8.3 In other expressions 350
26.9 **because of** 350
26.10 **before** 350
26.10.1 Expressing place 350
26.10.2 Expressing time 350
26.10.3 Expressing order of importance etc. 351
26.11 **below** 351
26.12 **beneath** 351
26.13 **beyond** 351
26.14 **by** 351
26.14.1 Expressing place 351
26.14.2 Expressing time 352
26.14.3 Expressing measure 352
26.14.4 Expressing means 352
26.14.5 Expressing cause or agent 353
26.14.6 In other expressions 353
26.15 **down** 353
26.16 **during** 353
26.17 **except (for)** 354
26.18 **for** 354
26.18.1 Expressing benefit 354
26.18.2 Expressing purpose 354
26.18.3 Expressing cause 354
26.18.4 Expressing time 354
26.18.5 Expressing place 355
26.18.6 In other expressions 355

26.19 **from** 355
26.19.1 Expressing place 355
26.19.2 Expressing time 356
26.19.3 In other expressions 356
26.20 **in** 356
26.20.1 Expressing place 356
26.20.2 Expressing time 357
26.20.3 In other expressions 358
26.21 **inside** 358
26.22 **instead of** 358
26.23 **into** 359
26.24 **of** 359
26.25 **off** 359
26.26 **on** 359
26.26.1 Expressing place 359
26.26.2 Expressing time 360
26.26.3 In other expressions 360
26.27 **out of** 361
26.28 **outside** 361
26.29 **over** 362
26.30 **past** 362
26.31 **round** 362
26.32 **through** 362
26.33 **to** 363
26.33.1 Expressing direction 363
26.33.2 In other expressions 363
26.34 **towards** 363
26.35 **under** 364
26.36 **until**, **till** 364
26.37 **up** 364
26.38 **with** 364

27 Prepositional constructions with verbs and adjectives 365

27.1 Verbs with no preposition before an infinitive 365
27.1.1 Infinitive as subject of the verb 365
27.1.2 Infinitive as object of the verb 367
27.1.3 Verbs of perception 367
27.1.4 Causative construction 368
27.2 **di** before an infinitive 368
27.2.1 The subject of certain "impersonal" verbs 368
27.2.2 Verbs of saying, promising, agreeing 369
27.2.3 Verbs of mental states 370
27.2.4 Verbs of feeling, opinion, or will 370
27.2.5 Other verbs 371
27.2.6 Verb + direct object + **di** + infinitive 371

27.2.7 Verb + indirect object + **di** + infinitive 372
27.2.8 Adjectives + **di** + infinitive 373
27.3 **a** before an infinitive 374
27.3.1 Verbs that refer to the beginning, continuing, or ending of an action 374
27.3.2 Verbs that express movement (literal or figurative) 374
27.3.3 Verbs that express a mental attitude or disposition (e.g. state, tendency, or will) 375
27.3.4 Verbs that express being or staying 375
27.3.5 Verb + direct object + **a** + infinitive 376
27.3.6 Verb + indirect object + **a** + infinitive 376
27.3.7 Adjectives + **a** + infinitive 376
27.3.8 **a** + infinitive in place of a **che** clause 377
27.4 **da** before an infinitive 378
27.4.1 After verbs 378
27.4.2 After adjectives or adverbs 379
27.4.3 After nouns 379
27.5 **per** before an infinitive 379
27.5.1 After verbs 379
27.5.2 After adjectives or adverbs 380
27.5.3 After nouns 380
27.6 **con**, **da**, **in** + article before an infinitive 380
27.6.1 **con** 380
27.6.2 **da** 381
27.6.3 **in** 381
27.7 Prepositional constructions 382
27.7.1 No preposition in Italian: preposition in English 387
27.7.2 Preposition in Italian: no preposition in English 388
27.7.3 Some prepositions which do not correspond in Italian and English 388

28 Use of tenses 389

28.1 Present tense (**faccio**, **vado**) 389
28.2 Future tense (**farò**, **andrò**) 391
28.3 Future Perfect tense (**avrò fatto**, **sarò andato**) 392
28.4 Present Conditional tense (**farei**, **andrei**) 392
28.5 Conditional Perfect tense (**avrei fatto**, **sarei andato**) 393
28.6 Perfect tenses – *Passato Prossimo* and *Passato Remoto* 393
28.7 Imperfect and Perfect 394
28.7.1 Imperfect tense: other uses 396
28.8 Pluperfect tense (*Trapassato Prossimo* – **avevo fatto**, **ero andato**) 396
28.9 Past Anterior tense (*Trapassato Remoto* – **ebbi fatto**, **fui andato**) 397
28.10 Modals 397

29 Sequence of tenses 399

29.1 Sequence of tenses in the indicative 399
29.2 Sequence of tenses in the subjunctive 400
29.2.1 Main verb in the Present or Future 400
29.2.2 Main verb in the Past or Conditional 401

30 The Subjunctive 402

30.1 The Subjunctive in main clauses 403
30.1.1 Wishes 403
30.1.2 Third person imperative 403
30.1.3 Third person exhortations 403
30.1.4 Questions 404
30.2 The Subjunctive in noun clauses 404
30.2.1 With main clauses expressing emotion 404
30.2.2 With main clauses expressing opinion, doubt, uncertainty, or certainty 405
30.2.3 With main clauses expressing knowing and understanding 405
30.2.4 Saying 406
30.2.5 Illusion, dream, and pretense 406
30.2.6 With main clauses expressing wanting 406
30.2.7 Permission and prohibition 407
30.2.8 With impersonal verbs 407
30.2.9 The verb **aspettare** 409
30.2.10 The position of the noun clause 409
30.2.11 **il fatto che** 409
30.2.12 **come** meaning **che** 409
30.2.13 Modal attraction 410
30.3 Indirect questions 410
30.4 Subordinating conjunctions 410
30.4.1 although, however 410
30.4.2 before 411
30.4.3 in order that, such that 411
30.4.4 unless, except 412
30.4.5 until 412
30.4.6 without 412
30.4.7 provided that 412
30.4.8 in case, in case that 413
30.4.9 when 413
30.4.10 as if 413
30.5 Relative clauses 413
30.5.1 After an indefinite antecedent 413
30.5.2 After a negative or non-existent antecedent 414
30.5.3 After unique and superlative antecedents 414
30.5.4 Expressing a hypothesis 414

30.5.5 "Modal attraction" 414
30.6 Comparatives 414
30.7 Conditional sentences 415

31 Conditional sentences 416

31.1 Hypothetical conditionals 416
31.1.1 Verb mood and tense 416
31.1.2 Other ways of saying "if" 418
31.2 Factual conditionals 419

32 Subordinate clauses 421

32.1 Explicit subordinate clauses 421
32.1.1 Relative clauses 422
32.2 Implicit subordinate clauses 424
32.2.1 Infinitive 424
32.2.2 Gerund 425
32.2.3 Participles 427
32.2.4 Nominalization 428
32.2.5 Ways of translating words in "-ing" 428

TEXTS AND THEIR STRUCTURE

33 Interjections 433

34 Fillers 439

35 Connector words and expressions 441

Bibliography 443
Italian word index 445
Grammar index 467

Preface and acknowledgments

This book aims to offer a description of contemporary Italian, suitable for advanced students as well as teachers and linguists who are interested in the actual usage of the contemporary language. The authors hope they have usefully filled a gap in the available descriptions of the Italian language by providing an account which at every point combines linguistic description with an indication of the sociolinguistic weight that various ways of "saying the same thing" actually have in contemporary Italian society.

The book assumes a reasonable knowledge of the basics of Italian vocabulary and grammar and focusses on a selection of areas which cause difficulty to English-speaking students and/or which are difficult in themselves to explain adequately. This selection covers a wide range from matters of vocabulary to different levels of grammar. Thus the book begins in chapter **1** with an overview of the uniquely complex linguistic situation in contemporary Italy and gives a selection of examples of the types of Italian one may encounter in Italy. This is followed by a number of chapters, **2** to **13**, on "Words and their meanings." These cover areas which pose problems for English speakers and include lists and descriptions of types of words not always covered by traditional dictionaries and grammars. The next chapters, **14** to **24**, deal with "The clause – combining words" and describe matters of morphology such as gender and number and some matters often not adequately dealt with in many grammars, such as word order and the choice of auxiliary verbs. The next group of chapters, **25** to **32**, is devoted to the next level of grammar, that of "The sentence – combining clauses," and addresses some difficulties in the use of verbs and sentence construction. The final three chapters, **33** to **35**, move to the level of "Texts and their structure" and look at various ways of combining sentences and paragraphs into coherent and effective written or spoken texts.

We have attempted to follow closely the companion volumes in this series, *Using French* and *Using Spanish*, even to the point of using the same examples where possible. In this way, we hope that those interested in studying more than one of the principal Romance languages will find these volumes useful for comparison and contrast.

We are grateful to our colleagues and students in the Department of Italian at the University of Western Australia for answering our frequent questions, reading sections of the manuscript, and making several useful suggestions.

JJK
VS

Abbreviations

Common abbreviations

adj	adjective
adv	adverb
Aus	Australian English
AUX	auxiliary
DO	direct object
esp	especially
f	feminine
fig	figurative(ly)
gen	general(ly)
indic	indicative
inf	infinitive
intr	intransitive
inv	invariable
IO	indirect object
lit	literally
m	masculine
n	noun
O	object
pl	plural
qc	qualcosa
qu	qualcuno
S	subject
s	singular
sb	somebody
sth	something
subj	subjunctive
tr	transitive
UK	United Kingdom (English)
US	United States (English)
usu	usually
V	verb

Other abbreviations

abstr.	abstract
art.	article
ch.	chapter
chem.	chemical term
comm.	commercial term
comp.	computer related term
conj.	conjunction
econ.	economic term
gram.	grammatical term
idiom.	idiomatic
interj.	interjection
Lat.	Latin
leg.	legal term
math.	mathematical term
mech.	mechanical term
med.	medical term
milit.	military term
mus.	musical term
p.p.	past participle
pres.	present
pres. p.	present participle
refl.	reflexive

1 Varieties of language

1.1 The Italian language today

Italian is the official language of the Republic of Italy. It is spoken by the 58 million inhabitants of Italy and in the Canton Ticino area of Switzerland, as well as by many millions of Italian migrants and their descendants in many parts of the world, especially Europe, North and South America, and Australia. The Italian language has a fascinating and in many ways unique history, which reflects the political and cultural history of Italy. The Italian language was based, during the Renaissance, on an idealized version of fourteenth-century Florentine. Because of the political fragmentation which beset Italy up to the Risorgimento, however, this "language" was predominantly used in writing, while for everyday speech the usual form of communication remained the local dialects. This was true, with exceptions of course, for all parts of Italy and for all social classes. Since political unification in 1861, the language has become universally adopted, and in the process has adapted rapidly to the demands of a modern, diversified society.

The Italian standard is therefore a modified version of fourteenth-century Florentine dialect. This standard is found in good dictionaries and is taught to classical actors and to newsreaders on national television. However, the Italian spoken and, to a lesser extent, written in most everyday situations differs from this standard in various ways. Furthermore, all Italians show their regional origin by their accent. A regional accent is not, in itself, indicative of register or of the social characteristics of the speaker, though local accents are usually stronger in informal speech than in formal uses of language. Furthermore, Italian, like all languages, is spoken and also written in different ways, not only according to where the speaker comes from, but also according to his/her educational, professional and cultural background, what the speaker is doing, what s/he is talking about, and so on.

1.2 The dialects

An essential, ever-present feature of the Italian linguistic landscape is dialect. The word "dialect" in English describes a regional variety of the standard language, the way English is spoken in a particular place, e.g. the "Midlands dialect" (UK), the "mid-West dialect" (USA). In Italian the word has a quite different meaning. The Italian dialects (or "dialects of Italy") are actually separate languages, geographically distributed throughout the country, which may differ from one another so much that they can be mutually unintelligible if they are from non-adjacent areas.

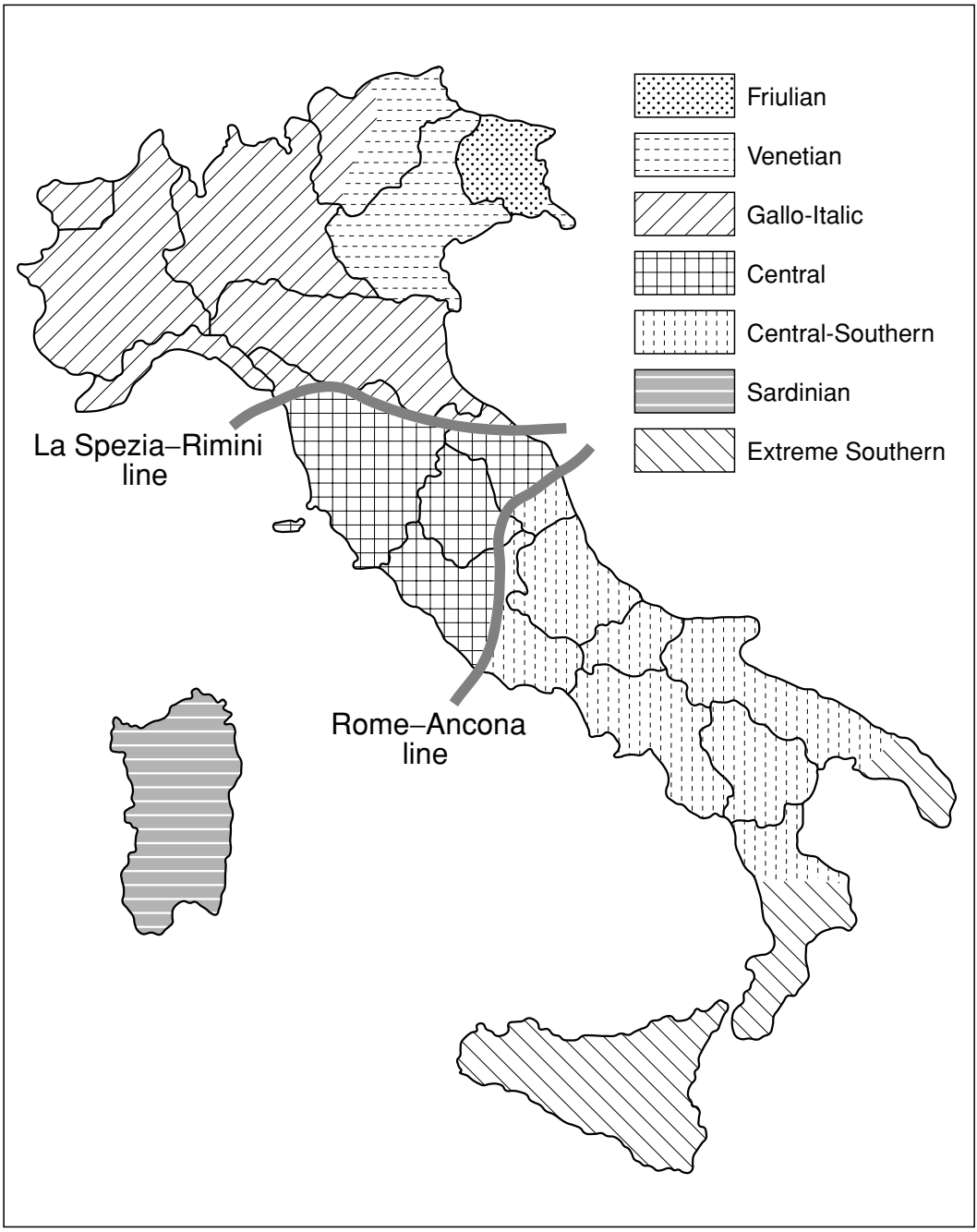
Italian is a Romance language, like Portuguese, Spanish, French, and Romanian. The Romance languages are so called because they are all derived from Latin, the language of ancient Rome and the Roman Empire. Over time, Latin developed into new forms in many different parts of the former Empire: these were referred to as the "vernacular" and correspond to what we now call "dialects." At some stage, in each Romance area, one vernacular eventually emerged as the official "language" of the nation: in Italy, this vernacular was Florentine. The selection of one vernacular as "language" meant that the other vernaculars then assumed the label and status of "dialects." Thus the dialects are derived from Latin, as Italian is, and are more or less closely related to Italian; but they are distinct languages, not varieties of Italian.

The dialects of Italy fall into three main geographical areas, divided by two "lines": the La Spezia–Rimini line divides North from Center, and the Rome–Ancona line divides Center from South (see map on p. 3). In the North, the Gallo-Italic group covers all regions except the Veneto and Friuli–Venezia Giulia. In the South, Sicily and the southern tips of Calabria and Puglia (Apulia) form a separate sub-group. Friulian and Sardinian are often referred to as "minor (or minority) languages," in recognition of their very significant differences from Italian, and their historical status as languages of their respective regions.

1.3 Dialect and language in contemporary Italy

At the time of Unification in 1861, almost all inhabitants of Italy spoke a dialect as their native language, while Italian was restricted to a small section of the population. Estimates of how many Italians knew Italian in 1860 vary from 2.5% to 12% of the population, so that approximately nine out of ten Italians were monolingual in their dialect. Progress in the spread of Italian was slow until the second half of the twentieth century. Recent surveys show that around 7 per cent of the population claim to be still dialect-only speakers and around 30 per cent claim to speak only Italian. At least 60% of the Italian population uses both Italian and a dialect on a regular basis.

Dialects are used more within the home than outside, more in informal situations than in formal ones, and more in the Northeast, the South, and



Italian dialects

the Islands than in the Northwest and the Center. Older people use them more than younger people, and men more than women. Furthermore, dialects are used more among the lower classes, by people with lower levels of education but also, interestingly, by graduates more than by people with high school diplomas. They are used more in rural areas and in smaller towns than in large towns. Besides everyday communication, they are used in other areas, e.g. literature and music.

1.4 Dialect and Italian in contact

The large numbers of people who regularly use both their dialect and Italian mean that we should classify Italy as a multilingual nation. This also means that the distinguishing line between the dialects and Italian is in many cases becoming increasingly blurred, and this in two ways. First, in everyday conversation, linguistic forms from dialect and Italian are often mixed, for different reasons and to achieve different effects. Secondly, both Italian and the dialects are being affected by their constant use by bilingual speakers. The dialects are absorbing massive influence from Italian, in pronunciation, grammar, and vocabulary. But Italian, too, shows the results of this mixed use, as sounds, grammatical features, words, and expressions from the local dialect become accepted in the Italian of that locality. If it is true that the dialects in their traditional form are slowly dying, it is equally true that they are leaving their trace in the strongly marked regional varieties of Italian which draw so much from the dialect tradition.

The following passage, while it is invented, shows how dynamic and expressive can be the mixture of Italian (in formal and informal registers), dialects, and intermediate forms. The first speaker is a Calabrian husband, the other is his Venetian wife.

"Le libertà non vengono date. Si prendono. KROPOTKIN!"

"Ah, che disgrassia! Tase, te digo! Tu vuoi precipitar questa casa nel baratro dell'ignominia e del disonor! Tu vuoi strascinar questa famiglia nel fango!"

"Ma quale fango, Nuruzza mia? Lu fangu sta sulle mani bianche del proprietario e del banchiere! Lu fangu è la putrida società! Anarchia non è fango!! Anarchia è onore de lu mundu, nome santo, vero suli della nuova storia, rivoluzione immensa, implacabbile!!"

(Elsa Morante, *La Storia*, Turin: Einaudi, 1974)

disgrassia: *disgrazia*, pronounced with a Venetian accent. The Venetian dialect word is **desgrassia**, and this similarity acts as a trigger for the subsequent switch to dialect.

Tase, te digo: *Taci, ti dico*, Venetian dialect.

Tu vuoi precipitar questa casa nel baratro dell'ignominia e del disonor: This is Italian. The dropping of the *-e* off **precipitare** and **disonore** adds a lofty, almost poetic, tone. The metaphorical use of **baratro** is decidedly recherché.

Nuruzza: An affectionate form of Nora, with a typically Calabrian suffix. The Italian equivalent would be *Noruccia*.
Lu fangu: *il fango*, Calabrian dialect.
lu mundu: *il mondo*, Calabrian dialect.
suli: *sole*, Calabrian dialect.
implacabbile: *implacabile*, a high register word, pronounced with the double *b* typical of Southern accents in Italian.

1.5 Registers of language

Italian linguists have distinguished several different registers of language, but for the purposes of this book it is more important to identify the major registers of Italian as they occur in Italy today.

R1 The most casual register of everyday speech. It shows the greatest evidence of regional origin, including features from the local dialect (sounds, words, and grammatical features). It includes many features considered ungrammatical in contexts which require R3. Many of the features of *italiano popolare* occur in R1.
R1* words and expressions are those generally considered vulgar or "taboo." Non-native speakers should exercise caution in using them. We make no apology for including these terms – they are among the most frequent in colloquial Italian, and must be understood!

R2 This register will show regional origin in pronunciation but less so in grammar and vocabulary. It is a truly intermediate register, which in a sense is best understood negatively: it lacks the dialect influences and very casual style of R1, but also lacks the formality of R3. On the other hand, R2 is more flexible and is acceptable in a very wide range of contexts, in both speech and writing. This corresponds to what has been called "l'italiano dell'uso medio" or "l'italiano neostandard."

R3 The written standard language, as it is taught in schools and used in good-quality newspapers. R3 includes bureaucratic, literary, archaic, and highly ritualized formal uses of language. Many sub-registers have been identified, corresponding to various domains of professional and social activity, e.g. journalism, business, science, law, academia, etc.

1.6 Examples of regional variation: pronunciation

As far as possible, spoken regional or R1 forms are given below in an adapted version of standard Italian spelling, rather than in phonetic transcription. This is merely for the sake of convenience; such spellings will not normally be encountered. Some of these spellings are used by authors to give a local feel to direct speech. (See the extract from Morante, *La Storia*, above.)

The following pronunciations are found almost universally in the areas indicated, irrespective of register:

Area		Regional	Standard
NORTH	double consonants are not fully pronounced	capelo	cappello
	no syntactic doubling	a casa [a kaza], da me [da mɛ]	a casa [a kkasa], da me [da mme]
	-n pronounced as *-ng* after vowel	non è vero [noŋ ɛ vero]	non è vero [non ɛ vvero]
	-sci- pronounced as *-si-*	lasia	lascia
	soft *c* pronounced as *ts*	tsao	ciao
	s pronounced as *z* between vowels	casa, caso [kaza kazo]	casa, caso [kasa kazo]
	z- pronounced as *dz-* at beginning of words	zio [dzio]	zio [tsio]
	different pronunciation of open and closed *e*	bene, questo, perché [bene kwɛsto perkɛ]	bene, questo, perché [bɛne kwesto perke]
CENTER	*p, t, k* pronounced with breath, between vowels	la pesca, parlato, la casa [la θɛska parlaṭo la hasa]	la pesca, parlato, la casa [la pɛska parlato la kasa]
	soft *g* pronounced [ʒ] between vowels	ragione [raʒone]	ragione [radʒone]
	syntactic doubling in particular cases	a casa [a kkasa], da me [da me OR da mme]	a casa [a kkasa], da me [da mme]
CENTER and SOUTH	soft *c* pronounced as *sci*	scinquescento	cinquecento
	ls pronounced as *lts*	il tsole	il sole
	ns pronounced as *nts*	intsomma	insomma
	rs pronounced as *rts*	scartso	scarso
SOUTH	syntactic doubling in particular cases	a casa [a kkasa], da me [da me]	a casa [a kkasa], da me [da mme]
	-p-, *-t-*, *-k-* pronounced as *-b-*, *-d-*, *-g-*	gabidano	capitano
	-mp-, *-nc-*, *nt-* pronounced as *-mb-*, *-ng-*, *-nd-*	cambo, angora, condendo	campo, ancora, contento

Area		Regional	Standard
	vowels at end of words pronounced as [ə]	stazione [stattsionə]	stazione [stattsione]
	-b- pronounced double between vowels	impossibbile	impossibile
	soft *-g-* pronounced double between vowels	raggione	ragione
	s pronounced as *-s-* between vowels	casa, caso [kasa kaso]	casa, caso [kasa kazo]
SICILY	syntactic doubling in particular cases	a casa [a kkasa], una riga [una rriga]	a casa [a kkasa], una riga [una riga]
	tr pron as *ci*, *str* pronounced as *sci*	quacciu, sci-rada [kwattʃu ʃtʃada]	quattro, strada
	only one pronunciation of *e* and *o*	vene, bene, dove, nove [vɛne bɛne dɔve nɔve]	vene, bene, dove, nove [vene bɛne dove nɔve]
	different pronunciation of *i*, *u*	Sicilia, è venuto [sɨtʃɨlja ɛ vven∧to]	Sicilia, è venuto [sitʃilja ɛ vvenuto]

NOTE:
Syntactic doubling refers to the process of doubling the first consonant at the beginning of a word, when that word follows certain other words. Syntactic doubling does not occur in the North. Words which produce syntactic doubling are:

- words ending in an accented vowel (note that the vowel loses its stress in the process), e.g. **perché no** ['perke nnɔ], **Gesù Maria** ['djesu mma'ria]
- certain words, usually monosyllables (exactly which words varies from region to region), e.g.
  a casa [a kkasa], **come lui** ['kome llui], **che fai?** [ke ffai]

This is a feature of speech and is not shown in writing, though writers may do so in order to convey local color. In certain cases, however, certain pairs of words have become so established in the language that they are written as one word, including the syntactic doubling, e.g. **soprattutto** OR **sopra tutto;** and the monosyllabic imperatives: **dillo**, **fallo**, **datti da fare**, **stammi bene**, etc.

1.7 Examples of regional variation: grammar

These differences are all common in R1. Some also occur frequently in R2.

Area		Regional	Standard
NORTH	no definite article with certain possessives	mia mamma, mio papà	la mia mamma, il mio papà
	definite article with names, esp. feminine	la Maria, il Paolo	Maria, Paolo
	verbal periphrasis	sono dietro a fare	sto facendo
	position of pronouns	devi telefonarmi	mi devi telefonare, devi telefonarmi
	che with conjunctions	quando che, mentre che	quando, mentre
	cosa in questions	cosa vuoi?	che vuoi?
	use of *su* and *giù*	togliere su, prendere su	togliere, prendere
	mica in negatives	(non) è mica vero	non è (affatto) vero
	demonstratives plus adverbs for emphasis	questa ragazza qui, quel ragazzo lì	questa ragazza, quel ragazzo
CENTER	*te* used for *tu*	vieni anche te?	vieni anche tu?
	si used for *noi*	noi si va via	noi andiamo via
	irregular verbs	dassi, stassi	dessi, stassi
SOUTH	*a* used with human direct object	ho visto a Giuseppe	ho visto Giuseppe
	position of pronouns	mi devi telefonare	mi devi telefonare, devi telefonarmi
	verbal periphrasis	sto a fare	sto facendo
	verb at end of clause (Sicily and Sardinia)	siciliano sono	sono siciliano

1.8 Examples of register variation: grammar

Many of the following features are avoided where possible in R2, while some are now commonly used in R2 though they would probably be avoided in R3 and certainly in writing.

	R1	**R3**
Avoided in R2		
suo used for *loro*	i ragazzi e i suoi amici	i ragazzi e i loro amici
comparatives	il più migliore	il migliore
gli used for *le (= a lei)*	gli ho risposto subito	le ho risposto subito
ci used for *gli*, *le*, *loro*	non ci ho detto niente	non gli / le ho detto niente
che used for *in cui* (*dove*)	il paese che ti ho visto	il paese dove ti ho visto
che used for indirect relative pronoun	l'uomo che gli ho telefonato ieri	l'uomo al quale (a cui, cui) ho telefonato ieri
Used in R2		
repetition of object pronoun	a me non mi piace	a me non piace (OR non mi piace)
a used with direct object pronoun for emphasis	a noi chi ci paga?	chi paga noi? OR noi, chi ci paga?
gli used for *loro*	gli ho risposto ieri	ho risposto loro ieri OR ho loro risposto ieri (R3 only)
ci used with *avere*	c'ho tanto lavoro	ho tanto lavoro
c'è with plural subject	c'è molte case qui	ci sono molte case qui
che used to link "main" clauses	aspetta che vengo	aspetta: vengo OR aspetta perché vengo
che used for *in cui* (*quando*)	il giorno che ti ho visto	il giorno in cui (quando) ti ho visto
che used for *quale*	che vestito mi metto? che libri leggi?	quale vestito mi metto? quali libri leggi?
niente used as adjective	niente frutta oggi	non c'è frutta oggi
cosa for *che cosa*	cosa c'è?	che cosa c'è?

1.9 Examples of regional variation: vocabulary

The variety of vocabulary items among the Italian dialects is legendary. As the dialect-speaking population acquired Italian as a second language, many dialect words entered the regional vocabularies of Italian, usually undergoing some "Italianization" in the process. A survey carried out by Rüegg in 1951 asked 124 persons from 54 provinces what name they used for 242 different concepts: only one, "strong black coffee served in a bar," was given the same name by all informants: *espresso*. Such rich geographical variation is still a major feature of spoken Italian.

This first list contains words and constructions that are widely recognised as "typical" of Italian as spoken in the North, Center, and South of Italy. In the cinema, elements such as these, together with a strong accent, would be enough to characterize a speaker as coming from one of the three areas of the country.

NORTH	**CENTER**	**SOUTH**
cosa?	che?	che?
essere (cosa c'è?)	essere (che c'è?)	stare (che ci sta?)
avere (ho fame)	avere (ho fame)	tenere (tengo fame)
anche (viene anche lei)	anche (viene anche lei)	pure (viene pure lei)
adesso (adesso vengo!)	ora (ora vengo!)	mo' (mo' vengo!)
cosa sei dietro a fare?	che stai facendo?	che stai a fare?
questo / quello	questo / codesto / quello	questo / quello
neanche, nemmeno, neppure	neanche, nemmeno, neppure	manco, nemmanco
prima	dianzi	prima
molto	molto	assai
il giorno dopo	il giorno dopo	il giorno appresso
l'anno prossimo	quest'altr'anno	l'anno prossimo
Lunedì dell'Angelo	Pasquetta	Pasquetta

Different terms for the same object or activity

Simple everyday objects and activities often have several different names in different parts of Italy. (In Italian they are called *geosinonimi*.) For example a coat-hanger is called *ometto*, *stampella*, *attaccapanni*, *croce*, and *appendiabiti* in the North, *gruccia* and *cruccia* in the Center, and *stanfella*, *stampella*, *crocetta*, *gruccia*, *crociera*, *appendino*, *croce*, and *angioletto* in the South. The following list gives a sample of such words in current usage, with only the most common synonyms given for each area.

NORTH	CENTER	SOUTH
	bad luck	
sfiga (R1–1*)	scalogna, scarogna	jella
	wind-up blind on outside of window	
tapparella	serranda	tapparella, persiana
	broad beans (Vicia faba)	
fave	baccelli	fave
	chair	
sedia	seggiola	sedia
	cheese	
formaggio	cacio	cacio
	cloth for use in housework	
straccio	cencio	pezza
	daddy	
papà	babbo	papà
	doorkeeper	
portinaio	portiere	portiere
	to "dunk," dip food in liquid	
pucciare	zuppare, inzuppare	azzuppare, inzuppare
	godparents at Baptism or Confirmation	
padrino e madrina	padrino e madrina	compare e comare
	melon (Cucumis melo)	
melone	popone	mellone
	nice	
carino	bellino	caruccio
	nun	
suora	suora	monaca
	to play hookey	
bigiare (la scuola)	fare sega, seghino, filone	fare Sicilia
	shoelaces	
lacci	stringhe	lacci
	slap	
sberla	schiaffo, ceffone	sganassone, schiaffo
	small object protruding from another object	
pirulino	pispolino	pomello
	tramp, vagrant, hobo	
barbone	mendicante	pezzente
	watermelon (Citrullus vulgaris)	
anguria	cocomero	melone
	wedding ring	
vera	fede	fede, anello
	to work	
lavorare	lavorare	faticare

Different meanings for the same word

A few words have rather different meanings in different regions. Most of these are limited to R1.

	Meaning	**Region**
babbo	father	Tuscany
	stupid	Sicily
gnocco	stupid	Lazio
	easy	Emilia
	type of pasta	Tuscany and now all Italy
passata	hair band	Tuscany
	tomato sauce	North and South
stampella	crutch (for walking)	Tuscany
	coathanger	North and South
comare	gossip	Center, Puglia, Abruzzo
	godmother	South
scostumato	shameless	Center
	bad-mannered	South
attaccapanni	coat-hanger	North
	coat-hook	Center

1.10 Extracts illustrating registers of Italian

Example of R1 (Sicilian and Northern varieties of Italian), from *Mimì metallurgico ferito nell'onore* (1972), directed by Lina Wertmuller

The 1970s films of director Lina Wertmuller used local and informal registers of Italian, and dialect, to great effect. One has the impression of listening to dialect but in fact the speech is cleverly constructed, with only well-known dialect words and phrases, easily recognizable throughout Italy, inserted into Italian spoken with a strong regional accent. The films also exaggerate cultural stereotypes of various parts of Italy, for satirical effect. In this extract, Sicilian Mimì has moved to Turin to escape the Mafia and seek work, and Fiore is a Northerner, a left-wing street trader.

FIORE Oeuh ma che bello che è qua. Sembra Hyde Park. Guarda, sembra proprio un posto di delitti, questo qua. Una roba di quelli lì, aspetta, com'è che si dice? una roba di di maniaci sessuali. Oh, uèh, te, ma che cosa c'hai, da guardarmi così? Mi fai perfino paüra. Uèh te, c'hai na faccia che sembri uno che c'ha mal di pancia: c'hai mal di pancia davvero? Sarà colpa della birra gelata.

MIMÌ No, còppa tua iè.

FIORE Mia? di me? e perché?

MIMÌ Scusami. Scusami ancora, per piacere, per cortesia, compagna, ti dispiace se ti bacio?

FIORE Mah, se lo chiedi per cortesia . . .
(During the kiss Mimì becomes aggressive.)

FIORE Mah? Aia! Ma no! Vigliacco d'un . . . Mascalzone! Bestia d'un porco! Che finezza signorile per un ordinario . . . – i terun vegnon giò con la piena a fà viuléns: mi tocca anche subire la violenza del terrone, ma metti! Non ti permettere mica perché ti spacco la testa, ma te la spacco. Prima mi domandi per piacere per cortesia un bacio, e dopo pratichi la violenza carnale. Ma va' all'inferno!

MIMÌ Ma non fu violenza. Passione fu. Scusami Fiore, ma io fui travolto, io non potetti assolutissimamente resistere alla tentazione dei sensi. Ma quale violenza, ma per carità! Ma quando mai! Modestamente, con le femmine, risultai sempre gradito, io. Ma cu tia, cu tia bedda Fiore, è diverso, è diverso, perché tu mi piaci come non mi piacque mai nessuno. E ora, ora non mi puoi rifiutare Fiore, guarda che non mi puoi più dire di no.

FIORE E io ti dico proprio di no. Ma per chi m'hai preso, oh?

MIMÌ Mi rifiuti?

FIORE Eh!

MIMÌ E perché? Qualcheduno ti ha raccontato qualche cosa nei miei confronti?

FIORE A me? Ma chi ti credi di essere? Ma chi è che ti conosce? [. . .] Tanto, la ragione è un'altra. Io all'amore ci credo. Per me, l'è na roba seria.

MIMÌ E io ti sembro allegro? Serissimo sono. Io dall'inizio non capiva. Credo che caddi innamorato di te appena ti vidi.

FIORE Te? Io no! Oh bella!

Northern characteristics of Fiore's speech

Pronunciation	Distinctive vowel sound: **paüra** closed *e* pronounced open, e.g. **me**, **te**, **perché** pronounced mè, tè, perchè All double consonants are pronounced single
Grammar	**te** for tu
Vocabulary	**oeuh**: interjection expressing admiration **uèh**: interjection expressing surprise **terrone**, derogatory term for "southerner" (the corresponding, but less loaded, term for "northerner" is **polentone**) **mica**, e.g. non ti permettere mica
Dialect	**i terun vegnon giò con la piena a fà viuléns** = i terroni vengono giù con la piena a fare violenza **l'è na roba seria** = è una cosa seria

Sicilian characteristics of Mimì's speech

Pronunciation	Closed *o* pronounced open, e.g. **Fiore**, **passione**, **sono** pronounced Fiòre, passiòne, sòno
	Closed *e* pronounced open, e.g. **femmine**, **allegro** pronounced fèmmene, allègro
	Unstressed *i* pronounced in indistinct fashion [ə], e.g. **ti**, **carità**, **mi** pronounced [tə carəˈta mə]
	-sci- for *-ci-*, e.g. **bacio**, **piacere** pronounced bascio, piascere
	Retroflex pronunciation of *-tr-*, e.g. **travolto** pronounced ciavolto
	Syntactic doubling throughout, e.g. **per piacere** pronounced pe ppiacere, **mi rifiuti** pronounced me rrefiuti
Grammar	Use of *passato remoto*
	Verb at end of sentence for emphasis, e.g. **passione fu**, **serissimo sono**
Vocabulary	**femmine** for donne
Dialect	**còppa tua iè** = è colpa tua
	cu ttia bedda Fiore = con te bella Fiore
	capiva = capivo

General characteristics of informal spoken Italian

Pronunciation	**'na** for una, **'sti** for questi
Grammar	**c'hai**, **c'ha** for hai, ha, pronounced [tʃai tʃa]
	Demonstratives plus adverbs for emphasis, e.g. **questo qua**, **quelli lì**
	Normal word order changed to place important idea at the end of the sentence, e.g. **io all'amore ci credo**
	Use of subject pronoun at the end of the clause for emphasis, e.g. **risultai sempre gradito, io**
	Loose linking of clauses, e.g. **c'hai na faccia che sembri uno** . . . (R2 = **tale che**)
	So-called 'cleft sentence', e.g. **chi è che ti conosce?** (= chi ti conosce?)
	Emphatic use of reflexive, e.g. **chi ti credi di essere?**
	Mixture of registers, e.g. Fiore switches to dialect at the height of her anger **i terun vegnon giò a fà viuléns**, then back to R2 Italian, then uses a higher register (legal) expression of condemnation **pratichi la violenza carnale**.
	Mimì resorts to an exaggerated superlative adverb, typical of R1: **assolutissimamente**
Interjections, fillers, and connectors	**Mah**? expresses surprise and disbelief
	Aia! expresses pain
	ma metti! Come off it!
	Ma at beginning of sentences
	Guarda!

Example of R1 (Roman variety of Italian) (from A. Sordi, *Ammazza che fusto!*, Milan: Rizzoli, 1995)

The actor Alberto Sordi specialized in portraying certain down-and-out Roman characters, including a fake noble "conte Claro." This text comes from a radio show of 1950. While the woman attempts to impress the "count" with her formal Italian, Sordi's language slides between standard Italian (often formulaic and literary, with many sentences in rhyming couplets), a strongly local Italian variety, and dialect.

SORDI Che fai oggi de bono, per il tuo pranzo?

DONNA Oh! Come il solito . . . Ecco: un po' di formaggio qui, dal salumiere.

SORDI Bono! Formaggio co' le pere?

DONNA Questo è tutto . . . Perché ormai conte Claro non si può neppur dire che io mangi . . . Io pilucco.

SORDI A chi lo dici signó? So' er conte Claro e nun resto de stucco. Te lo confesso, lo voi sapé? Anch'io pilucco. Ma qualche volta, come se fa? Quanno ce vo', ce vo' un piatto de sostanza! Comprendi l'importanza?

DONNA Eh magari conte Claro . . . Ormai ho quasi perso il ricordo di tutto.

SORDI Davero? Pure tu? Nun se famo vedé insieme dalla gente, che sembra brutto . . . Entramo va . . . Annamose a istruì. Rinfrescare i vecchi ricordi è sempre un dovere. Entriamo signora, entriamo dal salumiere. Buongiorno pizzicarolo . . . Pizzica, pizzica, che sei solo.

SALUMIERE Buongiorno, desidera?

DONNA Oh, il solito: due acciughine e un po' di mozzarella fresca.

SORDI Agguanta pizzicarò, mettece pure 'sta mezza ventresca. Un po' de prosciutto, un po' de pecorino. Pizzicarò, aggiungece pure quel salamino . . . Tanto le cose mo me vanno bene col Presidente Pella . . . Aho, sai che te dico? Mettece pure 'sta mortadella.

SALUMIERE Altro signore?

SORDI E non lo so! Voi altro signó?

DONNA Io? Conte Claro, ma che cosa dice? Chi le ha detto che io voglio questa roba? Io non voglio niente!

SORDI Sta' zitta signora. Er pizzicarolo ha già incartato tutto; mica pò disfà . . . So' stato io che ho ordinato, che me voi fa sfigurà? Andiamo signora paga tutto e io agguanto er pacco . . . Buongiorno pizzicarolo, te saluto e batto er tacco.

DONNA Ma conte Claro io non capisco . . . Perché ha voluto che comprassi tutta questa roba?

SORDI Come perché, signora mia? M'hai domandato un consiglio e io te lo sto a dà . . . Questo è il metodo e più non domandà.

Roman characteristics

Most of these features are present in Roman dialect (*romanesco*) and are also present in strong versions of the Roman variety of Italian.

Pronunciation **de**, **te**, **se**, **me** for di, ti, si, mi
ce for ci (third person pronoun for inanimate objects and places), e.g. **mettece**
Open *o* not diphthongized, e.g. **bòno**, **vòi**, **vo'**, **pò** for buono, vuoi, vuole, può
nun for non
quanno for quando
davero for davvero
Consonant elision: **co'**, **so'** for con, sono
Syllable elision: **signo'** for signora, **pizzicarò** for pizzicarolo
Syntactic doubling throughout, e.g. **ma che cosa dice** pronounced ma cche ccosa dice, **che fai oggi de bono** pronounced **che ffai oggi de bbono**

Grammar **se** [= si] for ci (1 pl pronoun), e.g. **se famo** = ci facciamo
Abbreviated infinitives: **sfigurà**, **sapé**, **vedé** for sfigurare, sapere, vedere
er for il
entramo, **annamo** for entriamo, andiamo
te lo sto a dà for te lo sto dando (= **te lo sto a dare**)
Note that Sordi addresses the woman as **signora** but uses the **tu** form of address.

Vocabulary Typical Roman exclamation: **aho!**
mo for adesso
pizzicarolo for salumiere (cf. Tuscan **pizzicagnolo**)
pure for anche
Learned reference, comically out of place: **e più non domandà**

Example of R1 (Tuscan variety of Italian) (from L. Bianciardi, *La vita agra*, Milan: Rizzoli, 1962)

This passage includes a constructed but realistic depiction of the variety of Italian, strongly imbued with dialect, spoken in Central Italy (the example is from Pisa), where the boundary between Italian and dialect is often far from clear. The spelling has been invented by the author to give the flavour of the pronunciation.

> Persino a qualche pisano io ho aperto l'uscio di casa – che è per proverbio azzardo pericoloso; a qualche pisano di quelli che dicono *gaodé rpeoro ditupà*, e ogni tanto vengono su col sorrisino furbo a cercare lavoro. "*Nciavresti mia nposticino da guadagnà bbene senza lavorà tanto? Sai omè, sule cencinquanta rmese? Giù, madonnarbuio, un si batte iodo. Un si trova nalira peffaccantà nceo*." E se tu gli domandi cosa vuol fare, cosa sa fare – qui è un posto da specializzati, devi presentarti con le idee chiare e precise, so fare una cosa, quella cosa, e basta – se tu glielo domandi lui rimane a bocca aperta, spalanca gli occhi, ti punta l'indice contro: "*Maffai la burletta davvero? Gaodé,*

un lo sai osa soffà io? Un mi onosci? Lo poi domandà a coso, ome siama, a coso no? Ir figliolo di Amedeo, quello che morì anno."

The passages in italics are, in Italian:

- Gaodé al pecoro di tuo padre
- Non c'avresti mica un posticino da guadagnare bene senza lavorare tanto? Sai com'è, sulle centocinquanta al mese? Giù, Madonna al buio!, non si batte chiodo. Non si trova una lira per far cantare un cieco.
- Ma fai la burletta davvero? Gaodé, non lo sai cosa so fare io? Non mi conosci? Lo puoi domandare a coso, come si chiama, a coso no? Il figlio di Amedeo, quello che morì l'anno scorso.

Pronunciation	Hard *c* dropped altogether between two vowels, e.g. **ome siama** for come si chiama; but not with syntactic doubling, e.g. **a coso** pron accòso. non pronounced **un** or **n** **n** for un, e.g. **nposticino**; **na** for una, e.g. **nalira** Syntactic doubling throughout, e.g. **guadagnà bbene**, **peffaccantà**, **maffai**, **soffà** Abbreviated infinitive: **guadagnà**, **lavorà**, **domandà**
Grammar	**ir** for il, e.g. **ir figliolo**; **r** for al, e.g. **rmese**, **Madonnarbuio = Madonna al buio** **tu** for tuo Repetition of pronoun referring to object of verb: in this example the object of the verb is an entire clause, e.g. **un *lo* sai osa soffà io** Use of *passato remoto*
Vocabulary	**Gaodé** is a distinctive exclamation of Italian as spoken in Pisa **coso**, meaning *whatsisname* **anno** for l'anno scorso

Example of written R1–2: SMS messages

Text or SMS (pronounced **essemmesse**) messages, which can be sent from mobile phones or some computers, frequently use a kind of informal Italian which is very like spoken language. They tend to be short, to save time and to stay within the limit of 160 characters (on most phones), and so, like SMS messages in other languages, use abbreviations of various kinds. This type of Italian is frequently also used in informal email communication. The following text has been constructed from documented forms.

A: Ciao Gigi!! dv 6?
B: Ciao amore sono in segreteria di Facoltà, devo fare liscrizione x il 2o sem. Te ke fai?
A: Sono in biblio a studiare l'ingl ma ke 2 balls:-(Li come va??
B: Czo sono qui dalle 7 e 30 e ce ancora una fila di 100 persone AIUTOOOOOOO!!!!
A: 80 fame uffa
B: ieri sera dv 6 finita???

A: sono rimasta con Franco ke mi ha r8 le balle con la storia dei genitori ke nn gli danno la casa al mare per il wknd
B: ankio lo visto e lo mandato a fnculo
A: oh ma qd t c metti 6 proprio 3mendo lo sai
B: LO SOOOO!!! :-)
A: c ved dopo pranzo?
B: nn posso devo andare a casa xke c sono i miei e m dicono se m fanno part sab o dom
A: OK!!!! voglio sapere subito!?!?!? dimmeloggi pome
B: ti kiamo 4 5
A: vabbe c sent + tardi ciao xxx
B: ciao amore ricorda ke TVTB

This may be deciphered as follows:

A: Ciao Gigi!! Dove sei?
B: Ciao amore, sono in segreteria di Facoltà, devo fare l'iscrizione per il secondo semestre. E tu che fai?
A: Sono in biblioteca a studiare l'inglese ma che palle:-(Lì come va?
B: Cazzo! sono qui dalle 7 e 30 e c'è ancora una fila di 100 persone. Aiuto!
A: Ho tanta fame, uffa!
B: Ieri sera dove sei finita?
A: Sono rimasta con Franco che mi ha rotto le balle con la storia dei genitori che non gli danno la casa al mare per il weekend.
B: Anch'io l'ho visto e l'ho mandato affanculo.
A: Oh ma quando ti ci metti sei proprio tremendo, lo sai?
B: Lo so:-)
A: Ci vediamo dopo pranzo?
B: Non posso. Devo andare a casa perché ci sono i miei e mi dicono se mi fanno partire sabato o domenica.
A: OK. Voglio sapere subito. Dimmelo oggi pomeriggio.
B: Ti chiamo alle 4 o alle 5.
A: Vabbe' ci sentiamo più tardi ciao [baci].
B: Ciao amore, ricorda che ti voglio tanto bene.

Abbreviations	Set phrases (as acronyms): **TVTB = ti voglio tanto bene** Common words, esp. by deleting vowels: **qd = quando**, **nn = non**, **c ved = ci vediamo**, **c = ci**, **m = mi** In principle any word can be abbreviated or contracted, if the sender believes the recipient will understand it, e.g. **wknd**; **sab**, **dom**, **biblio**, **pome** Words run together: **dimmeloggi = dimmelo oggi**
Symbols	Mathematical symbols with the same sound as words: **+ = più**, **x = per**, **6 = sei** Symbols combined with letters: **2o = secondo**, **3mendo = tremendo**, **r8 = rotto**, **80 = ho tanta**
Punctuation	Used more for emphasis and expressing emotion than for conventional textual uses

Spelling	**k** replaces **ch** and sometimes any hard **c**: **kiamo** = **chiamo**, **xke** = **perché**, **kasa** = **casa** Apostrophes not used: **ankio**, **ce** = **c'è**, **liscrizione** Phonetic spellings if shorter: **lo** = **l'ho** Numbers used in place of words
Interjections	**ke 2 balls** note English word **Cazzo** **uffa** expresses frustration

Example of spoken R2: *Un'agenzia di viaggi*

This conversation is more formal, between strangers in a professional setting. Many of the features already seen in conversation occur here, but the formal nature of the exchange requires more careful grammar, more complete sentences and use of circumlocutions and formulae.

CLIENTE Buon giorno.

AGENTE Giorno. Un attimo solo, e sono subito da Lei.

. . .

Ecco, mi dica.

CLIENTE Guardi, volevo delle informazioni sui viaggi organizzati in Australia.

AGENTE Sì, certo. Ne abbiamo un'ampia varietà. Mi sa dire in che stagione e per quante persone?

CLIENTE Per me e mio marito.

AGENTE Bene. E in che stagione dell'anno?

CLIENTE Mah, molti ci hanno consigliato dicembre–gennaio ma c'hanno detto che laggiù fa molto caldo e quindi . . .

AGENTE Eh sì, effettivamente Natale ricorre nel periodo più caldo dell'anno, è piena estate. Comunque, potrebbe essere una esperienza simpatica, un Natale sotto il sole australiano.

CLIENTE Ma, vede, abbiamo i genitori anziani qui a Pescara e, sa, un po' ci dispiace, così, lasciarli soli proprio a Natale. Piuttosto, mi dica Lei, a parte Natale, quali sarebbero i periodi più indicati per un viaggio non troppo lungo?

AGENTE Beh, prima di tutto, bisogna dire che fare un viaggio così lungo per un breve soggiorno, non so se sia conveniente. Se ne avete la possibilità, vi consiglierei di fermarvi almeno tre settimane.

CLIENTE Ah sì?

AGENTE Beh, sa, il viaggio è lungo e c'è una certa spesa.

CLIENTE Beh, sì, forse ha ragione. Insomma, ha delle occasioni, dei viaggi organizzati?

AGENTE Guardi, Le do questo dépliant. Qui ci sono diverse soluzioni, a seconda dei vostri gusti, quanto volete fermarvi e quanto, insomma, volete spendere.

CLIENTE Le dispiace se lo porto a casa per farlo vedere a mio marito?

AGENTE No, assolutamente.

CLIENTE Grazie, molto gentile.

AGENTE Ma si immagini. Se lo legga con comodo, e poi mi faccia sapere se trova qualcosa che La può interessare. Comunque, se avesse bisogno di ulteriori informazioni, non si faccia problemi, mi chiami quando vuole: sono a Sua disposizione.

CLIENTE Mille grazie.

AGENTE Grazie a Lei. Buona giornata.

CLIENTE Altrettanto a Lei. Arrivederci.

AGENTE Buon giorno.

Grammar	**Giorno** (OR **'giorno**) is less formal than **buon giorno** and may be an attempt at making the client feel comfortable **c'hanno detto** is less formal than **ci hanno consigliato**, and may reveal a certain uncertainty in the client Formulaic 'bureaucratic' clause: **se avesse bisogno di ulteriori informazioni**
Sentence construction	Signs of unplanned speech: **e quindi** . . .; Use of conditional to make polite requests: **quali sarebbero i periodi più indicati**?
Vocabulary	"Polite" imperfect: **volevo = vorrei** Circumlocution: **non so se sia conveniente**
Vocabulary shared with R3 and 'officialese' in tone	**mi sa dire**; **ricorre**; **dépliant**; **diverse soluzioni**
Interjections, fillers, and connectors	**Ecco**, **guardi**, **mah**, **ma, beh**, **sa**, **vede**, **insomma**
Polite formulae	Greetings and farewells: **Buon giorno**, **Giorno**; **Mi dica** **Mille grazie**; **grazie a Lei**; **altrettanto a Lei** **sono a Sua disposizione**; **molto gentile**; **Buona giornata**; **Ma si immagini**

Example of spoken R2: TV game show (from T. De Mauro *et al*., *Lessico di frequenza dell'italiano parlato*, Rome: Etaslibri, 1993)

HOST Allora Armando La Peccierella, piccolo il premio ma enorme la soddisfazione . . .

CONTESTANT soddisfazione, ecco sì.

HOST Abbiamo avuto una battaglia veramente fuori dell'usuale giovedì scorso, quando la nostra grande campionessa in carica è stata sconfitta. Pensate, invece di dire "trentasei" o "ventisei" . . .

CONTESTANT no "trentaquattro" e "venti-" . . .

HOST . . . invece di dire "trentaquattro". . .

CONTESTANT No invece di dire "ventiquattro" disse "trentaquattro."

HOST . . . ha detto "trentaquattro". (To viewers) Avete capito? E' stato un lapsus e così questo giovanotto, che era andato addirittura sotto zero, è diventato il nostro campione e ha vinto cinquanta milioni, che comunque è sempre una bella cifra per un ragazzo . . .

CONTESTANT Certo

HOST . . . così giovane. (To contestant) Dunque allora c'è stata grande attesa giovedì scorso a Napoli, quando sapevano che sarebbe venuto a partecipare al nostro gioco?

CONTESTANT Sembrava . . .

HOST (To viewers) I napoletani, come sapete, sono sempre pieni di entusiasmo: pensate che hanno tappezzato il suo quartiere con i . . . dei manifesti che vi voglio far vedere. Guardate un po', eh! "I Segreti di Telemike," (laughs) "I Segreti di Twin Peaks." E allora quelli che passavano per le strade di Napoli dicevano "ma cos'è sta storia?" Hai capito? Perché forse non sapevano che avrebbe giocato con noi. Poi, pensate, hanno dovuto, nel suo quartiere . . . a casa sua hanno dovuto – si vede che lui ha un bel terrazzo – hanno messo uno schermo gigante, ecco. Guardate, un maxischermo e qui ci sono parenti, amici che applaudivano e facevano il tifo per lui quando ha vinto, perché è stata una . . . come se avesse vinto il Napoli, ecco. Comunque, fortunato il nostro campione in carica.

Grammar	A variety of tenses is used: present, *passato prossimo*, imperfect; also pluperfect, conditional perfect. One case of the (pluperfect) subjunctive and one of *passato remoto* At one point the narrative moves between the present, referring to the pictures being shown, **qui ci sono**, and the imperfect, taking us back to the time of the events, **applaudivano e facevano il tifo**
	The speakers use the **Lei** form of address. When the Host says **Hai capito?**, he is speaking to the audience and lapses into a generic **tu** instead of the usual (and correct) **voi**
Sentence construction	Sentences are short, or are made up of coordinated clauses. Subordinate clauses are syntactically simple – relative clauses introduced by **che**, or simple adverbial or noun clauses
	Formulaic sentences with inversion and no verb: **piccolo il premio ma enorme la soddisfazione**; **fortunato il nostro campione in carica**
Self-correction Change of structure	R1 features in reported speech: **Ma cos'è sta storia?** **con i . . . dei manifesti** **perché è stata una . . . come se avesse vinto il Napoli**

Parenthetical side remarks	**si vede che lui ha un bel terrazzo**
Vocabulary	Vocabulary is simple and neutral The host's reference to the contestant as a **giovanotto** is familiar and somewhat old-fashioned
Semi-technical terms	**campionessa in carica**, **maxischermo** Use of generic adjectives before nouns, almost as clichés: **la nostra grande campionessa**, **una bella cifra**, **un bel terrazzo** The flat tone is lifted by adverbs: **veramente**, **addirittura**
Interjections, fillers, and connectors	**Dunque**, **allora**, **comunque**; **ecco**; **guardate**, **guardate un po'**, **pensate**; **come sapete**; **avete capito?**, **hai capito?** Most sentences begin with a connector. This keeps the talk flowing and helps the host hold the floor: **allora**, **e così**, **comunque**, **dunque allora**, **perché**, **poi**, **guardate**
Regional features	When the Southern contestant uses the *passato remoto* **disse**, the Northern host repeats the verb but in the *passato prossimo*: **ha detto**

Example of R2–3: magazine editorial (from *Il Mondo*, 30 August 2002)

This editorial in an economics weekly aims at a style which combines specialist knowledge with a chatty, familiar tone.

Gli economisti assicurano che mai il pianeta terra in millenni di storia ha conosciuto livelli di ricchezza paragonabili a quelli raggiunti dall'occidente industrializzato nell'ultima metà del secolo scorso, quelli della società opulenta descritta da John Kenneth Galbraith. Società che è diventata ancor più che opulenta proprio in tempi recentissimi, fra il 1990 e il 2000. Ve lo ricordate? E' stato il decennio d'oro della cosiddetta new economy, di Internet, delle nuove tecnologie. Ed è stato il decennio magico della Borsa: le quotazioni salivano, salivano, salivano. Sempre. Inutile dilungarsi in ricordi, basta un esempio di casa nostra: Finmatica, media società specializzata in software bancario, venne collocata in Borsa a 5 euro; salì fino a 180. La Borsa creava ricchezza (virtuale) senza sosta.

E ci fu un gruppo di economisti (si fecero chiamare la scuola del Nuovo Paradigma) che cercò di dare fondamento teorico a quella follia sostenendo che i miglioramenti esponenziali di produttività legata alle nuove tecnologie avrebbero portato a tassi di crescita dei profitti delle imprese mai conosciuti

prima. E dunque la Borsa avrebbe continuato a salire creando ricchezza, tanta ricchezza, per tutti.

Sogni. Si trattava di una bolla speculativa ed è esplosa. Come forse sarebbe stato ragionevole aspettarsi. L'esplosione ha creato e sta creando danni e problemi a non finire, ma soprattutto ha fatto capire che qualcosa non funziona nel nostro sistema, nel senso che la corsa all'Eldorado che ha caratterizzato il decennio del boom ha sovvertito tutte le regole. E' cronaca di questi giorni: abbiamo saputo di manager che falsificavano bilanci pur di far salire le quotazioni delle loro società, di controllori che non controllavano, avallando le truffe, e via dicendo. In America l'amministrazione è già corsa ai ripari varando una serie di norme per garantire la trasparenza dei mercati, per difendere i risparmiatori dai manager disonesti, per fare in modo che ritorni la fiducia. In Italia si è aperto un dibattito sul destino del sistema: dopo il crollo del muro di Berlino e la morte del comunismo – si chiedono alcuni – non è che forse è iniziata anche l'agonia del capitalismo?

Grammar

Use of *passato remoto* for aspects of a time period barely two years past, to reinforce how much that time has been left behind

The position of **mai** at the beginning of its clause, in the opening sentence, gives an emphatic, almost dramatic, tone

The indicative in **non è che forse è**, instead of the more usual subjunctive, gives force to the statement in the **che** clause

Omission of articles gives a technical tone: **Finmatica**, **media società specializzata**; **falsificavano bilanci**

Sentence construction

In general, a careful alternation of short and long sentences

Sentences and clauses without main verbs: **Sempre**. **Sogni**. **Inutile dilungarsi in ricordi**

Clauses written as if they were complete sentences, giving the impression they are being thought of on the spur of the moment, as in speech, e.g.:
Società che è diventata ancor più che opulenta; **Ed è stato il decennio magico della Borsa**; **Come forse sarebbe stato ragionevole aspettarsi**

Some features more typical of R2 (speech):
Repetition: **le quotazioni salivano**, **salivano**, **salivano**
Direct address: **Ve lo ricordate?**

	And also R3 features: A somewhat contrived play on words: **controllori che non controllavano**	
Vocabulary		
Some technical terms	**collocata**	floated
	media società	mid-sized company
	quotazioni	share prices
	produttività	productivity
	tassi di crescita dei profitti delle imprese	company profit growth rates
	bolla speculativa	speculative bubble
	bilanci	accounts
	varando (. . .) norme	to pass regulations
	risparmiatori	savers / investors
General R3 vocabulary	**opulenta**, **miglioramenti esponenziali**, **dilungarsi**, **sovvertire le regole**, **avallare**, **trasparenza**	
Historical allusion	**la corsa all'Eldorado**	
Anglicisms	**new economy** (introduced and hedged by **cosiddetta**), **software**, **boom**, **manager**	
Expressions with a more familiar, R2 tone	**di casa nostra** **tanta ricchezza** (instead of **molta**)	

Example of R3: written communication from bank to its customers (from L. Coveri, A. Benucci & P. Diadori, *Le varietà dell'italiano: manuale di sociolinguistica italiana*, Rome, Bonacci, 1998)

Gentile Cliente,
al fine di risparmiarLe inutili perdite di tempo, qualora debba effettuare operazioni per un importo uguale o superiore a Lire 3.000.000 e NON intrattenga alcun tipo di rapporto con la nostra banca (es. conto corrente, deposito a risparmio ecc.), La informiamo che potremo eseguire le Sue disposizioni solamente se Ella è munita di documento di identità e di codice fiscale.

Si porta a conoscenza di tutta la clientela titolare di rapporti di conto corrente che con le banche indicate in calce, residenti sulla "piazza," non viene effettuata la compensazione giornaliera dei titoli negoziati. Pertanto gli assegni bancari tratti sugli sportelli di dette banche verranno considerati come "fuori piazza," ai soli fini della determinazione dei giorni trascorsi i quali tali titoli devono intendersi pagati ed a prescindere dalla causale di versamento applicata all'operazione.

Grammar	Preference for nouns over verbs: **non viene effettuata la *compensazione* giornaliera dei titoli negoziati** for **i titoli negoziati non verranno *compensati*** **ai soli fini della *determinazione*** for **solamente per *determinare***
Passive	**viene effettuata**, **verranno considerati**, **devono intendersi pagati**
Impersonal form	**si porta a conoscenza**
Ellipsis	Adjectives used elliptically for relative clauses: **tutta la clientela *titolare* di rapporti**
Sentence construction	Main clauses are short and simple, and contain almost no information; subordinate clauses are long and complex and carry the information; complex conjunctions: **trascorsi i quali**
Vocabulary	Formula of respect: **Gentile Cliente**
Less common words used in place of common ones	**effettuare, eseguire** for **fare** **Ella** for **Lei** **è munita di** for **ha con sé** **in calce** for **alla fine della lettera** **pertanto** for **quindi** **dette banche** for **queste banche (**or **le suddette banche)**
Synonymous expressions	**Gentile Cliente**, **La informiamo** **Si porta a conoscenza della spettabile clientela**
Technical vocabulary	**residenti sulla piazza**, **titoli**, **sportelli**, "**fuori piazza**" (note the inverted commas), **causale di versamento**

Example of R3: police report (from I. Calvino, 'L'antilingua' (1963), now in I. Calvino, *Una pietra sopra*, Turin: Einaudi, 1980)

This is a classic parody of how R3 bureaucratic language can be unnecessarily complex and end up obscuring the meaning rather than aiding communication. The author identified the main characteristic of this "antilanguage" as *terrore semantico*, i.e. avoiding all words that refer explicitly to concrete reality. The two sections we focus on in the passage have been marked here as {A} and {B} for ease of reference.

Il brigadiere è davanti alla macchina da scrivere. L'interrogato, seduto davanti a lui, risponde alle domande un po' balbettando, ma attento a dire tutto quel che ha da dire nel modo più preciso e senza una parola di troppo:

{A} Stamattina presto andavo in cantina ad accendere la stufa e ho trovato tutti quei fiaschi di vino dietro la cassa del carbone. Ne ho preso uno per bermelo a cena. Non ne sapevo niente che la bottiglieria di sopra era stata scassinata.

Impassibile, il brigadiere batte veloce sui tasti la sua fedele trascrizione:
{B} Il sottoscritto, essendosi recato nelle prime ore antimeridiane nei locali dello scantinato per eseguire l'avviamento dell'impianto termico, dichiara d'essere casualmente incorso nel rinvenimento di un quantitativo di prodotti vinicoli, situati in posizione retrostante al recipiente adibito al contenimento del combustibile e di avere effettuato l'asportazione di uno dei detti articoli nell'intento di consumarlo durante il pasto pomeridiano, non essendo a conoscenza dell'avvenuta effrazione dell'esercizio soprastante.

The "original" direct speech (A) is in R2, with one ungrammatical (R1) construction: **non ne sapevo niente che** . . . In R2 this would be **non sapevo che** . . . , or **non (ne) sapevo niente del fatto che la bottiglieria fosse . . .** The reported version (B) is R3.

Grammar	The reflexive in **bermelo** (A) disappears in **consumarlo** (B). Sequence of tenses: the first sentence of A is vague (**andavo . . . ho trovato**) B pedantically expresses the anteriority of the first action: **essendosi recato**. The demonstrative **tutti quei** in (A) makes sense because it refers to something in the immediate context. In the impersonal language of the written statement (B), it is replaced by the definite article **i**.
Sentence construction	The R2 version contains three sentences for a total of five clauses, only one of which is a subordinate clause. The R3 version is one long sentence, with seven subordinate clauses. A: each action in the story is a separate finite verb: **andavo**, **ho trovato**, **ho preso**, **sapevo**, **era stata scassinata**. B: the main verb is **dichiara**. This is the only finite verb (in fact the main clause is simply **il sottoscritto dichiara**). All the action verbs are non-finite or expressed as nominalizations: **essendosi recato**, **d'essere incorso**, **avere affettuato**, **non essendo a conoscenza**, **l'avvenuta effrazione**.
Prepositions and adverbs	A: **in (cantina)**; B: **nei locali di** A: **dietro**; B: **situati in posizione retrostante a** A: **per**; B: **nell'intento di** A: **di sopra**; B: **soprastante**
Vocabulary	
Semi-technical vocabulary	B: **Il sottoscritto**, **dichiara**, **detti articoli**
Nominalization	A: **accendere**; B: **eseguire l'avviamento** A: **trovato**; B: **incorso nel rinvenimento**

	A: **preso**; B: **effettuato l'asportazione**
	A: **era stata scassinata**; B: **l'avvenuta effrazione**
Generic vs specific vocabulary	The precise, concrete terms of A are replaced in B by more generic descriptions, e.g.:
	A: **la stufa**; B: **l'impianto termico**
	A: **fiaschi di vino**; B: **prodotti vinicoli**
	A: **cassa**; B: **recipiente**
	A: **carbone**; B: **combustibile**
	A: **bere** (**bermelo**); B: **consumare**
	A: **bottiglieria**; B: **esercizio**
Simple vs complex vocabulary	A: **stamattina**; B: **nelle prime ore antimeridiane**
	A: **andare**; B: **recarsi**
	A: **cena**; B: **il pasto pomeridiano**
	A: **sapere**; B: **essere a conoscenza di**

Example of R3: formal letter

This recent, authentic, and unedited letter, from a State museum to a person who had requested information, is in an elaborate style which would be difficult to understand for most Italians.

OGGETTO: Richesta informazione su G.M. nato 1833. Invio.
Si dimette, qui compiegata, la relazione elaborata dalla dr.ssa P.B., che presta servizio in quest'Istituto, circa l'indagine in oggetto, richiesta dalla S.V.
In ordine alla ricerca perfezionata si concorda sul metodo, sul livello d'approfondimento, sugli esiti.
Pertanto siffatta relazione s'approva, si sussume e si loda nella speranza d'aver soddisfatto in congrua guisa la richiesta.
Il Direttore

The style is impersonal and elaborate in the extreme. The Direttore is sending a report, prepared by a member of his staff, and gives it his approval in this covering letter. But the use of impersonal **si** (for all main verbs) and learned/archaic vocabulary gives a bureaucractic, almost abstract, quality to the relationship between the writer of the letter and the matters he is referring to.

Grammar	All main verbs have impersonal **si** as subject. Note lack of conjunction between the three phrases in the second sentence.	
Vocabulary		
Items common in formal correspondence:	**Oggetto:**	Re:
	in oggetto	above (i.e. in the line beginning "Oggetto")
	dalla S.V.	by you (**S.V. = Signoria Vostra**)

Items not normally found even in bureaucratic language	**si dimette**	(it) is released
	qui compiegata	attached, lit. "here folded together", usually **allegata**; the expression corresponds to "please find enclosed"
	in ordine a	with respect to
	perfezionata	(which has been) completed
	siffatta	such, this
	s'approva	not unusual elision of **si**
	si sussume	this verb means *to subsume*, but here is equivalent to *adopt*
	si loda	it is striking that the Direttore *praises* the report
	in congrua guisa	in an appropriate way

Words and their meanings

The following points apply throughout Chapters 2 to 13.

- Generally speaking, only the more common meanings of the Italian words and expressions listed in this section are taken into consideration.
- Italian adjectives are given in their masculine singular form.
- The gender of Italian nouns is given in some difficult cases; for all other instances refer to Chapter 14.
- In normal Italian spelling, accents are written only on a stressed vowel at the end of a word spelt with two or more vowels, e.g. **città**, **università**, **già**, **può** (except for **qua**, **qui**, where the **u** cannot be stressed). Some monosyllables take an accent to distinguish them from other words otherwise spelt the same, e.g. **è** – **e**, **dà** – **da**, **sé** – **se, tè – te**, **là** – **la**.

  An accent is not usually written on an internal vowel, though this may occur to eliminate possible ambiguity, e.g. **prìncipi** (pl of **principe**) – **princìpi** (pl of **principio**). We have used this device on many occasions to help with pronunciation. In normal usage such accents should not be written.
- Whenever appropriate, the usual Italian pronunciation of words of foreign origin is indicated in phonetic spelling in square brackets.

2 Misleading similarities

2.1 Similar form – different meaning: False friends

The following two sections list pairs of words in the two languages that although similar in form have different meanings.

2.1.1 'Falsi amici' I

Except for a handful of cases – namely, **grugno**/groin, **ostrica**/ostrich, **scannare**/to scan, **tappo**/tap (2nd meaning), **portiere**/porter (2nd meaning) – the pairs consist of cognates, i.e. words with a common origin.

"Falso amico"	English equivalent	English cognate	Italian equivalent
abile	skilful, clever	able	**capace**
accidente (m)	(usu) stroke	accident	**incidente** (m)
agenda	diary, notebook	agenda	**ordine** (m) **del giorno** (less frequently, **agenda**)
aggiudicare (**qc a qu**)	to award (sth to sb)	to adjudicate	**giudicare**, **decidere**
agonia	death pangs	agony	**angoscia**, **dolore acuto**

R1* vulgar or indecent
R1 informal, colloquial
R2 neutral, unmarked
R3 formal, written
Italian words and expressions are R2 unless otherwise indicated. See also p. 5.

The gender of nouns is given only where it is not predictable from the principles given in ch. **14**.

In some words, an accent is used to indicate the main stress but should not be used when writing. See p. 29.

The usual Italian pronunciation of foreign words is given in phonetic spelling in square brackets whenever appropriate.

"Falso amico"	English equivalent	English cognate	Italian equivalent
agonizzare (R2–3)	to be in the death throes	to agonize (over sth)	**tormentarsi** (**a causa/proposito di qc**)
argomento	topic, subject-matter; reason	argument (= discussion)	**discussione**, **lite** (f)
arguire (R3)	to infer, to deduce	to argue	**discutere**, **sostenere**
assessore	alderman, city/town councilor	assessor (expert); (tax)	**perito;** **agente delle tasse**
attendere (**qc/qu**)	to wait (for sth/sb)	to attend (= to be present) to attend to sth/sb (= to take care of sth/sb)	**assistere** (**a qc**), **presenziare** (**qc**) (R3) **assistere** (**qu**), **badare** (**a qc/qu**), BUT ALSO **attendere** (**a qc/qu**) (R3)
attico	penthouse	attic	**soffitta**
attuale	present, current	actual	**reale**, **vero**, **di fatto**
avvertimento	warning	advertisement	**annuncio** (**pubblicitario**), **inserzione** (**pubblicitaria**) (newspaper), **pubblicità** (radio, TV, cinema)
baracca	hut, shed, hovel	barracks	**caserma** (f s)
bordare	to hem	to board (a ship, a plane) - (a train, a bus, a car, a bicycle) - (to provide lodgings) (tr), (to take lodgings) (intr)	**imbarcarsi**, **salire** (**su**) **salire** (**su**+art./**in**) **alloggiare** (tr) **alloggiare** (intr)
bravo (adj)	(adj) good (of people, usually at doing something); (interj, with agreement in Italian) bravo! brava! etc.	brave	**coraggioso**
camera	room, chamber BUT ALSO camera (not often, usu television or cinema)	camera - (cine, tele, video)	**macchina fotografica** **macchina da presa**, **cinepresa**, **telecamera**

"Falso amico"	English equivalent	English cognate	Italian equivalent
campo	field	camp	**accampamento**, **campeggio**
carro	cart, chariot, waggon	car	**macchina**, **auto**(**mobile**) (f R2–3)
casino	(R1–2) brothel; (R1*-1) mess (= **confusione**)	casino	**casinò**
casseruola	saucepan	casserole	(**piatto consistente di**) **cibo cotto in casseruola**
casuale	fortuitous	casual	**informale**, **semplice**
casualmente	fortuitously	casually	**senza formalità**, **semplicemente**
cauzione	security, bail	caution	**cautela**
cava	quarry, pit	cave	**caverna**, **grotta**
cocomero	water melon	cucumber	**cetriolo**
cognato/-a	brother/sister in law	cognate	**parente** (m/f), **congiunto**; **parola affine**
collegio	(boarding) school; ALSO board, council, body of people in the same profession	college (UK, Aus) -(US)	**scuola** (**superiore**), **pensionato** (**universitario**) ALSO (Cambridge, Oxford) **college** ['kɔlɛdʒ] (m) **università**, **istituto universitario**
commediante (m/f)	(R3) actor, (R1–2) hypocrite, pretender	comedian	(**attore**) **comico**, **attrice comica**
commozione	emotion	commotion	**agitazione**, **confusione**, **trambusto**
comodità	comfort	commodity	**merce** (f), **prodotto**
compiacente	obliging, complaisant	complacent	**compiaciuto di sé**
compiacenza	courtesy, complaisance; satisfaction	complacency	**compiacimento di sé**
complessione (R2–3)	constitution (of body)	complexion	**carnagione**

"Falso amico"	**English equivalent**	**English cognate**	**Italian equivalent**
concreto (adj)	concrete (adj)	concrete (n)	**calcestruzzo** (R.2–3), **cemento**
concussione (R.3, leg.)	extortion, misappropriation	concussion -(med.)	**scuotimento, scossa** **commozione cerebrale**
conduttore	driver; conductor (heat, electricity)	conductor (bus) - (orchestra) - (lightning rod)	**bigliettaio** **direttore** (**d'orchestra**) **parafulmine** (m)
confrontare	to compare	to confront	**affrontare**; - (leg.) **mettere a confronto** BUT ALSO (intr) **confrontarsi** (**con qu**) = to argue (with sb)
consistente (adj) - (pres. p.) (**in**/**di**)	solid; relevant; consisting (of)	consistent	**coerente**, **costante**
contento (adj)	happy	content (adj), contented content (n)	**soddisfatto** **contenuto**
dècade (f)	period of ten days	decade (= 10 years)	**decennio**
deludere	to disappoint	to delude	**illudere**
delusione	disappointment	delusion	**illusione**
destituito	removed from office	destitute	**povero**, **indigente** (R.2–3)
destituzione	removal from office	destitution	**povertà**, **indigenza** (R.2–3)
dilapidare (R.3)	to waste, to squander (money, a fortune)	to dilapidate (tr)	**ridurre in cattivo stato**, **mandare in rovina**
dilapidato	wasted, squandered	dilapidated (gen) - (of buildings)	**in cattivo stato** **in rovina**, **cadente**
disgrazia	misfortune, accident	disgrace BUT to be in/to fall into disgrace	**vergogna**, **disonore** **essere/cadere in disgrazia**
domanda	question	demand	**richiesta**
domandare	to ask for	to demand	**esigere**, **pretendere**

"Falso amico"	English equivalent	English cognate	Italian equivalent
editore	publisher	editor - (head of a paper) - (edition reviser) - (film)	**redattore** **direttore** **curatore**, **editore** **tecnico del montaggio**
educazione	(usu) upbringing; manners	education	**istruzione**, **formazione** BUT ALSO (as school subject) **educazione** (**fisica**/**musicale**/**sessuale** etc.)
effettivo (adj)	real, actual	effective (adj)	**efficace**
effettivamente	in reality, actually	effectively	**efficacemente**
esito	result, outcome	exit	**uscita**
estenuante	tiring, weakening	extenuating	**attenuante**
estenuare (R3)	to weaken, to tire (tr)	extenuate	**attenuare**
eventuale	possible	eventual	**finale**
eventualmente	possibly	eventually	**alla fine**
evidenza	obviousness	evidence	**prova**, **testimonianza**
evincere (R3)	to deduce	to evince	**dimostrare**, **manifestare**
fabbrica	(usu) factory	fabric	**tessuto**, **stoffa**
facile	easy	facile	**superficiale**
fastidioso	annoying, vexing	fastidious	**pignolo**, **esigente**, **meticoloso**
firma	signature	firm (n) - (of lawyers)	**ditta**, **impresa**, **azienda** **studio legale**
fisico (n)	physicist; physique, body	physician	**medico**, **dottore**
fracasso	crash, din, uproar	fracas	**rissa**, **lite** (f)
geniale	full of genius, inspired, brilliant	genial	**gioviale**, **affabile**, **cordiale**
grazioso	cute, graceful	gracious	**gentile**, **cortese**
grosso	big, large	gross	**grossolano**, **volgare**, **crasso** (R3)
grugno (R1–2)	snout	groin	**inguine** (m)
guerriglia	guerrilla warfare	guerrilla (fighter)	**guerrigliero**
inabitabile (adj)	uninhabitable	inhabitable	**abitabile**

"Falso amico"	English equivalent	English cognate	Italian equivalent
incidenza	influence, effect	incidence	**ricorrenza**, **frequenza** BUT angle of incidence = **angolo d'incidenza**
infatti	indeed	in fact	**in effetti**, **anzi**
ingenuità	ingenuousness, naïveté	ingenuity	**ingegnosità**
ingiuria	insult	injury	**ferita**, **lesione**
ingiuriare	to insult	to injure (sb)	**ferire** (**qu**), **fare male** (**a qu**)
ingrossare (tr); **ingrossarsi** (intr)	to cause sb/sth to swell or to become/look big/fat; to swell, to become big/fat	to engross (tr)	**assorbire**, **affascinare**
interrogazione	(periodical) oral test at school; parliamentary question	interrogation	**interrogatorio** (by police, during trials etc.)
intimare (R2–3)	to order, to command	to intimate	**far capire**, **sottintendere**; **dichiarare**
intossicare	to poison	to intoxicate	**ubriacare**, **inebriare** (R2–3)
invidioso	envious	invidious	**odioso**
istanza (R3)	petition	instance	**esempio**, BUT ALSO **istanza** (R3, leg.)
largo	wide	large	**grande**, **grosso**
lettura	reading	lecture (formal) - (university)	**conferenza** **lezione**
libraio	bookseller	librarian	**bibliotecario**
libreria	bookshop	library	**biblioteca**
locazione (R3 leg.)	renting; lease	location	**posizione**; **posto**
lussuria	lust	luxury	**lusso**
lussurioso	lustful	luxurious	**lussuoso**
marrone (m) - (adj)	chestnut chestnut brown	maroon (n)	(**color**) **marrone** **rossiccio**
miseria	poverty, indigence	misery	**infelicità**, **sofferenza**

"Falso amico"	English equivalent	English cognate	Italian equivalent
misero	poor, wretched	miser	**avaro**
moneta	coin	money	**denaro**, **soldi** (m pl)
morbido	soft	morbid	**morboso**
moroso	slow to pay, defaulter	morose	**cupo**, **tetro**, **imbronciato**
notorio	generally known	notorious	**famigerato**
occorrenza	(possible) need; recurrence	occurrence	**avvenimento**, **evento**
occorrere	to be necessary	to occur	**accadere**; **venire in mente**
ossequioso	obliging, respectful	obsequious	**servile**, **adulatore**
oste (m) **ostessa** (f)	inn-keeper	host hostess	**ospite** (m/f, ALSO= guest), **padrone/-a di casa**; BUT hostess (on a plane) = **attendente di volo**, **hostess** (f)
òstrica	oyster	ostrich	**struzzo**
paesano (adj/n)	relating to a small town/dweller in a small town (**paese**)	peasant	**contadino**
pantomima	mime show	pantomime (= Christmas show)	**spettacolo rappresentato nel periodo natalizio**
paragone (m)	comparison	paragon	**perfetto esemplare**
parente (m/f)	relative, relation	parent	**genitore**
patente (f)	(usu) driving licence	patent	**brevetto**
pavimento	floor	pavement (sidewalk)	**marciapiede** (m)
petrolio	(mineral) oil, petroleum	petrol (UK, Aus) petrol (US)	**benzina** **gasolio**, **nafta**
petulante	insolent, impudent	petulant	**irascibile**, **irritabile**
petulanza	insolence, impudence	petulance	**irascibilità**, **irritabilità**
polluzione (R3 med.)	nocturnal emission (during sleep)	pollution	**inquinamento**
precipizio	ravine, chasm	precipice BUT fig (= perilous situation)	**parete rocciosa erta e scoscesa** **precipizio**
preservativo	condom	preservative (n)	**conservante** (m)

"Falso amico"	English equivalent	English cognate	Italian equivalent
pretendere	to want to, to expect, to claim (unjustly)	to pretend	**fingere**, **fare finta**
prevaricare (R3)	to act dishonestly, to abuse one's powers	to prevaricate	**agire in modo ambiguo**, **cavillare** (R3), **tergiversare** (R2–3)
processare	to put on trial	to process	**sottoporre a un processo di lavorazione**; **elaborare** (data); **considerare** (to consider)
pronto (adj)	ready; (interj. inv) hello (on the phone)	pronto (adv)	**immediatamente**, **subito**
querela	law suit, legal action	quarrel	**litigio**, **bisticcio**
rapire	to kidnap; (fig) to enrapture	to rape	**violentare**, **stuprare** (R2–3)
recita	play (usu by amateurs, e.g. at school)	recital	**esibizione solistica**, **recital** [usu 'rɛtʃital]
retribuzione	remuneration, reward, pay	retribution	**castigo**, **punizione**
riassumere	to sum up, to summarize; to re-employ	to resume	**riprendere**, **ricominciare**
ricoprire	to cover, to cover again	to recover	**ricuperare**, **ritrovare** (tr) **riprendersi** (intr)
riconoscenza	gratitude	reconnaissance	**ricognizione**
ricordare	to remember; to remind	to record	**registrare**
ricordo	memory; souvenir	record	**nota**, **documento**; **record** (sport etc.)
rilevante	important, outstanding	relevant	**pertinente**
rilevanza	importance	relevance	**pertinenza**
risentire (tr) - (**di qc**)	to hear again, to feel again; to feel the effects (of sth)	to resent (sth/sb)	**risentirsi** (**per qc/con qu**)
rude	rough (of people)	rude	**maleducato**

"Falso amico"	English equivalent	English cognate	Italian equivalent
rumore	noise	rumour	**voce** (f), **diceria**
scalpello	chisel	scalpel	**bìsturi** (m)
scannare	to cut the throat (of animals or people)	to scan	**scrutare**; **dare un'occhiata**; **scandire**; (computer) **scannerizzare** (R2–3)
sensibile	sensitive	sensible	**sensato**, **assennato**
simpatico	nice, likeable	sympathetic	**comprensivo**
simpatia	niceness (quality); attraction (feeling)	sympathy	**comprensione**, **commiserazione**
sopportare	to bear, to endure, to tolerate	to support	**sostenere**, **mantenere** (= to provide livelihood)
spada	sword	spade	**vanga**; (card suit) **picche** (f pl)
spogliare	to undress, to strip (also fig)	to spoil - (fig, e.g. a child)	**rovinare** **viziare**
sportivo (adj/n)	sporty; sportsman/-woman	sportive (adj)	**allegro**
stravagante	eccentric, odd	extravagant	**spendereccio**, **prodigo** (R2–3, of people), **esoso** (R2–3, of prices), **eccessivo**
tappo	plug, cork	tap	(for water) **rubinetto;** (light blow) **colpetto leggero**
triviale	vulgar, obscene	trivial	**banale**, **fùtile**
vacanza	(usu) holiday	vacancy	usu translated with a noun + **libero** (adj), e.g. **posto libero**, **stanza libera**; BUT ALSO (R3) **vacanza** (e.g. **della sede pontificia**)
vendicare	to avenge, to revenge	to vindicate	**giustificare**, **rivendicare**
vento	wind	vent	**foro di ventilazione**
venuta (n)	arrival, coming	venue	**luogo convenuto**

"Falso amico"	English equivalent	English cognate	Italian equivalent
verbalizzare	to include in a report (tr); to write a report (intr)	to verbalize	**esprimere a parole**
verso (**di una poesia**) - (**di un animale**) - (= **direzione**)	line (of a poem) call (of animals) direction, way	verse (= stanza) - (= poetry in gen) - (Bible)	**strofa** **versi** (m pl) **versetto**
veste (f)	(s) = frock; garment, clothing (often fig = guise, capacity, format) (pl) = clothes	vest (UK) - (US, Aus)	**maglia** **gilè** (m), **panciotto**

2.1.2 "Falsi amici" II: *English (or English looking) words with different meaning in Italian*

Some of the following words have been imported into Italian as part and parcel of specific activities (e.g. the game of poker) or sports (e.g. football). As a consequence, their use in Italian is limited to very definite contexts and only partially overlaps with their use in English. Other words in the list have totally different meanings in the two languages. The usual Italian pronunciation of the foreign words in the following table has been indicated in square brackets.

All the words listed are masculine nouns in Italian (unless otherwise stated) and select their articles according to their pronunciation (e.g. **il/un jolly**).

Word	English equivalents of the word as used in Italian	Italian synonyms (if any)	Italian equivalents of the word as used in English
bar [bar]	bar (place of refreshment)	**caffè** (m)	**bar** **barra**, **sbarra** (long piece of metal/wood); **saponetta** (soap); **lingotto** (gold etc.); **professione legale** (leg.); **battuta** (mus.)
basket ['basket]	basketball	**pallacanestro** (f)	**cesto**, **canestro**
body ['bɔdi]	body suit, body (stocking)	-	**corpo**

Word	English equivalents of the word as used in Italian	Italian synonyms (if any)	Italian equivalents of the word as used in English
box [bɔks]	pen (esp horses, cattle), playpen; small garage shower cubicle	**recinto** (**piccolo**) **garage** [gaˈraʒ]; **cabina per la doccia**	**scatola** (not big), **cassetta**, **cassa** (crate)
camping [ˈkampiŋg]	camp-site	**campeggio**	(to go camping) **andare in campeggio**
cargo [ˈkargo]	cargo ship/plane	**nave/aereo da carico**	**carico**
cocktail [ˈkɔkteil/ˈkɔktel]	cocktail party; cocktail (ALSO fig = mixture);	- - fig **miscuglio**, **miscela**	**cocktail**
corner [ˈkɔrner]	corner kick (football)	**calcio d'angolo**	**angolo**
eskimo/eschimo [ˈɛskimo]	type of wind-cheater fashionable in the 1970s	**giaccone** (m) (**impermeabile**)	**eschimese**
flipper [ˈflipper]	pinball machine	**biliardino** (**elettrico**)	**pinna**
footing [ˈfutiŋg]	jogging	-	**equilibrio** (balance); **base** (f), **basamento** (of buildings, R3)
full [ful]	full house (in poker)	-	**pieno** (adj)
goal [gɔl] (often written **gol**)	goal (football scoring)	**rete** (f)	**scopo**, **meta**, **fine** (m); **porta** (football structure)
golf [gɔlf]	jumper (UK, Aus), sweater (US); golf (sport)	**maglione** (m), **maglia di lana**	**golf** (sport)
hostess [ˈɔstes] (f)	air hostess, female flight attendant	**attendente** (f in this case) **di volo**	**padrona di casa**
jeans; [dʒints] (usu m p, but also m s and inv adj)	jeans, denim (**una gonna** (**di**) **jeans** = a denim skirt)	-	**jeans**
jolly [ˈdʒɔlli]	joker (playing card)	**matta**	**allegro** (adj), **cordiale** (adj)
mister [ˈmister]	football coach	**allenatore**	**signor**(**e**)
office (R2–3) [ˈɔffis]	butler's pantry laundry	**anticucina** **guardaroba**, **lavanderia**	**ufficio**

Word	English equivalents of the word as used in Italian	Italian synonyms (if any)	Italian equivalents of the word as used in English
poker ['pɔker]	poker (game) four (of a kind, e.g. **poker d'assi** = four aces)	- (**quattro**)	**poker** (game); **attizzatoio** (for fire)
record ['rɛkord]	record (sport etc.)	**primato**	**documento**, **atto**; **disco** (mus.); **record** (sport etc.)
relax [re'laks]	relaxation	**riposo**, **distensione**	**rilassarsi** (V), **distendersi** (V)
scotch [skɔttʃ]	adhesive tape Scotch whisky	**nastro adesivo** **whisky** ['wiski] NOTE: (usu) **il/un/i whisky**	**scozzese** (adj)
smoking ['zmɔkiŋg]	dinner jacket (UK, Aus), tuxedo (US)	-	**fumare**, **fumante**, **fumando**
stage [staʒ, but often steidʒ/stɛidʒ]	training period, workshop	**corso**, **periodo di tirocinio**	**palcoscenico**, **scena**
starter ['starter]	choke (car)	(**valvola dell'**) **aria**	**motorino d'avviamento**
tight ['tait]	morning suit	-	**stretto** (adj); **teso** (adj)

2.2 Similar form – partly similar meaning: Partial deceptive cognates

The cognates listed in this section have partially overlapping meanings in the two languages. In some way, they are even more deceptive than the previously listed 'straightforward' false friends. The semantic proximity between these cognates is intrinsically unstable and provides ideal conditions for the expanding influence of English on the Italian language.

R1* vulgar or indecent
R1 informal, colloquial
R2 neutral, unmarked
R3 formal, written
Italian words and expressions are R2 unless otherwise indicated. See also p. 5.

The gender of nouns is given only where it is not predictable from the principles given in ch. **14**.

In some words, an accent is used to indicate the main stress but should not be used when writing. See p. 29.

The usual Italian pronunciation of foreign words is given in phonetic spelling in square brackets whenever appropriate.

Italian	Partly equivalent English lookalike	Notes
abusare (**di qc/qu**) (R2–3)	to abuse (= to take advantage of sth/sb, to commit indecent assault on sb)	BUT to abuse (= to insult) = **insultare**
accomodare	to accommodate (= to reconcile)	ALSO = (usu) to fix, to repair **accomodarsi** = to make oneself comfortable, e.g. **prego, si accomodi!** = please, come in/sit down! BUT accommodate (= to provide lodgings) = **ospitare**, **alloggiare**
accusare	to accuse	ALSO (**accusare un dolore fisico**; **accusare il colpo**) = to show
affettare	to affect (= to show)	BUT to affect (= to influence) = **influire** (**su qc/qu**)
aggiustare	to adjust (= to rearrange, esp of clothes)	ALSO = (usu) to fix, to repair, to mend
alcolico	(adj) alcoholic (of drinks, substances)	ALSO (m) = alcoholic drink BUT alcoholic (n, of a person) = **alcolizzato**
alterare (**qc**) (R2–3)	to alter (sth, usu for the worse)	BUT to alter (gen) = **cambiare**
amministrare	to administer, to administrate (= to manage, to govern)	BUT to administer (= to give) = **dare** (= to give medicines, sacraments) = **somministrare** (R3)
annoiare	to annoy	ALSO (usu) = to bore BUT to annoy (usu) = **dare fastidio**, **seccare** (R1–2), **scocciare** (R1)
applicazione	application; concentration; the act of applying (e.g. medicaments), of putting into practice (e.g. theories)	BUT application (for a job) = **domanda** (**di lavoro**)
appuntamento	appointment (engagement)	BUT appointment (designation) = **nomina**
assassinio	assassination	ALSO = murder
astuto	astute (cunning)	BUT astute (discerning) = **sagace**, **avveduto**
avarizia	avarice (miserliness)	BUT avarice (greed) = **avidità**

Italian	Partly equivalent English lookalike	Notes
bomba	bomb	ALSO = a great thing/person (R1) BUT bomb (US, Aus = failure) = **fiasco**; (Aus = old car) = **catorcio** (R1), **carretta** (R1)
bordo	board in the expressions on board = **a bordo**, outboard = **fuori bordo** (engine or boat)	BUT board (= plank) = **tavola**, **asse** (m); - (= body of people with decision-making powers) = **consiglio** (**di amministrazione**), **collegio** - half/full board = **mezza pensione**/ **pensione completa**
cancelliere	chancellor	BUT chancellor of a university = **rettore**
carattere	character (feature, personality, font)	BUT character (in a book etc) = **personaggio**
carta	card **- da gioco** = playing card; - **di credito** = credit card - **da visita** (rare) = business card	ALSO = paper, document, map, charter
cartello	(R3 econ.) cartel	ALSO (usu) = sign, placard
catapulta	catapult (milit.)	BUT catapult (= sling) = **fionda**
collare (m)	collar (for animals, priests)	BUT collar (shirt) = **colletto**, **collo** - (coat) = **bavero** - (necklace) = **collana** - collar bone = **clavicola**
collettore (R3)	collector (tax, money)	ALSO = collection drain, river etc. BUT collector (stamps, art etc.) = **collezionista** (m/f)
compasso	compasses, calipers	BUT compass = **bussola**
competizione	competition (= contest)	BUT competition (= rivalry) = **rivalità** - (comm.) = **concorrenza**
comprensivo	comprehensive (= inclusive)	ALSO (of persons) = understanding BUT comprehensive (= exhaustive) = **esauriente**
compromesso (n)	compromise	ALSO (leg.) = preliminary contract

Italian	Partly equivalent English lookalike	Notes
concorrere	to concur (= to contribute, **a qc** = in sth)	ALSO = to participate (e.g. **concorrere alle spese** = to participate in the expenses); to compete BUT to concur (= to agree) = **essere d'accordo**, **concordare**
conferenza	conference (e.g. **conferenza stampa** = press conference)	ALSO = (formal) lecture
confidenza	confidence (= faith in oneself)	ALSO = familiarity; confidential revelation
confortevole (R2–3)	comfortable (active, = giving comfort)	ALSO = comforting BUT comfortable (passive = at ease) = **comodo** (also active, = giving comfort)
congelare, **congelarsi** (intr)	to congeal (= to freeze)	BUT to congeal (= to coagulate) = **coagulare** (intr **-si**)
consentire (**a qc**, **con qu su qc**)	to consent	ALSO (tr) = to allow (sth to sb = **qc a qu**)
controllare	to control	ALSO = to check, to verify, to inspect
convenzione	convention (= agreed usage)	BUT convention (= conference) = **convegno**, **congresso**, **conferenza**
coscienza	conscience	ALSO = conscientiousness, consciousness
(**essere**) **costipato**	(R3) (to be) constipated (usu **soffrire di stitichezza**, (**essere**) **stitico** (R1–2))	ALSO (not common) = to have a cold
costipazione	(R3) constipation (usu **stitichezza**)	ALSO (not common) = bad cold
creatura	creature	ALSO (R1) = child
crema	cream (of milk; cosmetic; ALSO fig = best part of sth)	ALSO = custard BUT cream (of milk) = (usu) **panna** (less frequently, **crema** (**di latte**)) - (medicament) = (usu) **pomata**
cristianità	Christianity	ALSO = Christendom
decadere	to decay (= to decline)	BUT to decay (= to rot) = **marcire** – (= to decompose (intr)) = **decomporsi** – (of teeth) = **cariarsi**
decente	decent (= proper, appropriate)	BUT decent (of moral quality) = **rispettabile**

Italian	Partly equivalent English lookalike	Notes
deferire (R2–3)	to defer (= to refer)	BUT to defer (= to postpone) = **differire** (R2–3), **rimandare**
denunziare	to denounce	ALSO = to make known to the authorities, to report, to reveal, to expose
difettivo (R3)	defective (gram.)	BUT defective (gen, = faulty) = **difettoso**
differire	to differ	ALSO (R2–3) = to defer, to delay
domestico	(adj) domestic (related to home and family)	ALSO **domestico** (n) = house servant BUT domestic (internal affair) = **interno**, **nazionale**
emozione	emotion	ALSO = excitement, agitation
enfasi	emphasis	ALSO (usu) = undue emphasis, rhetorical exaggeration, bombast
enfatico	emphatic	ALSO (usu) = over-emphatic, bombastic
epico (adj)	epic (adj)	BUT epic (n) = **poema epico**, **epopea** (R2–3)
esibizione	exhibition (display)	ALSO presentation (of documents); show; performance BUT exhibition (= exposition) = **esposizione**, **mostra**
espletivo (R3)	expletive (= filler, esp gram.)	BUT expletive (= swear-word) = **imprecazione** (R2–3), **parolaccia** (R1–2)
facilità	facility (ease)	BUT facility (= facilitation) = **facilitazione**, **agevolazione**; facilities (= installations) = **attrezzature** (f pl)
fallire	to fail	ALSO = (intr) to go broke/bankrupt; (tr) to miss (a target etc)
familiare (adj)	familiar	ALSO = pertaining to the family, familial
ferale (R3)	feral (funereal)	BUT feral (= wild) = **selvaggio**, **selvatico** - (= cruel) = **crudele**
fermo (adj)	firm (steady, determined)	ALSO = still, motionless; - (as a command, with agreement) stop!
festa	feast (holiday)	ALSO (R1–2) = (generic for) birthday, name day BUT feast (= banquet) = **banchetto**, **festino** (R2–3)

Italian	Partly equivalent English lookalike	Notes
festivo	festive (relating to holidays)	BUT festive (= merry) = **festoso**, **allegro**
figura	figure (shape, illustration, person)	BUT figure (= number) = **numero**, **cifra** - (= amount) = **somma**, **cifra**
fine (adj)	fine (refined, thin)	BUT fine (= beautiful) = **bello** - (= good) = (**molto**) **buono**, (**molto**) **bravo** (of people)
flemma	phlegm (coolness)	BUT phlegm (= mucus) = **sputo** (**mucoso**), **scaracchio** (R1)
forma	form	ALSO = mould BUT form (document to fill) = **modulo** - (= school level) = **classe** (f)
formazione	formation	ALSO = education, training
frase (f)	phrase	ALSO = sentence
frizione	(R2–3) friction (massage); (R3) rubbing between two bodies (physics)	ALSO (usu) = clutch (cars) BUT friction (between surfaces or people) (usu) = **affrito**
fungo	fungus	ALSO = mushroom, toadstool
idioma (m)	idiom (= language, dialect)	BUT idiom (= expression typical of a language) = **locuzione**, **idiomatismo** (R3), **frase idiomatica**
ignorare	to ignore	ALSO = not to know (NOTE: **ignorante** (R1) = rude)
importante	important	ALSO = considerable (sum, loss)
inconscio (adj)	unconscious (of behaviour)	BUT unconscious (of people, = out cold) = **svenuto**, **incosciente**, **privo di sensi**
incosciente	unconscious (= out cold)	ALSO = irresponsible, careless
intendere	to intend	ALSO = to hear, to understand
intervenire (**in qc**, **su qc/qu**)	to intervene	ALSO (**a qc**) = to be present, to take part - (**su qc/qu**) = to operate (surgically) (on sth/sb)
introdurre	to introduce (to let in, to put in; to start)	BUT to introduce (= to make people meet) = **presentare**

Italian	Partly equivalent English lookalike	Notes
invalido (n/adj)	invalid (= disabled [person])	BUT invalid (of things, = not valid) = (usu) **non valido** (**invalido** is only R3 leg.)
investire	to invest	ALSO = to run down (with a vehicle), to collide with sb/sth; to assail, to hit
istruire	to instruct	ALSO = (leg.) **istruire un'inchiesta** = to start an investigation BUT **istruito** (adj) = educated, learned
lancio	launch, launching (of rockets, missiles etc.; of products on the market)	ALSO = throwing, throw (gen, including sport, e.g. **lancio del disco** = discus throw); jump, drop (with a parachute); introduction (of an actor, for instance) BUT launch (of a ship) = **varo** - (of a book) = **presentazione** - (= boat) = **lancia**, **scialuppa**, **barca**
lavoro	labor (econ.)	ALSO (usu) = work, job BUT labor (= hard work) = **fatica** - (= working people/time) = **manodopera** - (in giving birth) = **doglie** (f pl), e.g. **avere le doglie** = to be in labor) - (political party) = **partito laburista**
licenza	licence	ALSO = leave (milit.); school leaving examination/diploma BUT driving licence = **patente** (f)
manifestazione	manifestation	ALSO = demonstration (political etc.)
marcia	march (milit., mus.)	ALSO = speed, gear (mech.); motion e.g. **mettere** (tr)/**mettersi** (intr) **in marcia** (to set into motion, to get going); walk; walking (sport discipline)
materiale (m)	material (= matter)	BUT material (= fabric) = **stoffa**
medicazione	(R2–3) medication (application of medicament)	ALSO = wound dressing BUT medication (= medicament) = **medicina**, **medicamento** (R2–3)
mobile (adj)	mobile, movable	ALSO **mobile** (m) = piece of furniture
muovere	to move (tr)	BUT to move (emotionally) = **commuovere** - (gen, intr) = **muoversi** - (house) = **traslocare**, **trasferirsi**
opportunità	opportunity	ALSO = opportuneness, timeliness

Italian	Partly equivalent English lookalike	Notes
orfano	orphan	ALSO (**orfano di padre/di madre**) = fatherless/motherless
palazzo	palace	ALSO multi-story building, block of flats
pensione	pension	ALSO = superannuation; boarding house; boarding charge; accommodation with meals (**pensione completa** = full board, **mezza pensione** = half board)
percepire	to perceive	ALSO = to receive (usu pay/salary)
pezzo	piece (part from a whole; chess, music, etc.)	ALSO = newspaper article; excerpt; part (mech.); idiom.: **un pezzo** = a long time; (**un**) **pezzo di . . .** = a great big . . . (e.g. **un pezzo d'uomo** = a great big man; **pezzo d'asino!** = you great big dunce!); **pezzo grosso** = bigwig; **pezzo forte** = pièce de résistance.
polso	pulse (med.)	ALSO (usu) = wrist
pope (m)	pope (Greek Orthodox priest, papa)	BUT Pope (= Pontiff) = **papa** (m)
portento	portent (= prodigy)	BUT portent (= omen) = **presagio**
portiere	porter (= janitor)	ALSO = goalkeeper (sport) BUT porter (for luggage) = **facchino**
preparazione	preparation	BUT the preparations (for an event) = **i preparativi**; - (chem.) = **preparato**
preservare	to preserve (= to protect)	BUT to preserve (= to keep in good condition) = (usu) **conservare**
primitivo	primitive (crude; primordial)	ALSO = former, earlier, originary
processo	process	ALSO = lawsuit, trial
propaganda	propaganda	ALSO = advertising
proposizione (R3)	proposition (math.)	ALSO = clause (gram.) BUT proposition (= proposal) = **proposta**
proseguire	to prosecute (to continue)	BUT to prosecute (legally) = (tr) **perseguire**; (intr) **ricorrere in giudizio**
provvedere	to provide (to make available)	ALSO = to take (the necessary) steps; - (**a qc/qu**) = to look after sth/sb

Italian	Partly equivalent English lookalike	Notes
questione	question (problem)	BUT question (= interrogation) = **domanda**
reale	real	ALSO = royal
reattore	reactor	ALSO = jet (plane, engine)
registrare	to register, to record	ALSO (mech.) = to adjust
regno	reign	ALSO = kingdom
relazione	relation(ship)	ALSO = affair; report BUT relation (= kinship) = **parentela** - (= relative) = **parente** (m/f)
resto	rest (= remaining part)	ALSO = balance (of a payment), change; - (math.) = remainder **resti** (pl) = remains BUT rest (repose) = **riposo**
reticente (R2–3)	reticent (= unwilling to talk)	BUT reticent (= reluctant) = **restìo**, **riluttante**
revisione	revision (contracts, texts etc.); overhaul (engines); auditing (accounts)	BUT revision (= review for an exam etc.) = **ripasso**
ricezione	reception (radio waves etc.)	BUT reception (= party) = **ricevimento** - (= receiving sb) = **accoglienza** - (hotel) = **reception** [re'sɛppʃon] (f)
riconciliare	to reconcile (= to end a disagreement)	BUT to reconcile (= to harmonize) = **conciliare**
ricorrenza	recurrence	ALSO = (recurrent) occasion/festivity
ricorrere	to recur	ALSO = to have recourse, to resort
riferirsi (**a qc/qu**)	to refer (to) (intr)	ALSO **riferire** (tr) = to tell, to report, to relate BUT to refer (tr) = (**ri**)**mandare**, **deferire**
riportare	to report	ALSO = to bring/take back; to carry over (of numbers)
ristorare	to restore (= to refresh)	BUT to restore (art works, buildings) = **restaurare**
santuario	sanctuary (temple)	BUT sanctuary (= place of protection) = **asilo** (for people); **riserva** (**naturale**) (for animals)
scenario	scenario	ALSO (usu) = theater set, scenery (ALSO fig)

Italian	Partly equivalent English lookalike	Notes
scolaro, -a	scholar (= schoolboy, -girl)	BUT scholar (= learned person) = **studioso**, **erudito** (R2–3)
secolare	secular (lay)	ALSO = hundreds of years old
sentenza	sentence (leg.)	BUT sentence (gram.) = **frase** (f)
sicurezza	security (stability; financial security)	ALSO = safety (e.g. **sicurezza stradale** = road safety, **cintura di sicurezza** = safety belt); (self-)confidence
sicuro	secure (stable; with no danger, well defended)	ALSO = safe (e.g. **al sicuro** = safe, in a safe place); sure; confident, steady (of persons); (adv, R1–2) certainly, **di sicuro** = certainly
soggetto	subject (gram., art)	ALSO = person BUT subject (= school topic) = **materia** - (of a country) = **cittadino** - (of a ruler) = **suddito**
sostanziale	substantial (= fundamental)	BUT substantial (of meals) = **sostanzioso** - (= considerable) = **considerevole**, **consistente** - (= solid) = **solido**
sperimentare (tr)	to experiment (on/with sth)	ALSO = to try, to experience
spettacolo	spectacle	BUT spectacles (= glasses) = **occhiali** (m pl)
stabilimento	establishment (act of establishing)	ALSO = specialized building for industrial (and other) purposes, works, factory
storia	story	ALSO = history
succedere (intr)	to succeed (= to follow)	ALSO = to happen BUT to succeed (= to be successful) = **riuscire**, **avere successo** (**in qc**)
suggestione	suggestion (psychological)	BUT suggestion (= piece of advice) = **suggerimento**
superbo	(of things) superb	ALSO (of people) proud, haughty
suscettibile	susceptible	BUT susceptible to (e.g. disease) = **soggetto a**
tavola	table (set for eating)	ALSO = plank, board; BUT table (gen) = **tavolo**
temporale (adj)	temporal	ALSO **temporale** (m) = (thunder)storm
termine (m)	term	ALSO = boundary; end BUT term (time) = **periodo** (**di tempo**) - (= 3 months of school) = **trimestre**

Italian	Partly equivalent English lookalike	Notes
trio	trio (music); (fig.) set of three persons connected in some way (work etc.)	BUT trio of things (or persons, in some cases) = **terna** (R2–3); NOTE: **terzetto** (threesome) is used if the connection between three persons is coincidental.
tronco (m)	trunk (tree, body)	BUT trunk (luggage) = **baule** (m) - (car) = **bagagliaio**, **baule** (m) - (elephant) = **probòscide** (f)
udienza (R2–3)	audience (papal)	ALSO = court hearing (leg.) BUT audience (theater etc.) = **pubblico**, **spettatori** (m pl)
umore	(R3) humour (= [biological] liquid)	ALSO (usu) = mood BUT humour (= wit) = **umorismo**
vago	vague	ALSO (R3, literary) = eager; beautiful; wandering
vano (adj)	vain (= useless, empty)	ALSO **vano** (n) = space; room; opening BUT vain (= conceited) = **vanitoso**
verificare	to verify	ALSO = to check NOTE: **verificarsi** = to happen
vizioso	vicious (= corrupt)	BUT vicious (= savage, ferocious) = **selvaggio**, **feroce**
vuoto (n)	void (= vacuum, emptiness)	ALSO (adj) = empty BUT void (= vacant) = **vacante** - (= devoid) = **privo** (**di qc**/**qu**) - (= null) = **nullo**

2.3 Paronyms with similar meanings

The highly phonetic nature of the Italian alphabet means that two words identical in sound will have identical spelling. By comparison with

R1* vulgar or indecent
R1 informal, colloquial
R2 neutral, unmarked
R3 formal, written
Italian words and expressions are R2 unless otherwise indicated. See also p. 5.

The gender of nouns is given only where it is not predictable from the principles given in ch. **14**.

In some words, an accent is used to indicate the main stress but should not be used when writing. See p. 29.

The usual Italian pronunciation of foreign words is given in phonetic spelling in square brackets whenever appropriate.

languages like English or French, in Italian there are few real homonyms, that is, unrelated words that sound the same but mean different things, e.g. **piano** *plan* and **piano** *plane*, or **scolare** *to drain* and **scolare** (adj) *related to school*. In most cases, the difference in meaning between identical Italian words simply reflects different stages of the semantic evolution of the same word, e.g. **espresso** (m) meaning *express*, *special delivery letter*, as well as *espresso* (coffee). This section will therefore concentrate not on homonyms but on paronyms, i.e. words with different meanings that, although not identical, are similar enough in form and sound to constitute a potential source of ambiguity for the student.

Intransitive verbs taking the auxiliary **essere** (cf. chapter 22) have been indicated throughout this section.

2.3.1 Paronyms with similar meanings: a general list

accezione (R3) meaning	**accettazione** acceptance; reception (in a hospital)	
accrescimento (R2–3) increase	**crescenza** (R3) growth (usu physical)	**crescita** growth (gen)
alcolico (adj) alcoholic (of substances) (n) alcoholic drink	**alcolizzato**(n) alcoholic (person)	
ambiente atmosphere, ambience, environment	**àmbito** circumscribed space; (fig) scope, circle	
animato alive, lively; animated	**animoso** brave; hostile	
anno year (gen); **buon anno** = happy new year	**annata** period of one year, with reference to its events or its duration, e.g. **una buona annata** = a good year (in terms of production, usu agricultural); all the issues for one year of a newspaper or periodical	
apparizione apparition	**apparenza** outward appearance	
argomentazione line of reasoning; complex of interconnected reasonings	**argomento** topic, subject matter; reason	

arrossare (usu tr) to make red, to redden	**arrossire** (intr AUX **essere**) to blush	
assaporare to savour (also fig)	**insaporire** to make tasty	
atterraggio landing (of a plane)	**atterramento** knocking down (of a person in wrestling, boxing etc.)	
attrattiva psychological attraction, appeal; (in the pl) appealing features	**attrazione** attraction (gen, also = highlight of a show)	
avanzo (econ.) surplus; (math.) remainder; ALSO (usu pl) remains, leftovers; (fig) **avanzo di galera** = jail-bird	**avanzata** advance (esp milit.)	**avanzamento** act of advancing or putting forward; promotion; progress
boccata mouthful (usu of gaseous or liquid substances); **una boccata d'aria** = a breath of fresh air	**boccone** (m) mouthful of food, morsel; (fig) something to eat	
bollare to stamp; (fig) to brand	**bollire** (tr and intr) to boil	
caldo (adj) warm (also fig) (n) warmth, heath	**caloroso** (adj) warm (only fig); (R1–2) said of a person who does not feel the cold	
calorifero (R2–3) (n) radiator, heater	**calorifico** (adj) calorific	**calorico** (adj) caloric
cambiamento change	**cambio** change; swap, e.g. **facciamo** (**a**) **cambio** (R1–2) = let's swap; exchange (also econ.), exchange rate; (mech.) gears, gear-box	**scambio** exchange (not econ.), swap, trade; mix up; **scambio ferroviario** = railway points/switch; **scambi commerciali** = trade

campo field (also fig); (sport) field, oval, pitch, court; camp (same meaning as **accampamento**, and in set phrases, e.g. **piantare/levare il campo** = to pitch/to strike camp)	**accampamento** encampment, camp (of troops, nomads, refugees)	**camping** (m) camp-site (for leisure)	**campeggio** camp-site; camping, e.g. **andare in campeggio** = to go camping
cantante (m/f) singer (gen)	**cantore** (R2–3, **cantora** f) chorister (usu in church)	**cantautore** (**cantautrice** f) singer who writes his/her own songs	
canzone (f) song (with words, popular, e.g. **le canzoni della prima guerra mondiale** = the (pop-)songs of the years of the First World War); type of poem	**canto** art of singing, singing (also of birds); melody; song (liturgical, military, e.g. **i canti della prima guerra mondiale** = the military songs of the First World War); canto (poetry)		
captare (R2–3) to pick up, to intercept (usu with devices such as a radio etc.)	**catturare** to capture		
carro cart, waggon, chariot; **carro bestiame** = cattle wagon, stock car (US); **carro armato** = tank; **carro funebre** = hearse	**carrello** trolley (cart) (shopping, tea); carriage (typewriter); undercarriage (plane); dolly (cinema)	**carretta** small cart; (fig, R1) old, run-down vehicle	**carriola** wheelbarrow
carrozza carriage; coach, passenger car (US)	**carrozzella** small carriage; horse-drawn cart for hire (in Rome and Naples); pram, baby carriage (US); wheelchair	**carrozzina** pram, baby carriage (US)	**carrozzone** (m) caravan (circus, gipsies)

cattiveria nastiness, naughtiness, mischief (also = naughty action)	**cattività** captivity	
cava quarry	**caverna** cave	
cemento concrete	**cimento** (R3) test, trial; danger	
cerchio circle; hoop	**circo** circus	**circolo** circle, **circolo polare artico/antartico** = Arctic/Antarctic Circle, **circolo vizioso** = vicious circle; club, association
cinta belt (clothing accessory); enclosure wall, **cinta delle mura** = circle of walls; **muro di cinta** = boundary wall	**cinghia** strap; belt (clothing accessory, mechanical)	**cìntola** belt (clothing accessory); waist
cintura belt (clothing accessory or for the purpose of protection, e.g. **cintura di sicurezza** = safety belt; **cintura di castità** = chastity belt); waist, girdle	**cinturone** (m) holster-belt	**cinturino** watch-strap
colorato colored	**colorito** (adj) colored, colorful (also fig of speech, but not of character); red or pink, referring to the cheeks (n) skin color (esp of the face); (fig) coloring of expression (in language, music, art)	
colpevole (adj) guilty, culpable (n, m/f) culprit	**colposo** (R3) culpable (of actions that are damaging but without malice), **omicidio colposo** = manslaughter	
compimento (R2–3) completion	**complimento** compliment	**complemento** complement

compìto (R2–3) usu well-mannered, polite, but also completed	**compiuto** (p.p. of **compiere**) completed, finished, **ha compiuto tre anni** = he/she has turned three (years old)	
comprensibile comprehensible, understandable	**comprensivo** (of persons) understanding; (of things) comprehensive, inclusive	
concentrazione concentration (also mental)	**concentramento** concentration (not mental); **campo di concentramento** = concentration camp	
conduttore (R2–3) driver (trains, public transport, and also [R3] Formula 1); conductor (of heat, electricity); (R3 leg.) tenant	**conducente** (m R2–3) driver (esp public transport), e.g. **non parlare al conducente** = do not speak to the driver	
conoscente (m/f) acquaintance	**conoscitore** (**conoscitrice** f) connoisseur, expert	
creatore (adj) creative (= that creates); (n, **creatrice** f) creator, **il Creatore** = the Creator, the Maker	**creativo** (adj) creative (= that can create, esp with reference to imagination)	
cuocere (tr with direct object always expressed) to cook (to roast, to boil etc), e.g. **cuocere la pasta** = to cook/to boil the pasta (intr AUX **essere**) to cook (intr AUX **avere**) (fig, R1–2) to burn (of the sun), e.g. **il sole oggi cuoce** = today it's very hot	**cucinare** (tr) to (prepare and) cook food, a dish, a meal etc, e.g. **cucinare la pasta** = to (prepare and) cook the pasta (and its sauce, possibly); **so cucinare** (NOT **so cuocere**) = I can cook; **cucinare la cena** = to prepare and cook dinner	
deforme deform	**difforme** (R2–3) different, dissimilar	
difettivo (R3) defective (gram.)	**difettoso** faulty, defective (gen)	**deficiente** (R2–3) lacking sth; (R1) idiot
effettivo actual	**efficace** effective	**efficiente** efficient

emotivo emotional, excitable (of persons), concerning emotions	**emozionante** exciting	
energico energetic, full of energy, strong	**energetico** concerning energy, e.g. **fonte energetica** = energy source	
fallire (tr) to miss (the mark) (intr AUX **essere**) to fail, to be unsuccessful	**fallare** (R3) to make a mistake, to err	
famoso famous, renowned	**famigerato** (R2–3) notorious (usu of persons)	
felicità happiness	**felicitazione** (usu in the pl) congratulations	
festività festivity, holiday, (holy) Day, e.g. **la festività della Pasqua** = Easter Day	**festa** feast, holiday; party; (R1–2) birthday, name-day (= **onomastico**)	
festivo relating to holidays and non-working days in general	**festoso** festive, cheerful, merry	
fondazione act of founding, e.g. **la fondazione di Roma** = the foundation of Rome; foundation (as in charitable organization); (pl) foundations of a building	**fondamento** foundation (of a building, pl **–a**); also fig (pl **-i**), e.g. **una teoria senza fondamento** = a groundless theory	
fossa hole in the ground; grave	**fossato** ditch; moat	
freddezza coldness (also fig)	**freddo** (n) cold (adj) cold	**freddura** (R2–3) witticism, pun
gelo frost (in general, freezing temperature, ice), e.g. **giorni di gelo** = freezing days	**gelata** frost (a single occurrence of frost, for instance during one night), e.g. **questa settimana ci sono state due gelate** = this week there have been two frosts	

giorno day (a period of 24 hours as well as, in contrast with night, the period of daylight, with all related meanings); **buon giorno!** = (usu) good morning! but also = have a good day! (concluding a visit, a conversation etc); **un bel giorno** = one day (in stories); **di giorno** = during the day, in daylight	**giornata** day (usu the time between dawn and dusk, with reference to the way of spending it or its duration or the 'quality' of its events, including the weather); **buona giornata!** = have a good day!; **una bella giornata** = a beautiful day; **di giornata** = today's, fresh (esp of eggs); **in giornata** = (within) today; a special or historic day, e.g. **le cinque giornate di Milano**; **la giornata missionaria** = Mission Day	
giudiziario, giudiziale (R3) concerning judges or judgments, judicial, judiciary	**giuridico** concerning the law, legal	
governatore (**governatrice** f) governor (official position)	**governante** (m) person who governs (f) nanny, housekeeper	
giudicare to judge	**giustiziare** to execute	
guardia act of guarding, e.g. **fare la guardia a qc/qu** = to guard sth/sb; guard (one or more soldiers or armed citizens with guarding responsibilities); sentry	**guardiano** keeper, guardian, watchman, e.g. **guardiano dello zoo** = zoo keeper, **guardiano notturno** = night watchman	
impazzire to go mad	**impazzare** to run wild	
inclinare (tr) to tilt, to tip (intr) (R3) to lean; to be inclined to	**inchinare** = **chinare**, but less frequent	**chinare** (tr) to lower, to bow, to bend towards the ground, usu head, eyes, e.g. **il capo**, **la testa**, **gli occhi**, **lo sguardo**, as a sign of submission, modesty, humiliation, shame etc.

inclinarsi to tilt (intr), to bend over (usu of things and in a rather rigid way, in opposition to **piegarsi**)	**inchinarsi** to bow (also fig = to give in), to curtsey (= **fare l'inchino/la riverenza**)	**chinarsi** to stoop, to bend down (only of persons)
inconscio (adj) unconscious (of behaviour) (n) unconscious	**incosciente** irresponsible; unconscious (out cold)	
informale informal	**informe** shapeless	
informazione piece of information	**informatica** information science, IT	
interesse (m) interest	**interessamento** interest (not econ.); intervention (usu of a bureaucratic or political kind, as in "sb's good offices")	
interrogazione (periodical) oral test at school; parliamentary question	**interrogatorio** interrogation (by police, during trials etc.)	
lamento lament, moan, wailing	**lamentela** complaint	
lingua tongue (also fig); language (of a community, a nation; as opposed to dialects)	**linguaggio** language (gen, as way of communicating; in particular, faculty of speech); way of speaking, jargon, e.g. **linguaggio burocratico** = bureaucratic jargon	
lusso/lussuoso luxury/luxurious	**lussuria/lussurioso** lust/lustful	
mantenimento sustenance, upkeep, maintenance	**manutenzione** maintenance (= repair and upkeep of machinery, roads etc.)	
marcare to stamp, to mark (also in sports); to emphasize; to score a goal	**marchiare** to mark, to stamp, to brand (also fig)	
mattino, **mattina** morning (time of the day)	**mattinata** morning (period of time between dawn and midday, with reference to its duration, to its events or to the weather)	

medicina medicine (science, drug)	**medicazione** dressing (of a wound); application of medication	**medicamento** (R2–3) medicine (= drug)	
medio middle finger	**media** average, mean	(**mass**) **media** (m pl) [mas 'midja/'mɛdja] (mass-) media	**medium** (m/f) medium (in seances)
medio (adj) medium, e.g. **altezza media** = medium height; in the middle, e.g. **le** (**scuole**) **medie inferiori/superiori** = 'middle' school (first three years after primary school)/high school (next five years)	**mediano** (adj) in the middle; (n) centerfield player, half-back (sport)		
montagnoso/ montuoso full of mountains, mountainous, hilly	**montanaro** (adj) pertaining to mountain dwellers, e.g. **canzone montanara** = mountain song (m, f- **a**) mountain dweller	**montano** (adj) pertaining to the mountains, e.g. **flora montana** = mountain flora	
monte (m) mountain, mount (esp in names), e.g. **il monte Bianco**	**montagna** mountain, mountainous region, e.g. **andare in montagna** = to go to the mountains		
morbido soft	**morboso** morbid		
notte (f) night (gen)	**nottata** night (with reference to the way of spending it or its duration or the "quality" of its events, including the weather)		
onda wave (gen, also in physics); the stress, also in fig uses, is on continuity and swelling more than on breaking power	**ondata** breaker, wave; (fig) surge, wave; the stress, also in fig uses, is more on the breaking power of the wave		

originale (adj) pertaining to the origin (of sb/sth), original; new, eccentric; authentic; (n, m) original; (n, m/f) eccentric person	**originario** (adj) originally from a given place, e.g. **originario dell'America** = originally from America; of the place of origin, e.g. **il paese originario** = the country of origin; original, former	
perseguire to pursue; (R3) to prosecute (legally)	**perseguitare** to persecute	
piano (adj) flat, level; plane (adv) slowly; softly (n) flat surface; plain; plane; floor, storey; plan; pianoforte NOTE plane tree = **plàtano** - plane (tool) = **pialla**	**piana** level ground, plain	**pianura** plain, level ground
polpo octopus	**pòlipo** polyp NOTE: often also used for **polpo**	
potere capacity of acting according to one's will, power (absolute, judicial, legislative, executive etc.); influence, authority	**potenza** strength, power (physical, mech., math., and also = country); potency (sexual)	
pregiudicato (m, f -**a**) previous offender (leg.)	**spregiudicato** (adj) free from prejudice; unscrupulous	
preparazione preparation (gen)	**preparato** (n) preparation (chem.)	**preparativo** (usu in the pl) preparations
presenziare (tr/intr) to be present (at sth = **qc**/**a qc**)	**presentare** to introduce sb, to present	
procedura procedure	**procedimento** way of proceeding; course, development; process; proceedings (leg.)	
processo process, course; trial (leg.)	**processione** procession	

proposta proposal	**propòsito** resolution, intention; topic, matter, e.g. **in proposito** = on this topic; **a proposito** = while on this topic, by the way		
radio (f) radio (m R3) radius (bone); radium	**raggio** ray, beam (of light); spoke (of a wheel); radius (of a circle), e.g. **nel raggio di cinque chilometri** = within a five-kilometer radius		
rapimento kidnaping	**rapina** robbery (of banks, people etc., but not houses)		
rapire to kidnap, to abduct; (fig) to enrapture	**rapinare** to rob (banks, people etc., but not houses)		
recùpero (**ricùpero**) recovery, retrieval, salvage; **il ricupero/ i minuti di ricupero** = stoppage time (sport)	**ricòvero** hospitalization; shelter; old people's home		
recita play (usu by amateurs, at school etc.)	**recital** [usu 'rɛtʃital] solo performance, recital		
relitto wreck (also fig)	**reliquia** relic (religious)		
restaurazione reinstatement, restoration (politics, history)	**ristorazione** food catering, restaurant catering	**restauro** restoration (of buildings, art etc.)	**ristoro** refreshment, relief
ricetta recipe; medical prescription; (fig) cure	**ricettazione** receiving of stolen goods		
riconoscenza gratitude	**riconoscimento** recognition; acknowledgment	**ricognizione** reconnaissance	
rilassare to relax (tr) **rilassarsi** = to relax (intr)	**rilasciare** to release; to give (an interview); to issue (a document); (less common) to relax (tr)		

ritirare to withdraw (tr, gen)	**ritrarre** to withdraw, to draw back, to retract (usu hands, feet etc.); to depict, to paint, to make a portrait	**ritrattare** to recant; to retract (an accusation)	**retrarre** (R3) to retract (as in **ritrarre**)
ritiro retreat, place of retreat (religious or similar); revocation (of passport, driver's licence etc.); collection (of money, tickets etc.); withdrawal (also military, but without urgency), e.g. **il ritiro programmato dei soldati dell'ONU** = the planned withdrawal of the UN soldiers	**ritirata** retreat (military, usu in front of an advancing enemy); tattoo (milit.); latrine		
rocca fortress (usu on a mountain)	**roccia** rock (substance, geological term)		
romano Roman	**romanico** Romanesque	**romantico** Romantic; romantic, sentimental	**romanzo** (adj R2–3) Romance; (n) novel
romanesco (adj) related to modern Roman customs (cuisine, dialect etc); (n) the dialect of Rome	**romanista** (adj) related to Roma football team; (n) supporter or player of Roma football team; (R2–3) Romanist (law, philology, archeology)	**romancio** (R3) Romansch	**romeno/rumeno** Romanian
rotare (**ruotare**) (tr and intr) to rotate, e.g. **la Terra ruota intorno al sole** = the Earth rotates around the Sun	**roteare** (R3) (tr and intr) to rotate, to whirl, to roll around (quickly), e.g. **roteare gli occhi** = to roll one's eyes		

segretario (m), **-a** (f) secretary	**segreteria** secretary's office, secretariat	
seguire to follow	**seguitare** to continue	
selvaggio (adj) wild, of anything that lives in forests or wild places, often (also fig) with a connotation of fierceness and violence; pertaining to a very primitive culture (n) savage	**selvatico** (adj) wild, of spontaneous plants and untamed animals that live free from human interference (n) gamy flavour or smell, e.g. **sa di selvatico** = it tastes gamy	
sensato sensible, judicious	**sensibile** sensitive; noticeable, perceptible	**sensitivo** sensitive; sensorial
sera evening (time of the day), **di sera** = in the evening; **ieri sera** = last night, yesterday evening	**serata** evening, night (period of time between sunset and the night, with reference to its duration, its events or the weather); soirée, evening performance or ball or party	
sostenere to support, to maintain (also fig); **sostenere un esame** = to sit for an exam	**sostentare** to provide sustenance, to maintain economically	
sostanziale fundamental; (philosophy, R3) constituting a substance	**sostanzioso** full of substance, substantial (e.g. **un pasto sostanzioso** = a substantial meal)	
spezia spice	**specie** (f) species	
spirituale spiritual	**spiritoso** witty, funny	**spirìtico** spiritistic, spiritualistic

squadra set-square; team; squadron (two or more divisions in the navy or the air force)	**squadriglia** squadron (air force, small vessels)	**squadrone** (m) squadron (cavalry, tanks)
suggerimento suggestion, piece of advice	**suggestione** suggestion (psychological); influence, instigation	
tavola plank; table (set for eating) e.g. **a tavola** = at/to the dinner table); table (with columns and rows) e.g. **la tavola pitagorica** = multiplication table; table (ancient law) e.g. **le tavole della legge** = the Tables of the Law; illustration in a book; tablet, panel	**tavolo** table = piece of furniture, for all purposes, e.g. **tavolo da biliardo** = pool table; **tavolo da gioco** = card table	**tavolino** small table, usu for writing or studying, desk; small table in a bar or a "caffè"
tavolato (R2–3) plank floor; paneling	**tabulato** (R2–3) tabulation	**tabella** table (arrangement of data in columns and rows)
televisione television (gen, including television set)	**televisore** television set	
tempestoso stormy	**tempestivo** timely	**tempestato** (R2–3) covered with, e.g. **una corona tempestata di diamanti** = a crown covered with diamonds
terra earth; land; soil; ground, e.g. **per terra** = on the ground	**terreno** (n) ground; terrain; soil; plot of land; (adj) worldly, earthly (as opposed to heavenly), e.g. **vita terrena** as opposed to **vita eterna**	**terrestre** (n) earthling; (adj) terrestrial, of the Earth; earthly, e.g. **paradiso terrestre** = Earthly Paradise; referring to land as opposed to sea
tònico (n) tonic, reconstituent; (adj) tonic	**tonale** (adj) tone-, tonal	

trattamento treatment	**tratto** stroke, line; section (of a road etc.)	**trattato** treaty; treatise	
ufficiale (m) official (= person with a position in a public office); officer (military); (adj) official	**ufficioso** (adj) semi-official, unofficial, e.g. **in via ufficiosa** = unofficially		
ufficio office (also as a place); duty	**officina** workshop, small factory		
valido valid; strong	**valoroso** valorous, valiant	**valente** (R2–3) skilful	**di valore** valuable (objects); leading (persons)
veglia wakefulness, vigil, e.g. **veglia funebre** = wake	**sveglia** time for waking up, wake-up call, **dare la sveglia a qc** = to give sb a wake-up call; alarm clock		
vetro glass (material), sheet of glass, piece of broken glass	**vetrata** large window, usu with fixed panes; stained-glass window	**vetrina** shop window; show-case, glass-fronted cupboard	**vetrino** slide (for the microscope)
vincita win (lottery, gambling etc.)	**vittoria** victory (war, sport etc.)		
vizioso vicious, corrupt	**viziato** spoilt; vitiated		
votazione vote (= act of voting); mark, grade (school)	**voto** vow; vote, voting; mark, grade (school)		

2.3.2 Paronyms with similar meaning: misleading "alterati"

This is a special subset of cognate paronyms, some of which (e.g. **tavolo/tavolino**, **carro/carrello**) were included in the table above with other related words. As indicated in a separate chapter of this book (see chapter 5, Suffixes), many Italian nouns are alterations of existing words through suffixes but have meanings of their own. As a consequence, we have sets of paronyms in which the original value of the alteration has

been lost, giving rise to situations that are potentially confusing for the student. It must be stressed that the list given here is only a small sample.

busta envelope	**bustarella** (R1–2) bribe		**bustina** small paper packet with one dose of medicine or other substances, e.g. **bustina di tè** = tea-bag
canna reed; cane, rod; barrel (gun); flue (chimney); pipe (organ); cross-bar (bicycle); (R1) joint (e.g. marijuana)	**cannone** (m) cannon	**cannuccia** straw (for drinks)	**cannella** (spout of a) tap, e.g. **bere alla cannella** = drink from the tap; cinnamon
casa house, home	**casino** (R1–2) brothel; (R1*–1) mess, confusion, racket		
forca hayfork, pitchfork; (usu) gallows	**forcina** hairpin	**forcone** (m) dung-fork, hayfork, pitchfork	**forchetta** fork (for eating)
mazzo bunch, bundle	**mazzetta** (R1–2) bundle of banknotes; (R1) bribe		
pane (m) bread	**panino** (usu) sandwich		
storia history; story	**storiella** joke NOTE: short story = **novella**		
vigna vineyard	**vignetta** illustration, cartoon		

2.4 Paronyms with different meanings

In the following list, the paronyms within each set are generally unrelated and their meanings quite different.

artéfice (m/f) artist, author, maker, creator	**artificio** artifice

atterrare (tr) to knock down; (intr) to land NOTE: to land on the moon = **allunare**; on the sea = **ammarare**	**atterrire** to frighten	
calare (tr) to lower; (intr AUX **essere**) to descend	**colare** to filter; to drip, to ooze (also intr AUX **essere**)	
cànone (m) canon (mus., also = norm); rent, fee, e.g. **il canone d'affitto** = the rent	**cannone** (m) cannon; (fig, R1) **è un cannone** = he/she is very good (at sth)	**canònico** (n) canon (religious); (adj) canonical
commendatore honorary title; person with such title	**commentatore** annotator; commentator	
consigliare to advise, to counsel	**conciliare** to reconcile; to be conducive to; to (agree to) pay a fine on the spot	
consiglio advice; council, board (of directors etc)	**concilio** council (religious), e.g. **concilio ecumenico** = ecumenical council	
fango mud	**fungo** mushroom, toadstool, fungus	
feroce ferocious, savage, fierce	**ferace** (R3) fertile (also fig)	

R1* vulgar or indecent
R1 informal, colloquial
R2 neutral, unmarked
R3 formal, written
Italian words and expressions are R2 unless otherwise indicated. See also p. 5.

The gender of nouns is given only where it is not predictable from the principles given in ch. **14**.

In some words, an accent is used to indicate the main stress but should not be used when writing. See p. 29.

The usual Italian pronunciation of foreign words is given in phonetic spelling in square brackets whenever appropriate.

folla crowd	**folle** (adj) mad (n m/f) mad person	
fondare to found	**fóndere** to smelt, to fuse, to melt	**fèndere** to split, to cleave, to cut through sth
greggio (adj) raw (n) crude oil	**gregge** (m) flock (of sheep), also fig NOTE: **greggi** (pl) is usu feminine	
inferire (R3) to infer; to inflict	**infierire** (**su/contro qu**) to act with ferocity against sb	
insolazione (R2–3) insolation, sunstroke	**isolamento** isolation; insulation	
marciare to march	**marcire** to rot	
messa Mass (religious)	**messe** (f) harvest	
negare to deny	**annegare** (tr/intr AUX **essere**) to drown	
parte (f) part, share, side	**parto** childbirth	
prodigio portent; prodigy, e.g. **ragazzo prodigio** = child prodigy, genius	**pròdigo** prodigal, e.g. **il figliol prodigo** = the prodigal son	
proposizione clause (gram.)	**preposizione** preposition	
rimediare (tr) to fix roughly; (R1) (to manage) to obtain sth; (intr) to put right (sth = **a qc**)	**rammendare** to mend, to darn	**rammentare** to remember; to remind (sb sth = **a qu qc**)
riporto number/amount carried over	**rapporto** report	

scala stairs, staircase, ladder; scale (in music, measurements, also fig); straight, run (cards)	**scaglia** scale (in animals); chip, flake	
scàndalo scandal, outrage	**scandaglio** sounding-line, sounding-lead	
schermare (R2–3) to screen, to shield	**schermire** (R3) (tr) to defend, to shield; (intr) to fence (sport)	**schernire** (R2–3) to scorn, to deride
teste (m/f) witness	**testo** text	**testa** head
tetto roof	**tetta** (R1*-1) tit	**tettoia** cover, roofed shelter
tono tone	**tuono** thunder	**tonno** tunny-fish, tuna

2.5 Verbs with similar stems

The following table is an indicative sample of a vast category of Italian verbs. The semantic differences generated by the use of different prefixes with common stems are at times subtle, at times surprisingly obvious, and are therefore potentially confusing for the student.

R1* vulgar or indecent
R1 informal, colloquial
R2 neutral, unmarked
R3 formal, written
Italian words and expressions are R2 unless otherwise indicated. See also p. 5.

The gender of nouns is given only where it is not predictable from the principles given in ch. **14**.

In some words, an accent is used to indicate the main stress but should not be used when writing. See p. 29.

The usual Italian pronunciation of foreign words is given in phonetic spelling in square brackets whenever appropriate.

abbassare to lower (gen)	**ribassare** to lower (prices, rent etc.), e.g. **ribassare i prezzi**		
affrontare to confront, to face, to tackle	**confrontare** to compare		
battere to beat (gen, in an orderly way; also = to win); to strike; **battere a macchina** = to type; to serve (tennis etc.); **battere un rigore/una punizione/un calcio d'angolo** = to take a penalty/a free kick/a corner kick (football); to flap (wings)	**sbattere** to beat (in a rough way: rugs, eggs); to throw sb/sth against sth (**contro qc**); **sbattere la porta** = to slam the door; to bump (sth) against/into sth, e.g. **ho sbattuto (la testa) contro il tavolo**; to flap (wings); **sbattersene** (R1*-1) = not to give a damn	**battersi** to hit oneself; to fight	**imbattersi (in qu/qc)** to run into sb, to come across sth
cacciare (tr) to hunt; to chase away, to throw out; to stuff (into sth); (intr) to go hunting; (refl.) to get to/into, e.g. **cacciarsi nei guai** = to get into trouble	**scacciare** to chase away, to throw out; to scatter		
cadere (intr AUX **essere**) to fall	**decadere** (intr AUX **essere**) to decline	**ricadere** (intr AUX **essere**) to fall again; to relapse, to backslide; (fig, of guilt, responsibility etc.) to fall, to rest	**scadere** (intr AUX **essere**) to expire; to fall due; to decline (in value)
cambiare (tr) to change (gen); (intr AUX **essere**) to change (gen); (intr AUX **avere**) (R1–2) to change gear; (refl) to get changed (clothes)	**ricambiare** (tr) (usu) to repay, to reciprocate (favours etc.); ALSO = to change again	**scambiare** to trade, to swap; to mistake sth/sb for sth/sb else (**qc/qu per qc/qu altro**)	

chiudere (tr) to close, to shut, to lock up; to turn off (tap); (intr) to close (schools, shops etc.); to close properly (doors, windows etc.)	**richiudere** to close again	**rinchiudere** to lock up (inside somewhere)	**schiudere** to open slightly and slowly, to part
cogliere to pick, to pluck; to grasp; to catch, e.g. **cogliere di sorpresa** = to catch by surprise; to hit, e.g. **cogliere nel segno** = to hit the target (also fig)	**accogliere** to receive, (sb); to accept (sth)	**raccogliere** to pick up (from the ground), to pluck (e.g. flowers, usu from the ground); to pick, to harvest (agricultural products); to gather	
colare (tr) to filter; to drip, to ooze (also intr AUX **essere**)	**scolare** (tr) to drain, e.g. **scolare la pasta** (intr AUX **essere**) to drain, to drip (R1, usu refl. to drink)		
conciliare to reconcile (= to harmonize); to be conducive to, e.g. **una musica che concilia il sonno** = a music conducive to sleep; to (agree to) pay a fine on the spot	**riconciliare** to reconcile (= to end a disagreement)		
conservare to save, to keep, to preserve	**preservare** to protect		
contare to count	**raccontare** to tell, to recount	**scontare** (**qc**) to discount; to deduct; to pay (the penalty for sth)	
correre (tr) to run (races, distances etc.), to race; (intr AUX **essere** or **avere**) to run (gen), to race	**discorrere** (intr) to talk, to converse (with sb = **con qu**)	**scorrere** (tr) to glance over (intr AUX **essere**) to flow; to glide; to pass (of time)	

ricorrere (intr AUX **essere** or **avere**) to have recourse, to resort (to sb/sth = **a qu/qc**); to occur (of anniversaries etc.); ALSO = to run again, to go back (also fig)	**rincorrere** (tr) to chase, to run after	
deferire (R2–3) to defer (= to refer)	**differire** (R2–3) (tr) to defer (= to postpone), to delay; (intr) to differ	
fondare to found	**sfondare** to break the bottom of sth, to wear (the bottom) out of sth; to crash through, to burst open, e.g. **sfondare la porta**	
gelare (tr/intr AUX **essere**) to freeze (natural phenomenon); (fig) to horrify	**congelare** (tr) to freeze (often artificially, e.g. food; also fig, of funds etc.)	**surgelare** (tr) to freeze, to deep-freeze (only food)
giudicare to judge	**aggiudicare** to award; to sell at auctions	**pregiudicare** to jeopardize; to damage; to prejudice
gustare to savour, to enjoy (usu of food, drinks, but also fig); to taste	**degustare** to sample, to taste (food, wine)	**disgustare** to disgust (also fig)
ispirare to inspire	**inspirare** (R2–3) to breathe in	
legare to tie (up), to fasten; to link	**rilegare** (usu) to bind (books); ALSO = to tie again	
mantenere to maintain, to keep; to provide livelihood	**sostenere** to support, to hold up (physically, morally); to bear (expenses, losses); (tr/intr) to maintain, to assert	
mollare to slacken, to let go; (R1) to give (slaps, kicks etc.), e.g. **mollare uno schiaffo**	**ammollare** to soak, to soften (by soaking); to slacken; (R1) to give (slaps, kicks etc.), e.g. **ammollare uno schiaffo**	
muovere to move (tr, not emotionally)	**commuovere** to touch, to move (emotionally)	

negare to deny (sb sth = **qc a qu**)	**rinnegare** to repudiate, to disown		
passare (tr) to pass (gen); to cross, to go through (also fig, e.g. **passare un guaio**); to overtake; to supply; to strain (food, drinks); (intr AUX **essere**) to pass (by)	**oltrepassare** to cross, to go beyond; to go past (esp stationary objects, people etc.); (fig) to exceed	**ripassare** (tr) to cross again, to pass again; to review (studying); (intr AUX **essere**) to pass (by) again	**sorpassare** to overtake (esp vehicles and other moving objects, people etc.); to grow taller/higher than sb/sth; (fig) to exceed
pesare (tr/intr AUX **avere**/**essere**) to weigh; (fig) to be a burden; (fig) to matter	**soppesare** (R2–3) (tr) to weigh up (esp fig = to value carefully in one's mind)		
porre to put (R2–3, less common than **mettere**), to set (down), e.g. **porre freno**/**dei limiti** = to set some limits, to curb	**comporre** to compose; to put together; to constitute, to make up, e.g. **due giocatori compongono la squadra** = two players make up the team	**scomporre** to disassemble, to break down; to upset	**ricomporre** to reassemble
portare to take, to bring, to carry; to wear (of clothes etc.)	**sopportare** to bear, to endure, to tolerate		
premere to press, to push (e.g. a button); (intr) to press (against sth/sb = **contro qc**/**qu**); (R2–3) to matter (**a qu**)	**spremere** to squeeze (usu fruit, but also fig of money etc.)	**esprimere** to express (opinions, thoughts, feelings etc.)	
provare to try; to test; to taste; to prove	**approvare** to approve (of sth = **qc**)	**riprovare** to try again; to taste again; (R2–3) to condemn	
rubare (**qc**) to steal (sth); to commit burglary, to be a thief	**derubare** (**qu**) to rob (sb)		

seguire (tr) to follow; (intr AUX **essere**) to follow, to come after (sth/sb = **a qc/qu**)	**conseguire** (tr) to achieve; (intr AUX **essere**) to ensue	**perseguire** to pursue; (R3) to prosecute (legally)	**proseguire** (tr/intr) to continue, to go on
vegliare (R2–3) to stay awake	**svegliare** (tr) to wake up (tr) NOTE to wake up (intr) = **svegliarsi**		
vendicare to avenge, to revenge	**rivendicare** to claim, to vindicate		
venire (intr AUX **essere**) to come	**svenire** (intr AUX **essere**) to faint	**rivenire** (intr AUX **essere**) to come again	**rinvenire** (tr) to find; (intr AUX **essere**) to regain consciousness

2.6 Gender paronyms

The gender difference dividing the following paronyms shows itself in the distinct endings of the nouns in each set. A short list in nouns distinguished *only* by gender (i.e. with identical endings) can be found in section 14.5.5.

2.6.1 Gender paronyms with similar meanings

Masculine	Feminine
animo seat of intellect, will and personality; courage	**anima** soul
banco long and narrow seat, pew; school desk; counter, bench (for working, testing etc.); bank (only in specific cases, e.g. **Banco di Santo Spirito**); NOTE: **banco di sabbia** = sand bank	**banca** bank (financial institution in general), e.g. **vado in banca** = I'm going to the bank; **la Banca d'Italia**

R1* vulgar or indecent
R1 informal, colloquial
R2 neutral, unmarked
R3 formal, written
Italian words and expressions are R2 unless otherwise indicated. See also p. 5.

The gender of nouns is given only where it is not predictable from the principles given in ch. **14**.

In some words, an accent is used to indicate the main stress but should not be used when writing. See p. 29.

The usual Italian pronunciation of foreign words is given in phonetic spelling in square brackets whenever appropriate.

Masculine	Feminine
bilancio balance sheet, budget	**bilancia** weighing scales; **la Bilancia** = Libra
botto shot, crack, loud noise; **botti** (pl R1–2) = fireworks; **di botto** = suddenly	**botta** blow (also fig = damage); crash (noise); **dare un sacco di botte a qu** (R1–2) = to give sb a beating up
bozzo bump, swelling	**bozza** bump, swelling; draft, proof
brìciolo (only s, fig) bit, scrap, e.g. **non ha un briciolo di cervello** (R1) = he/she doesn't have any brains	**brìciola** crumb, left-over bit
buco hole (gen), e.g. **un cappotto pieno di buchi** = a coat full of holes; **il buco della serratura** = the keyhole	**buca** hole (usu in the ground), e.g. **un strada piena di buche** = a road full of holes NOTE, however: **buca delle lettere** = letter/mail box (hole); **buca del suggeritore** = prompter's box; **buca del biliardo** = pool table pocket
calcolatore calculator, computer	**calcolatrice** calculator
canonico canon (person)	**canonica** parsonage
caramello caramel	**caramella** sweet (UK), lolly (Aus), candy (US)
carico loading; load	**carica** charge (electrical; military); office, position, rank
cassetto drawer	**cassetta** (small) case; cassette (video, audio)

Masculine	Feminine
cerchio circle	**cerchia** (R3) large, circular shaped structure, e.g. **cerchia di mura** = circle of walls, **cerchia di montagne** = ring of mountains; set of people bound by some kind of relationship, e.g. **una ristretta cerchia di amici** = a select group of friends
cero votive candle; large candle for religious purposes, e.g. **il cero pasquale** = the Paschal Candle	**cera** wax; polish (for shoes, floors, wooden furniture)
corso course; main street	**corsa** race, run, rush
coscio leg of larger butchered animals	**coscia** thigh; leg of butchered animals (gen)
covo den, lair; hiding place (with negative connotations)	**cova** (R3) brooding, brooding place, brooding time
critico critic	**critica** criticism, critique, review
fallo foul (sport); (R2–3) mistake, fault; (R3) phallus	**falla** leak, hole (in ships, boats etc.), also fig
foglio sheet, leaf of paper	**foglia** leaf
fosso ditch; moat	**fossa** hole in the ground; grave
frutto piece of fruit; (fig) fruit, product, earning, profit	**frutta** fruit (collective, in general and as part of a meal), e.g. **frutta di stagione** = fruit in season, **essere alla frutta** = to be at the end of the meal (ALSO [fig] = to be well past one's prime)
gambo stem, stalk (flowers, mushrooms)	**gamba** leg (humans, clothes, furniture)

Masculine	Feminine
gelato ice-cream	**gelata** frost (a single occurrence of frost, for instance during one night)
goccio drop (fig), a small amount of liquid, e.g. **un goccio di vino** = a very small amount of wine to drink	**goccia** drop (lit)
grano wheat, grain (also measurement)	**grana** (R1–2) trouble; (R1) dough (money); (R3) grain (in photographs) NOTE: **il grana** (**padano**) = a hard cheese similar to Parmesan
legno wood (material)	**legna** firewood
modo way, manner, method; mood (gram.)	**moda** fashion, e.g. **alla moda** = in fashion, fashionable
moro Moor; dark-skinned/haired man	**mora** dark-skinned/haired woman, brunette; mulberry, blackberry; (R2–3) delay or default (in paying rent, fees etc.), and also the related penalty fee
morso bite; morsel; bit (horse)	**morsa** vice (tool); (fig) (vice-like) grip
palmo (hand) span	**palma** palm of the hand; palm tree
pendolo pendulum	**pendola** pendulum clock, grandfather clock
peso weight	**pesa** weighing; weigh-house; weigh-bridge
pezzo piece, bit, fragment	**pezza** piece of fabric, cloth, rag; patch
politico politician	**politica** politics, policy

Masculine	Feminine
pozzo well	**pozza** puddle
regolo (**calcolatore**) slide ruler	**regola** rule
sinistro (R2–3) accident; left punch/shot (sport)	**sinistra** left hand
stecco twig, stick	**stecca** picket (on a gate); whalebone (corset); rib (umbrella); cue (billiard); slat (shutters, fan); splint (for fractured limbs); carton of cigarettes; false note (esp singing, as in **prendere una stecca**)
suolo soil; ground	**suola** sole (of shoes)
tavolato plank floor; paneling	**tavolata** group of people sitting at the table for lunch/dinner together, e.g. **una tavolata di amici**
terno set of three winning numbers in the game of lotto, e.g. **vincere un terno al lotto** = to hit the jackpot	**terna** (R2–3) set of three, trio (not mus.)
terzino fullback (football)	**terzina** (R2–3) tercet (poetry); triplet (music)

2.6.2 Gender paronyms with different meanings

Masculine	Feminine
arco bow; arch; arc	**arca** ark; (R2–3) sarcophagus
armo (R3) crew (sailing, rowing)	**arma** weapon
baleno lightning	**balena** whale
ballo dance, ball	**balla** bale; (R1) tall story

Masculine	Feminine
bando (R2–3) announcement, notice; ban	**banda** band (musical, radio); gang; stripe
bombo (R3) kind of bumble-bee	**bomba** bomb
branco group of animals (herd, flock pack); (fig) bunch/pack of persons (derogatory, e.g. **branco di idioti** = bunch of idiots)	**branca** claw, clutches; branch (also fig of sciences, disciplines etc., e.g. **una branca della medicina** = a branch of medicine)
busto bust; corset; bodice	**busta** envelope
capriolo roe deer, roebuck	**capriola** (usu) somersault; (less frequent) female roe deer
cartello sign; placard; cartel (econ.)	**cartella** briefcase, schoolbag; file, folder; page
caso fate, chance; case, instance; case (gram.); **fare caso a qc/qu** = to notice sth/sb	**casa** home, house
collo neck	**colla** glue
colpo blow, stroke, shot, e.g. **bel colpo!** = good shot!	**colpa** guilt; fault, e.g. **è colpa tua** = it's your fault
costo cost	**costa** coast
fico fig, fig tree	**fica** (R1*) cunt
filo thread	**fila** row, line, queue, e.g. **fare la fila** = to queue (up), to line (up) (US)
fisico physicist; physique, body	**fisica** physics
groppo (R2–3) tangle; **avere un groppo in gola** = to have a lump in one's throat	**groppa** back, rump; **in groppa** (**a qu**) = on sb's shoulders, on sb's back

Masculine	Feminine
lancio launch, launching (of rockets, missiles etc.; of products on the market); throw, throwing (gen); jump, drop (with a parachute); introduction (e.g. an actor)	**lancia** launch (boat); lance, spear
limo (R3) mud, slime, silt	**lima** file (tool)
lotto lotto, State lottery	**lotta** fight, struggle; wrestling
manico handle	**manica** sleeve; **la Manica** = the English Channel
mazzo bundle, bunch; pack (cards)	**mazza** cudgel; mace; club (golf); bat (baseball, cricket); stick (hockey)
mento chin	**menta** mint (herb)
mostro monster; (R1) phenomenon, e.g. **è un mostro!** = he/she is a phenomenon (= he/she is incredibly good at something)	**mostra** exhibition, show
moto motion; movement; physical exercise, e.g. **fare un po' di moto** = to take some exercise; (R2–3) uprising NOTE: **moto** (f) is short for **motocicletta** = motorcycle	**mota** (R3) mud
palo post, pole; goal-post (sport)	**pala** shovel; blade (propeller, oar)
panno cloth	**panna** cream
partito (usu) party (politics)	**partita** game, match (sport, cards); lot, shipment, consignment
pianto weeping, crying	**pianta** plant (as in tree etc.)

Masculine	Feminine
picco peak, pinnacle	**picca** pike; **picche** (only pl) = spades (cards)
polpo octopus	**polpa** pulp
porto port, harbour	**porta** door
posto place, spot; seat; position, job; space, room, e.g. **non c'è posto** = there is no room	**posta** post, mail
punto point (gen); dot; full stop, period; stitch	**punta** point, tip, sharp end; touch, trace; (fig) peak, maximum level; **ora di punta** = rush hour
pupillo (R2–3) favourite; (R3) ward, pupil	**pupilla** pupil (eye) (ALSO = feminine of **pupillo**)
raspo grape-stalk	**raspa** rasp
razzo ['raddzo] rocket	**razza** ['raddza] (sting-)ray NOTE: **razza** ['rattsa] = race, breed; sort, kind
romanzo (n) novel; (adj) Romance	**romanza** romanza
scalo port, airport; stop-over, e.g. **volo senza scalo** = non-stop flight	**scala** stairs, staircase, ladder; scale (mus. and fig); straight, run (cards)
tasso rate, e.g. **tasso d'interesse** = interest rate; badger	**tassa** tax, fee
testo text	**testa** head
tetto roof	**tetta** (R1*-1) tit
tormento torment	**tormenta** blizzard, snowstorm

Masculine	Feminine
tòrto wrong; **avere torto** = to be (in the) wrong	**tórta** cake
velo veil (also fig); thin layer (of sugar, dust etc.)	**vela** sail

2.7 Deceptive minimal pairs

For the English-speaking person the differences separating the paronyms in this section can be difficult to hear and/or pronounce. They are:

(1) **è** [ɛ] *vs* **é** [e]
(2) **ò** [ɔ] *vs* **ó** [o]
(3) single *vs* double consonant
(4) position of the stress

With the obvious exception of (3), in most cases these differences do not show in the written language. Furthermore, all of them, including (3), often disappear, according to different patterns, in regional varieties of spoken Italian (cf. section 1.6). Nevertheless, the advanced student of Italian should be aware of their existence in the standard variety, since to overlook them could lead to confusion, as shown by the tables below.

- While the pronunciation of some words has been given in square brackets, it should be recalled that the conventional rules on written stresses have been applied to all Italian words in bold.
- Minimal pairs that are less likely, in context, to lead to misunderstanding have been excluded: hence the absence of sets of paronyms containing a verb and a word from a different category (noun etc.), e.g. **mente** ['mɛnte], from **mentire**, *to lie*, and **mente** ['mente] (f), *mind*; **è** [ɛ], from **essere** *he/she/it is*, and **e** [e], conjunction, *and*; **ho** [ɔ], from **avere**, *I have*, and **o** [o], conjunction, *or*. An exception has been made for the single/double consonant group, since native speakers are on the whole more sensitive to this type of opposition, and less 'forgiving' towards mispronounced words of this kind.

R1* vulgar or indecent
R1 informal, colloquial
R2 neutral, unmarked
R3 formal, written
Italian words and expressions are R2 unless otherwise indicated. See also p. 5.

The gender of nouns is given only where it is not predictable from the principles given in ch. **14**.

In some words, an accent is used to indicate the main stress but should not be used when writing. See p. 29.

The usual Italian pronunciation of foreign words is given in phonetic spelling in square brackets whenever appropriate.

Table 2.7.1 *è vs é*

è [ɛ] **pesca** ['pɛska] peach	**é** [e] **pesca** ['peska] fishing
venti ['vɛnti] winds (pl of **vento**)	**venti** ['venti] twenty
re [rɛ] D (musical note)	**re** [re] king
tè (**the**) [tɛ] tea	**te** [te] you

Table 2.7.2 *ò vs ó*

ò [ɔ] **botte** ['bɔtte] blows (pl of **botta**)	**ó** [o] **botte** ['botte] (f) cask, barrel
colto ['kɔlto] picked-up; plucked; caught (p.p. of **cogliere**)	**colto** ['kolto] well educated, learned
corso ['kɔrso] Corsican	**corso** ['korso] course; main street
dotto ['dɔtto] learned	**dotto** ['dotto] (R3) duct
foro ['fɔro] forum	**foro** ['foro] hole
torta ['tɔrta] twisted (f p.p. of **torcere**)	**torta** ['torta] cake

- In view of the point made above, the very small number of Italian words differing only in the pronunciation of **s** [s/z] or **z** [ʦ/dz] has not been included.

  For some consonants, minimal pairs of this kind do not exist; for others they are very few and of such a nature that they cannot be a source of confusion. This explains why they are not represented in the following list. Minimal pairs do not exist for the letters z and for the groups gl, gn, sc.

  With regard to the spoken language, it should be pointed out that by taking into account contextual elements – such as, for instance, the definite article – new sets of potentially misleading "pairs" can be generated, e.g. **l'arena** (the arena) – **la renna** (the reindeer).

  The phenomenon exemplified in table 2.7.4 can be observed in a number of verbal forms, as a regular feature of the first conjugation:

  1 s present indicative *vs* 3 s *passato remoto* (e.g. **amo**, *I love*, *vs* **amò**, *he/she/it loved*);

and also in forms from different verbs, e.g.:

capito ['kapito], **capitò** [kapi'tɔ], both from **capitare**, *to happen*, and **capito** [ka'pito] from **capire**, *to understand*.

The semantic pattern seen below in the two forms of **bisbiglio** and **gorgheggio** applies also to other less common words.

Table 2.7.3 *Single vs double consonant*

Single consonant	Double consonant
ano anus	**anno** year
avito (R3) ancestral	**avvito** I screw (in/down) (from **avvitare**)
baco caterpillar, grub	**Bacco** Bacchus
cade he/she/it falls (from **cadere**)	**cadde** he/she/it fell (from **cadere**)
camino chimney	**cammino** journey, walk; path; way
caro dear	**carro** cart, waggon, chariot
casa house, home	**cassa** crate
colèrico related to cholera, choleric	**collèrico** hot-tempered, angry
coma (m) coma	**comma** (m R2–3) sub-section (leg.)
copia copy; (R3) abundance	**coppia** couple
dici you say (2 s pres. indic **dire**)	**dicci** tell us (2 s imperative **dire**)
loto lotus	**lotto** lotto, State lottery
luci lights (pl of **luce** [f])	**lucci** pikes (fish) (pl of **luccio**)
mora dark-skinned/haired woman, brunette; mulberry, blackberry; (R2–3) delay or default (in paying rent, fees etc.), and also the related penalty fee	**morra** morra (game)

Table 2.7.3 (*cont.*)

Single consonant	Double consonant
nono/-a ninth	**nonno/-a** grandfather/grandmother
note notes (pl of **nota**)	**notte** (f) night
pala shovel	**palla** ball
papa (m) Pope	**pappa** mush, child's food
tufo tufa (rock)	**tuffo** dive; dip

Table 2.7.4 *Position of tonic stress*

ambito ['ambito] circumscribed space; (fig) scope, circle	**ambito** (R2–3) [am'bito] (p.p. of **ambire**) coveted
balia ['balia] wet nurse	**balia** (R3) [ba'lia] power, usu in the expression **in balia di qu/qc** (R2) = in the hands of sb, at the mercy of sth
bisbiglio [bi'zbiʎʎo] whisper	**bisbiglio** [bizbiʎ'ʎio] frequent, continuous whispering
calamita [kala'mita] magnet (also fig)	**calamità** [kalami'ta] calamity, disaster
casino [ka'sino] (R1–2) brothel; (R1*-1) mess, confusion, racket	**casinò** [kasi'nɔ] casino
compito ['kompito] task, homework	**compito** (R2–3) [kom'pito] usu well-mannered, polite, but also completed (from **compire**)
cupido (R3) ['kupido] covetous, greedy; lustful	**Cupido**, **cupido** [ku'pido] Cupid; any image of Cupid, putto
formica ['fɔrmika] Formica	**formica** [for'mika] ant
gorgheggio [gor'gedd͡ʒo] trill, trilling (in singing); warble	**gorgheggio** [gorged'd͡ʒio] continuous trill/warble
maneggio [ma'nedd͡ʒo] handling; riding ground	**maneggio** [maned'd͡ʒio] bustling, fussing about

Table 2.7.4 (*cont.*)

meta ['mɛta] goal, destination	**metà** [me'ta] half
nocciolo ['nɔttʃolo] stone, kernel, pip	**nocciolo** [not'tʃɔlo] hazel-nut tree
papa (m) ['papa] Pope	**papà** (m) [pa'pa] daddy
para (f) ['para] (R.2–3) Para (type of rubber, commonly used for shoe soles)	**parà** (m) [pa'ra] paratrooper
pattino ['pattino] (roller-)skate, (ice-)skater	**pattino** [pat'tino] small craft with two hulls, propelled by oars, used mostly for pleasure
principi ['printʃipi] princes (from **principe**)	**principi** [prin'tʃipi] principles (from **principio**)
retina ['rɛtina] retina	**retina** [re'tina] small net, hairnet
scia ['ʃia] wake, trail (of boats etc., also fig)	**scià** [ʃa] Shah
Sofia ['sɔfja] Sofia, Sofiya (capital of Bulgaria)	**Sofia** [so'fia] Sophia, Sophie (name of person)

2.8 Other types of misleading similarities

The above misleading similarities between Italian and English are of a superficial kind. In some cases, however, the danger lurks at a deeper level, hidden in the apparently similar semantic structure of words or expressions in the two languages. The following examples should suffice to keep the student on the alert.

English	Italian	Italian	English
at large	**in libertà**; (= at length) **per esteso**, **diffusamente**	**al largo** **alla larga**	offshore (fig); with verbs like **stare** or **tenersi** = (to keep) away from sth/sb, e.g. **stare alla larga da qu/qc** = to stay clear of sb/sth; **alla larga!** (R.1) = keep (it) away!

English	Italian	Italian	English
at length	**esaurientemente**, **per esteso**; (= finally) **alla fine**	**a lungo** **alla lunga**	for a long time in the long run
big head	to have a big head = **essere presuntuoso**	**testone**	blockhead; stubborn
downhill	(lit) (**giù**) **a valle**, **in discesa** BUT (fig) to go downhill = **andare in declino/sempre peggio**, e.g. since then it's been downhill, for him = **da allora le cose sono andate sempre peggio, per lui**	**in discesa**	(lit) downhill BUT (fig) **da allora è stato tutto** (or **la strada è stata tutta**) **in discesa, per lui** (R1–2) = since then everything has been easy, for him
horny	(= horned) **cornuto**; (= made of horn) **di corno**; (skin) **incallito**; (= sexually excited) **assatanato** (R1), **arrapato** (R1), **eccitato sessualmente**, **lascivo** (R3)	**cornuto**	(R1*-1, usu) cuckold, betrayed; (lit R3) horned NOTE: to avoid misunderstanding, the expression **con le corna** is used for the literal meaning
point-blank	(adj/adv) (lit, of shooting) **a bruciapelo**; (fig) **senza mezzi termini**	**di punto** **in bianco**	suddenly, unexpectedly, out of the blue

3 Fields of meaning – "Synonyms"

Real synonyms – in the sense of unconditionally interchangeable words with the same meaning – are very rare in Italian as in other languages. Consequently, when looking for the Italian counterpart of an English term in a dictionary, students are usually confronted with a list of words or expressions that are not perfectly equivalent. This section highlights these differences of meaning or use in a number of common "semantic fields," which have been listed according to their English heading.

In some cases, the cells containing the most common Italian words for a particular heading have been highlighted.

ACCIDENT

	incidente (m)			
		disgrazia		
contrattempo **intoppo** impediment **imprevisto** unforeseen difficulty	**infortunio** unfortunate event; sport injury	**sinistro** (R3 esp insurance) harmful event **scontro** collision	**sventura** **sciagura**	**disastro** **calamità** **catàstrofe** (f) often due to natural causes, usu many people affected

minor ← → *serious*

R1* vulgar or indecent
R1 informal, colloquial
R2 neutral, unmarked
R3 formal, written
Italian words and expressions are R2 unless otherwise indicated. See also p. 5.

The gender of nouns is given only where it is not predictable from the principles given in ch. **14**.

In some words, an accent is used to indicate the main stress but should not be used when writing. See p. 29.

The usual Italian pronunciation of foreign words is given in phonetic spelling in square brackets whenever appropriate.

TO AGREE

with somebody	
to be in agreement (with sb on sth)	**essere d’accordo** (**con qu su qc**) **convenire** (**con qu su qc**) (R2-3)
to come to an agreement (with sb on sth)	**mettersi d’accordo** (**con qu su qc**) **accordarsi** (**con qu su qc**)
to get along (with sb)	**andare d’accordo** (**con qu**)
to suit (sb) (gen) to be good for sb’s health	**confarsi** (**a qu**) (R3); **addirsi** (**a qu**) (R3) **far bene** (**a qu**); **giovare** (**a qu**) (R2-3)
to something	
to consent (to sth)	**acconsentire** (**a qc**)
of things	
to correspond (to sth) to tally (with sth) to agree (with sth) (gram.)	**corrispondere** (**a qc**) **concordare** (**con qc**) **concordare** (**con qc**) BUT agreement (gram.) = **accordo**
to agree + infinitive	
to agree to do sth (two or more people) to accept to do sth to consent to do sth	**concordare di fare qc** **accettare di fare qc** **acconsentire di/a fare qc**
to agree + clause	
to agree that … (two or more people) to accept that … to admit that … to consent that …	**concordare che …** **accettare che …** **ammettere che …** **acconsentire che …**

TO ANNOY

<table>
<tr><th>R1*</th><th>R1</th><th>R2</th><th>R3</th></tr>
<tr><td rowspan="2"></td><td colspan="3">dar fastidio (a qu)</td></tr>
<tr><td colspan="2">dare noia (a qu)
to annoy
seccare
to bother
disturbare
to disturb</td><td>importunare,
incomodare,
recare
disturbo/fastidio
(a qu)
to inconvenience</td></tr>
<tr><td colspan="2">rompere (le scatole) (a qu)
to annoy intensely</td><td colspan="2">infastidire
to pester
molestare
to harass</td></tr>
<tr><td rowspan="2">rompere le palle/i coglioni/il cazzo
(a qu)
to annoy profoundly, to give (sb) the shits, to piss sb off</td><td rowspan="2">scocciare
to bother, to pester</td><td>irritare,
innervorsire
to get on sb’s nerves</td><td></td></tr>
<tr><td colspan="2">affliggere
to afflict (also fig), to trouble
tormentare
to torture (esp fig)</td></tr>
</table>

TO GET ANGRY

<table>
<tr><th>R1*</th><th>R1</th><th>R2</th><th>R3</th></tr>
<tr><td rowspan="2"></td><td colspan="3">arrabbiarsi</td></tr>
<tr><td colspan="3">perdere la pazienza
to lose one’s patience</td></tr>
<tr><td colspan="2" rowspan="2">incavolarsi,
incacchiarsi</td><td colspan="2">perdere le staffe
to lose one’s temper</td></tr>
<tr><td>infuriarsi,
imbestialirsi,
andare su tutte le furie
to get furious</td><td>adirarsi</td></tr>
<tr><td>incazzarsi</td><td colspan="2">andare in bestia
to get furious</td><td>indignarsi
to become indignant</td></tr>
</table>

APPEARANCE (*see also* FACE)

external appearance	**apparenza** usu of things	**aspetto**
bearing	**portamento** (R2-3)	
look	**aria** usu of persons: air, demeanour	**look** [luk] (m R1-2) in terms of fashion
act of appearing	**comparsa**	**apparizione** (R2-3) supernatural
appearance in court	**comparizione** (R3)	
publication	**pubblicazione**	**uscita**

TO ASK

question	*demand or request*	
chiedere qc a qu to ask sb sth **domandare qc a qu** to ask sb sth **fare/porre** (R3) **una domanda** (**a qu**) to ask (sb) a question **interrogare** to question, to interrogate; to test orally at school	to ask	**chiedere qc a qu** (sb for sth) **di** + inf (to do sth) **a qc di** + inf (sb to do sth) **che** + subj (that ...)
	to ask officially (as in writing), to apply (for sth)	**fare richiesta/domanda** (R2-3) **a qu/presso qu** (R3) (to sb) **di/per qc** (for sth)
	to request	**richiedere** (as **chiedere**)
	to request urgently	**sollecitare** (R3) **qc da parte di qu** (sth by sb) **qu a** + inf (to urge sb to do sth)
	to claim	**rivendicare** (R2-3), **reclamare** (R2-3)
	to demand	**esigere**, **pretendere** **qc da qu** (sth from sb) **di** + inf (to do sth) **che** + subj (that …)
	to beg sb to do sth	**pregare qu di** + inf **supplicare**, **scongiurare**, **implorare** (R2-3) (constructed as **pregare**, but stronger in meaning)

BACK (n)

of persons	**schiena**, **dorso** (R2-3) **spalle** (f pl) (lit 'shoulders') esp in fig expressions, e.g. **alle/dietro le spalle di qu** = behind sb's back
of animals	**schiena**
of pack animals	**groppa** (on sb's back = **in groppa a qu**)
of hands	**dorso** BUT backhand (sport) = **rovescio**
of coins, fabric etc.	**rovescio**
of pages etc	**retro** (only s, R3)
of clothes	**dietro** (only s), **didietro** (usu s); BUT back to front/inside out = **alla rovescia**
of houses, shops etc	**retro** (only s, R2-3), **dietro** (only s), **didietro** (usu s), **parte** (f) **posteriore**
of chairs etc	**schienale** (m), **spalliera**
of interiors	**fondo**
in sports	**difensore**

BALL

<table>
<tr><td>general</td><td colspan="3">palla
ball</td><td colspan="2">sfera (R2-3)
sphere</td></tr>
<tr><td rowspan="3">specific</td><td rowspan="2">sport and games</td><td>pallone (m)
football, basketball etc
ALSO pallone (aerostatico) = air balloon</td><td>palloncino
balloon</td><td colspan="2">pallina
small ball,
e.g. pallina da ping pong</td></tr>
<tr><td colspan="2">bilia/biglia
billiard ball, marble</td><td colspan="2">boccia
bowl
boccino, pallino
jack</td></tr>
<tr><td>body parts</td><td colspan="2">bulbo/globo oculare (R3)
eye-ball</td><td colspan="2">coglione (m R1*)
palla (R1*-1)
testìcolo (R2-3)
testicle</td></tr>
<tr><td rowspan="2">other</td><td colspan="2">globo (R2-3)
globe
il globo terrestre (R2-3)/ terracqueo (R3)
the globe</td><td colspan="2">palla di fucile/pistola, pallòttola, proièttile (m)
bullet
palla (di cannone)
cannon ball</td></tr>
<tr><td colspan="2">cuscinetto (a sfera) (R3)
ball-bearing</td><td colspan="2">gomìtolo
ball of wool</td></tr>
</table>

BEAUTIFUL

general			
R1*	R1	R2	R3
	bello		
	carino nice, cute, pretty		
figo/fico		**grazioso** pretty, cute	
			leggiadro fair, graceful
particular meanings			
pleasant	R1	R2	R3
	piacevole		
		gradevole	
			ameno usu of places
very beautiful	**bellissimo**		
	magnifico magnificent		
	meraviglioso wonderful		
			mirabile wondrous
	stupendo stupendous		
		splendido splendid	
		incantevole delightful	
		delizioso delightful, very pretty ALSO delicious	
attractive persons/things	**attraente**		
	affascinante charming, fascinating		
		seducente seductive	
			ammaliante bewitching
only persons		**avvenente** attractive **formoso** shapely **piacente** likeable	
only things		**allettante** tempting	

BEHIND, BACKSIDE

	R1*	R1	R2	R3
bottom	**culo** arse, ass	**sedere**		
		didietro (usu s)		
			fondo schiena, posteriore	
				deretano
buttocks	**chiappe** (f pl)			
		nàtiche (f pl)		**glùtei** (m pl)

BIG

big, great (dimensions; importance, excellence, cf. **18.4**)	**grande**
big, large (mass or volume; importance)	**grosso**

BOAT

barca boat		**nave** (f) ship	
barca a vela/barca a motore sailing boat/motorboat		**nave da guerra/nave passeggeri** warship/liner	
		bastimento (old fashioned) ship, cargo-ship	
		vascello (R2-3) vessel, (war)ship (usu old type, with sails)	
		veliero sailing ship	
		legno (R3) ship (usu old type, wooden, with sails, oars)	
battello boat **battello pneumatico** (R2-3)/**battello a vapore** inflatable boat/steamboat			
imbarcazione (R2-3) craft			**transatlantico** (transatlantic) liner
	traghetto ferry		
canotto (R1-2) inflatable boat	**motoscafo** motorboat	**vaporetto** motor boat for public transport (esp in Venice)	
canoa canoe	**fuoribordo** outboard motorboat		
lancia (R2-3) launch			
scialuppa di salvataggio lifeboat			

small ← → *large*

BOTTLE

general	**bottiglia**	
	bottiglietta small bottle	**bottiglione** (m) large bottle
specific	**fiasco** glass container, usu for wine, with a narrow neck and the round bottom externally covered with straw or other fibres that allow it to stand	**fiasca/fiaschetta** flask, usu glass or leather, flat in shape, once used also for gunpowder
	borraccia water-bottle, canteen	**biberon** (m) [bibe'rɔn] baby bottle
	boccetta small bottle, usu glass, for perfume etc	**ampolla** (R3) cruet (esp for oil and vinegar); ampulla
	flacone (m R2-3) small bottle, usu for medicine, perfume or cosmetic	

BOY, GIRL

There is a wealth of regional or local words meaning “child,” “boy,” “girl.” They are very often used at the lower registers.

<table>
<tr><td colspan="4">figlio/-a
son/daughter</td></tr>
<tr><td colspan="2">bambino/-a
baby, child</td><td colspan="2">ragazzo/-a
boy/girl</td></tr>
<tr><td>neonato/-a
newborn baby</td><td rowspan="2">pupo/-a (R1-2 Roman)
bimbo/-a (R2-3)
baby, child</td><td rowspan="2">adolescente
(m/f R2-3)
adolescent</td><td rowspan="2">signorina
young lady</td></tr>
<tr><td>lattante (m/f)
(suckling) baby</td></tr>
<tr><td>poppante (m/f)
(suckling) baby; (R1) whippersnapper</td><td rowspan="3">marmocchio (R1-2)
fanciullo/-a (R3)
pàrgolo/-a (R3)
fantolino/-a (R3)
frugoletto/-a (R3)
child</td><td>teen-ager (m/f)
[ti'nedʒer]
teenager</td><td>giovanotto
young man</td></tr>
<tr><td>piccino/-a (R1-2)
piccolo/-a
baby, small child</td><td rowspan="3">garzone (m)
shop boy;
(R3) boy</td><td rowspan="3">giovane (m/f)
young man/woman</td></tr>
<tr><td>bebè (m)
baby</td><td>creatura
child, creature</td></tr>
<tr><td>infante (m/f R3)
infant, baby</td><td>ragazzino/-a
young boy/girl</td></tr>
<tr><td>moccioso/-a (R1-2)
(snotty) child (insulting)</td><td>monello
street urchin</td><td>ragazzaccio/-a
bad boy/girl</td><td></td></tr>
</table>

younger ← → *older*

TO BREAK (tr) (*see also* TO DAMAGE; TO DESTROY)

• Those verbs whose reflexive form provides the corresponding intransitive meaning are followed by (**-si**) (*see also* section 24.5).

<table>
<tr><td></td><td>R1</td><td>R2</td><td>R3</td></tr>
<tr><td>general</td><td colspan="3">rompere (-si)</td></tr>
<tr><td rowspan="9">specific</td><td colspan="3">spezzare (-si)
to break (up), e.g. spezzare il pane = to break the bread</td></tr>
<tr><td colspan="3">spaccare (-si)
to crack open, to split, to cleave</td></tr>
<tr><td colspan="3">fare a pezzi
to break/cut/pull/tear to pieces</td></tr>
<tr><td colspan="3">spezzettare
to break/cut/chop into pieces</td></tr>
<tr><td></td><td colspan="2">sminuzzare
to break/cut/chop into small pieces</td></tr>
<tr><td colspan="2">sfasciare (-si)
to wreck, to shatter</td><td>schiantare (-si)
to smash (violently)</td></tr>
<tr><td>scassare (-si)
to break, to smash, usu of mechanical contraptions (car, bicycle, clock etc.)</td><td colspan="2">incrinare (-si)
to crack, to produce a crack in sth</td></tr>
<tr><td colspan="2">fracassare (-si)
to smash, to shatter</td><td>infrangere (-si)
to shatter (esp of glass), to break (fig, a promise, a rule etc.)</td></tr>
<tr><td></td><td colspan="2">frantumare (-si)/mandare in frantumi
to smash (to pieces), to shatter</td></tr>
</table>

TO CLIMB

	*transitive (AUX **avere**)*	*intransitive (AUX **essere**)*
salire	limited to very few DO, eg **salire le scale** = to climb/to go up the stairs **salire i gradini** = to climb the steps	absolute or followed by a destination = to go/come/get up, to rise (also of prices, temperature etc.) **salire su qc** = to climb (on) sth
arrampicarsi		**arrampicarsi** (**su qc**) = to climb (sth), eg a mountain, a tree etc
montare (R2-3)	same as **salire**, with the addition of animals (e.g. horses) as possible DO (= to ride, to mount)	**montare** (usu followed by a destination) = to get up, to climb on sth, esp animals (= to mount, to ride) **montare su qc** = to climb (on) sth
scalare (R2-3)	(usu mountains) = to ascend ALSO (R3) = to climb with ladders, to scale (walls etc.)	
ascendere (R3)	(rare, usu mountains) = to ascend	only in expressions like **ascendere al/in cielo** = to ascend into heaven **ascendere al trono** = to ascend the throne

COMPETITION

competizione competition (usu not abstr.), contest (gen, often sport)	**concorrenza** economic competition ALSO: **la concorrenza** = the competition, i.e. the competitors	**rivalità** competition (abstract), rivalry
concorso competition (usu test or exam) for a job ALSO **concorso ippico** = horse jumping contest **concorso di bellezza** = beauty contest **concorso a premi** = advertising competition (with prizes)	**gara** contest (usu sports), race (of all kinds) ALSO **gara d'appalto** = tender for contract **fare a gara** = to vie with each other	
partita match (most ball games, eg football, tennis etc) game (cards and most board games)	**incontro** match (most ball games; boxing, fencing)	

CRIME

crimine (m) serious crime (gen)	**delitto** serious crime, often murder; also fig = real pity	**reato** (R2-3 leg) crime, offence
misfatto (R3) crime, misdeed (gen)	**colpa** fault (both abstract and concrete); ALSO = guilt; blame **dare la colpa a qu di qc** = to blame sb for sth	**peccato** sin

infrazione (R3 leg) infraction, breach	**contravvenzione** (R3 leg) infringement, offence (R1-2) fine
trasgressione (R3 leg) transgression	**violazione** (R2-3 leg) violation, infringement
inosservanza (R3 leg) failure to comply with given laws/rules	**fallo** foul, fault (sport) ALSO **essere in fallo** (R3) = to be at fault **cadere in fallo** (R3) = to err **cogliere in fallo qu** (R2-3) = to catch sb out

TO CUT

to cut (gen)	**tagliare**
to cut down (trees) *(figurative)*	**abbattere** to cut down (of trees) **ridurre** to reduce, to cut down (fig, esp econ.)
to cut into	**incidere** to cut into, to carve, to engrave; ALSO to record (e.g. **incidere un disco**) **intagliare** to carve, to engrave
to cut off (gen)	**mozzare** (R2-3) to chop off (with one sharp blow), also of body parts as a punishment, e.g. **mozzare il capo**; ALSO (fig): **da mozzare il fiato** (used as adj) = breathtaking **troncare** (R2-3) to chop off, to snap off, to truncate **recidere** (R3) to cut off
(body parts)	**amputare** (R2-3) to amputate, to cut off body parts (med.) **mutilare** (R2-3) to mutilate, to cut sb's limbs/body parts, violently or by accident
(tips) *(branches)*	**spuntare** to cut the tip off, to trim, to clip (esp of hair, plants) **potare** to prune
to cut short	**accorciare** to shorten (gen) **abbreviare** (R2-3) to shorten (with reference to time)
to cut through	**fendere** (R3) (usu present or imperfect) to cleave, to cut through, to plough through
to cut up *into bits*	**tritare** to chop up, to mince **tagliuzzare** (R1-2) to cut into small bits, to chop up **trinciare** (R2-3) to cut into bits, to chop (up)
into slices	**affettare** to cut into slices, to slice **tranciare** (R3) to cut into large slices (usu fish); ALSO: to cut in a sharp and decisive way
into sections	**sezionare** to divide into sections; ALSO: (R3 med.) to dissect **dissecare** (R3 med.) to dissect
to cut = to mow	**falciare** to cut grass, hay etc; ALSO (fig) = to mow down, to kill
to cut = to shave	**radere** to shave (tr; intr = **radersi**) **rasare** (R2-3) to shave (tr; intr = **rasarsi**); ALSO: to level out (hedge), to mow (lawn)
to cut = to shear	**tosare** to shear (sheep etc); ALSO: to mow

TO DAMAGE, TO SPOIL (*see also* TO BREAK; TO DISTROY)

general	**danneggiare**: to damage	
	sciupare to ruin, to spoil	**deteriorare** (R3) to deteriorate, to damage
	guastare (R2-3) to ruin, to spoil, usu in an abstract sense; ALSO (with mechanical devices as DO): to break	**alterare** to change for the worse; ALSO to change
shape or aspect	**deformare** to deform	**storpiare** to cripple, to disfigure; ALSO (fig) to pronounce badly
	sfigurare (R2-3) to disfigure	**deturpare** (R3) to deface
food	**adulterare** (R3) to adulterate, to alter (usu foodstuffs, eg wine) for personal advantage; often used in the past participle as an adjective	**avariare** (R3) to spoil (usu food, with external agents as subjects, e.g. heat, humidity etc.); past participle often used as an adjective
character	**viziare** to spoil (e.g. a child)	**corrompere** to corrupt
on purpose	**sabotare** (R2-3) to sabotage	
= *to harm*	**nuocere a qu/qc** (R2-3) to damage sb/sth, to harm sb/sth	

TO DEFEAT, TO BEAT, TO WIN

<table>
<tr><td colspan="2">vincere (intr/tr)
to win (gen), used intransitively or with a DO referring to the "context" of the victory eg la guerra, or the prize e.g. la medaglia d'oro or, less frequently, the opponent (usu abstract) e.g. la paura (in the case of persons contro qu is more common)</td></tr>
<tr><td colspan="2">battere qu/qc
to beat sb/sth (opponent, record; in sport, games, contests etc, but usu not war);
ALSO: to hit; to serve (sport)</td></tr>
<tr><td colspan="2">sconfiggere qu/qc (R2-3)
to defeat sb/sth (often in war, but also in sport, and fig, e.g. il male)</td></tr>
<tr><td rowspan="2">avere la meglio
(su qu/qc)
to come off better
(against sb/sth)</td><td>trionfare (su qu/qc)
to triumph
(over sb/sth)</td></tr>
<tr><td>stravincere (intr/tr) (R1-2)
to win/to beat hands down (usu in sport, games, contests), constructed as vincere</td></tr>
<tr><td>piegare qu (R2-3)
to subdue sb;
ALSO (lit R2) to fold, to bend (usu qc)</td><td>stracciare qu (R1)
to lick sb (sport, games, contests);
ALSO (lit R2) to tear (paper, fabric etc)</td></tr>
<tr><td></td><td>sgominare qu (R2-3)
sbaragliare qu (R2-3)
to put to flight, usu militarily, with plural or collective nouns as DO</td></tr>
<tr><td colspan="2">sottomettere qu
to subdue sb, to bring sb under one's control</td></tr>
<tr><td></td><td>assoggettare qu (R2-3)
soggiogare qu (R3)
to subjugate sb</td></tr>
<tr><td colspan="2">conquistare qc
to conquer sth (e.g. territory, a city etc) militarily or with the use of force;
ALSO to achieve sth through hard work
NOTE: conquistare qu = to win sb over, to win sb's love</td></tr>
</table>

weaker ← → *stronger*

TO DESTROY (*see also* TO BREAK; TO DAMAGE)

general	**distruggere**
to demolish	**demolire** to demolish (building etc.) **far crollare qc** to cause sth to collapse (also with hostile intentions) **buttar giù** (R1-2) to pull down (building, tree etc.) **abbattere** to pull down (wall, tree etc.) **smantellare** (R2-3) to dismantle
to raze	**radere al suolo** to raze to the ground **spianare** to flatten, to raze to the ground; ALSO to level
to lay waste	**devastare**
to undo	**disfare**
to annihilate	**annichilire/annichilare** (R 3), **annientare** **disintegrare** (R2-3) to disintegrate (tr) **polverizzare** (R2-3) to pulverize **incenerire** to incinerate, to reduce to ashes **sterminare** to exterminate (living creatures)

DIRTY

general	**sporco** dirty, also fig, morally dirty, e.g. **denaro sporco** (fruit of unlawful activities); indecent (shows, jokes etc.)	
	lercio filthy (stronger than **sporco**), also fig, morally dirty	
	sudicio dirty, also fig, indecent, morally dirty	
	sozzo ['sottso] (R2-3), **zozzo** ['tsottso] (R1, Center, South) dirty; (fig) indecent (usu shows, jokes)	
	lurido (R2-3) filthy (stronger than **sporco**), also fig, morally filthy, indecent	
	immondo (R3) filthy (stronger than **sporco**), often fig, morally filthy	
	lordo (R3) soiled, also fig, morally dirty	
	sordido (R3) dirty, also fig, sordid, base, mean	
specific: soiled, stained	**macchiato** stained, spotted	**infangato** muddy
	insanguinato blood-stained	**inquinato** polluted
	unto oil-stained, greasy **bisunto** usu reinforces the above in the expression **unto e bisunto**	**impolverato** dusty, covered with dust (usu clothes, persons, things) **polveroso** dusty, full of dust (usu places, e.g. room)
	imbrattato (R2-3) soiled, esp with liquids (e.g. paint, mud)	
disgusting	**schifoso** (R1) disgustingly filthy, disgusting, also morally	
morally dirty	**sconcio** dirty (usu shows, jokes)	**indecente** indecent (gen)
	spinto dirty (shows, jokes)	**osceno** very dirty, indecent (shows, jokes, behaviour, proposals); ALSO awful
	scurrile (R3) scurrilous	**turpe** (R3) morally filthy (gen)

DRY

asciutto dry, not wet (gen, often with a positive connotation); ALSO (of persons) lean, not fat	**secco** dry (climate, places, also fig, usu with a negative connotation); ALSO (of persons) skinny; (of plants) dead	**arido** arid, dry (climate, places, also fig, e.g. **il cuore**)	**arso** (R2-3) dried up, scorched (places, also fig, e.g. **la gola**)	**riarso** (R3) parched (places, and also fig, e.g. **la gola**)
prosciugato, **disseccato** (R3) dried up (lakes etc) **disidratato** (R2-3) dehydrated				

weaker ← → *stronger*

TO EXAMINE

general	**esaminare**			
	studiare to study		**controllare** to check	
	analizzare to analyse		**verificare** to verify	
specific	**investigare** **indagare** to investigate	**ispezionare** (R2-3) to inspect	**perquisire** (R2-3) to search (usu of police)	**perlustrare** (R3) to reconnoitre
	scrutare (R3) to scrutinize, to scan	**valutare** (R2-3) **vagliare** (R3) to evaluate, to weigh up	**visitare** to examine medically	

FACE (*see also* APPEARANCE)

part of body	**faccia** (R1-2) also meaning expression, aspect	**viso** **volto** (R2-3)	**muso** (animal) muzzle; ALSO (R1) (ugly) face (often in idioms)
appearance, expression	**aspetto** aspect	**espressione** expression	
	cera the way sb's face looks with reference to health, in set expressions, e.g. **hai una brutta cera** (R1-2) you don't look well		
	tratti (m pl R2-3), **lineamenti** (m pl R2-3), **fisionomia** (R2-3), **fattezze** (f pl R3) features (of sb's face)		
surface	**faccia** side, facet	**lato** side	**superficie** (f) surface
figurative, idiomatic	**perdere la faccia** to lose face	**faccia tosta** cheek (insolence)	
	fare una smorfia/boccaccia to pull a face		
	rompere il muso a qu (R1) to smash sb's face		
	fare/mettere il muso (R1) to pull a long face, to sulk		

FAT (of persons)

grasso	
grassottello (R1-2), **grassoccio** plump **bene in carne** (R1-2) well-covered **ben nutrito** (R1-2) well fed **paffuto** (R2-3) chubby **florido** (R2-3) healthy, flourishing **pingue** (R3) fat	**ciccione** (f **-a**, also n) (R1) fat **pesante** heavy **grosso** big **panciuto** paunchy, ALSO fig (e.g. pots) **corpulento** (R2-3) corpulent, bulky **obeso** (R3) obese

less (or euphemistic) ← → more

FIRE

fuoco fire (ALSO fig, passion etc.), gunfire		**incendio** large destructive fire
falò bonfire	**rogo** stake; ALSO (R2-3) large destructive fire	**pira** (R3) (funeral) pyre, stake
ardore (R2-3), **passione** passion		**stufa** stove, heating appliance

FORTUNE, LUCK, CHANCE

bad luck	good luck
caso fate; ALSO accident, event, case	
destino fate, destiny	
fato (R2-3) fate	
sorte (f R2-3) fate, destiny	
sfortuna **mala/cattiva sorte** (R2-3) **scalogna** (R1) **iella** (R1, Center, South) **sfiga** (R1*-1, North)	**fortuna** **buona sorte** (R2-3) **provvidenza** (godsend) **culo** (R1*)
NOTE the expressions: **avere sfortuna/scalogna** (R1)/**iella** (R1)/**sfiga** (R1*-1) to be unlucky	NOTE the expressions: **avere fortuna/culo** (R1*) to be lucky

FUEL (LIQUID)

liquid fuel (gen)	**carburante** (m)
combustible	**combustibile** (m/adj R2-3) (liquid, solid, gaseous)
propellant	**propellente** (m/adj R3) (liquid, solid)
oil lubricant, cooking	**olio**
petroleum	**petrolio**
crude	**petrolio greggio**, **greggio**
kerosene	**cherosene** (m)
diesel oil; fuel oil (for heating)	**gasolio**, **nafta**
petrol, gasoline	**benzina**
unleaded	**benzina verde/senza piombo**
super/premium	**benzina super**, **super** (f R1-2)

GATE

cancello garden gate	**cancellata** imposing gate, with railings
barriera barrier; major motorway entrance/exit	**sbarra** movable barrier (eg level crossing); ALSO bar (metal/wood)
casello motorway entrance/exit	**porta** gate of a city (if gen, usu plural)
entrata entrance	**uscita** exit; boarding gate (airport)

GIFT

present		
general	**regalo** present, gift	
	pensiero (R1) present, gift; **un pensierino** (R1) = a little something, a little gift	
	dono (R2-3) gift	**presente** (m R3) present
specific		
for Christmas	**strenna** (**natalizia**/**di Natale**) (R2-3) Christmas present	
commercial	**omaggio** gift, often commercial, e.g. **in omaggio** = as a (free) gift, complimentary; ALSO = tribute	
legal	**donazione** (R3 leg) legal gift, legal donation	
donation	**offerta** offering, donation	
	elemòsina alms; **fare**/**dare l’elemosina** = to give alms	
	òbolo (R3) (small) donation; **l’obolo di San Pietro** = Peter’s pence	
	elargizione (R3) generous donation; **fare elargizioni** (R3) = to give generously	
	NOTE the common expressions: **chiedere la carità** = to beg; **fare la carità** = to give alms	
natural gift		
talento *talent*	**dono** (R2-3) natural gift	**dote** (f R2-3) endowment; ALSO dowry

TO GIVE

general	**dare**		
specific			
as a present	**donare** (R2-3) to donate	**regalare** to give as a present	**elargire** (R3) to give generously
to grant	**concedere** to grant, to allow, to concede	**accordare** to grant	
to offer	**offrire** to offer	**porgere** (R3) to offer; ALSO (R2-3) to pass	
to provide	**provvedere** (R2-3) **qu di qc** **fornire qu/qc di qc** to provide sb with sth **fornire qc a qu** to provide sth for sb	**dotare qu/qc di qc** to endow sb with sth to equip sth with sth	
to surrender	**cedere** to give up, to hand over, to surrender; ALSO (R2-3) to sell, to legally transfer rights, property, shares etc.		
to deliver	**consegnare** to deliver; ALSO to hand in	**recapitare** (R2-3) to deliver (esp mail, parcels etc)	
to award, to bestow	**assegnare** to assign, to award	**aggiudicare** to award, to adjudge	
	attribuire to award, to assign; ALSO to attribute, to ascribe	**conferire** (R3) to confer, to bestow	
to entrust	**affidare qc a qu** to entrust sth to sb; **affidare un incarico** = to assign a task		
to administer	**somministrare** (R3) to give medicines, sacraments		
unpleasant things	**sbolognare** (R1) to palm off (counterfeit notes etc., on sb = **a qu**); to get rid (of useless things, of annoying persons)	**affibbiare** (R1) **appioppare** (R1) to give unpleasant things, e.g. slaps, kicks, fines, nicknames, burdens, responsibilities; to palm off (counterfeit notes etc., on sb = **a qc**)	
	rifilare (R1) to palm off (counterfeit notes etc.); to give (a slap, a kick)	**mollare** (R1) to deal (slaps, kicks)	
burdens	**accollare qc a qu** to saddle sb with sth (burdens, responsibilities, expenses etc); to lay on sb the responsibility for sth	**addossare qc a qu** to lay on sb the responsibility/the blame for sth	

GLASS (*see also* WINDOW)

<table>
<tr><td>substance</td><td>vetro
glass (gen)</td><td>cristallo
crystal;
ALSO pane of glass, plate glass</td></tr>
<tr><td rowspan="3">for drinking</td><td>bicchiere
glass</td><td>calice (m R3)
goblet; chalice</td></tr>
<tr><td>boccale (m R2-3)
tankard, jug</td><td>coppa (R3)
goblet, drinking cup; ALSO (R2)
cup (= prize)</td></tr>
<tr><td colspan="2">NOTE: all these vessels can be made of different materials, e.g.
bicchiere di carta/plastica = paper/plastic cup</td></tr>
<tr><td rowspan="2">for looking through</td><td>occhiali (m pl)
glasses, spectacles</td><td>binocolo
binoculars, field glasses</td></tr>
<tr><td colspan="2">lente (f) (d’ingrandimento)
(magnifying) lens/magnifying glass</td></tr>
<tr><td>for other uses</td><td colspan="2">clessidra
hour glass, sand glass</td></tr>
</table>

TO GROW, TO INCREASE (intr)

• All the following intransitive verbs take **essere** as auxiliary

general	**crescere** to grow, to increase in size (natural process)		
more abstract	**aumentare** to increase (quantity, weight, extension, price, temperature)	**accrescersi** (R3) to grow, to increase (quantity)	**moltiplicarsi** to multiply, to increase (quantity)
specific			
to expand, to extend	**espandersi** (R2-3) to expand	**estendersi** (R2-3) to extend	**ampliarsi** (R2-3) to grow larger, to extend
to get bigger	**ingrandirsi** (less common **ingrandire**) to grow larger in dimensions, also fig to expand commercially etc.	**ingrossare/ingrossarsi** to grow larger (volume, mass); to swell, to get fat	
to get fatter	**ingrassare/ingrassarsi**		
to get dilated, swollen	**gonfiarsi** to swell (also of rivers etc.)	**dilatarsi** (R2-3) to dilate; to expand (physics)	
to get longer	**allungarsi** to lengthen (space or time), to grow taller; ALSO to lie down	**prolungarsi** (R2-3) to extend (space), to get longer (time); ALSO to dwell at length on sth	
to get wider	**allargarsi** to get wider, to widen, to spread		
to get taller, higher	**alzarsi** to grow taller; to rise; ALSO to get up		
to grow up	**diventare grande** (R1-2) to grow up, to become an adult	**venire su** (R1) to grow (persons, plants)	
to develop	**svilupparsi** to develop	**evolversi** (R2-3) to evolve	

GUN

general	**arma** (pl **armi**) weapon		**arma da fuoco** (R2-3) fire-arm
specific			
hand gun	**rivoltella** **revolver** (m R2-3) revolver		**pistola** pistol
machine-gun	**mitra** (m)		**mitragliatrice** (heavy) machine-gun
	fucile (m) **mitragliatore** (R3) sub-machine-gun		
shotgun, rifle	**fucile** (m) gun, shotgun, rifle	**carabina** (R2-3) rifle, carbine	**doppietta** double barrelled gun
	schioppo (R1-2) rifle, shotgun	**lupara** sawn-off shotgun	**moschetto** (R2-3) musket
	trombone (m R3) sawn-off shotgun	**archibugio** (R3) (h)arquebus	**spingarda** (R3) springald
cannon	**cannone** (m) cannon, large gun	**mortaio** mortar	**pezzo d’artiglieria** (R2-3) piece of ordnance

HAIR

human		*animal*	
individual	*collective*	*individual*	*collective*
capello (one) hair (on head)	**capelli** (pl) hair (on head) **capigliatura** (R2-3), **chioma** (R2-3) head of hair **zazzera** long hair (on head)	**pelo** hair (gen) **sétola** bristle **crine** (m) horsehair **baffo** whisker	**pelo** coat **pelliccia** fur, coat **peluria** (R2-3) fine hair cover, down **mantello** (R2-3) coat **vello** (R3) fleece **criniera** mane; ALSO (fig) = thick head of hair
pelo (one) hair (gen, face and body)	**peluria** (R2-3) fine hair cover, down		
ciglio eyelash	**ciglia** (f pl) eyelashes		
	sopracciglio eyebrow **sopracciglia** (f pl) eyebrows		
	baffi (m pl) moustache; ALSO **baffo** (R1-2) half or whole moustache		
	barba beard **pizzo** goatee		
	basette (f pl) sideburns **favoriti** (m pl) muttonchops		

HANDLE

maniglia handle (door, drawer etc.)		**mànico** handle, shaft (often long in shape), for cutlery (e.g. knife), tools (e.g. hammer), handbag, umbrella, broom, shovel etc.
impugnatura (R2-3) grip (racquets, whips, pistols, swords etc.)		**manovella** crank, starting handle
manubrio handlebar (bicycle etc.)		**pomo**, **pomello** (R2-3) knob (doors, drawers, walking sticks etc.)
calcio (R2-3) butt (rifle, pistol)	**ansa** (R3) handle (vase, jug etc.)	**elsa** (R3) hilt

HEEL

tallone (m) heel (usu foot, but also sock)	**calcagno** (R2-3) heel (usu foot, but also sock, shoe, less common than **tallone**)	**tacco** heel (shoe)

TO HELP

general	**aiutare**
	dare una mano a qc (R1-2) to give sb a hand
	assistere to assist, to attend (usu persons with health or social problems); to help in a professional way (nurses, lawyers etc.)
	soccorrere (R2-3), **prestare soccorso a qc** (R2-3) to help sb in dangerous or difficult situations
	coadiuvare (R3) to assist, to help
specific	
to support	**sostenere** to support (gen)
	sorreggere (R2-3) to support physically or morally
	appoggiare to support, to back up
to co-operate	**collaborare** (**con qu a qc**) (R2-3) to collaborate (with sb in sth)
	cooperare (con qu a qc) (R2-3) to co-operate (with sb in sth)
to facilitate	**facilitare**, **agevolare** (R2-3)

HILL

<table>
<tr><td colspan="4">whole, general</td></tr>
<tr><td colspan="4">altura (R3) rise, height, hill, mountain</td></tr>
<tr><td>poggio (R3) hillock</td><td colspan="2">collina hill
colle (m R2-3) hill (often in names; strictly speaking, less than 600 meters high)</td><td>montagna mountain
monte (m) mountain (often in names; strictly speaking, more than 600 meters high)</td></tr>
<tr><td colspan="4">whole, specific</td></tr>
<tr><td>picco (R2-3) peak</td><td>massiccio (R3) massif</td><td>duna (sand) dune</td><td>dosso (R3) small hill on roads</td></tr>
<tr><td colspan="4">slope</td></tr>
<tr><td colspan="2">discesa downhill slope</td><td colspan="2">salita uphill slope</td></tr>
<tr><td>china (R2-3),
pendìo (R2-3),
declivio (R3) slope, declivity</td><td>pendice (f R2-3) slope, side of hill/mountain
costa (R2-3) side of hill/mountain</td><td>pendenza (R2-3) gradient, slant (abstr.)</td><td>erta (R3) steep uphill slope
scarpata steep slope (usu short)</td></tr>
</table>

TO GET HOLD OF (*see also* TO TAKE)

general	**prendere**	**pigliare** (R1-2 Center, South)
specific		
to catch	**accalappiare** (R3) to catch (usu stray dogs; fig, persons)	
	acchiappare (R1) to catch (usu persons, animals)	
	acciuffare (R1-2) to catch (usu persons)	
	afferrare to catch and hold tightly	
	agguantare (R1) to catch	
	catturare to capture, to take prisoner	
to grab	**aggrapparsi a qc/qu** to grab and hold onto sth/sb	
	cogliere to pick, to pluck; fig to seize (e.g. opportunity)	
	ghermire (R3) to clutch (of birds of prey etc.)	
	impugnare (R2-3) to grab, to grip with one's hand (weapons, racquets, tools etc.)	
to take possession	**impossessarsi di qc/qu** (R2-3) to appropriate, to seize	
	impadronirsi di qc/qu (R2-3) to appropriate, to seize; fig to master (e.g. languages)	

HOLE

general				
buco hole (gen)			**buca** hole (usu in the ground), one side opening	
foro (R2-3) hole (usu round)			**pertugio** (R3) small, narrow hole	
specific				
crack	**crepa** crack	**crepaccio** large crack in ground, rock or glacier (crevasse)	**fessura** (R2-3) crack, narrow opening	**fenditura** (R3) cleft, crack
hollow	**vuoto** hollow, gap		**cavità** (R2-3) cavity, hollow	
pit	**fossa** hole dug in the ground, pit; tomb		**scavo** (R2-3) excavation	
(others)	**apertura** (R2-3) opening	**orifizio** (R3) orifice		**breccia** (R3) breach, gap in a fortified wall

HOLIDAYS

<table>
<tr><th>festivity</th><th>day off work</th></tr>
<tr><td colspan="2">festa
holiday, usu festivity but also day off work; in the plural it often refers to the Christmas holidays e.g. buone feste = season's greetings</td></tr>
<tr><td colspan="2">giorno festivo
(R2-3) holiday, usu opposed to giorno feriale = week day, working day</td></tr>
<tr><td rowspan="6">festività (R2-3) festivity, feast day
ricorrenza (R2-3) recurring feast day
solennità (R2-3) (solemn) feast day (usu religious)</td><td>vacanza holiday (from school, work); in vacanza = on holiday</td></tr>
<tr><td>permesso leave; in permesso = on leave</td></tr>
<tr><td>ferie (f pl) holidays (from work); in ferie = on holiday (from work)</td></tr>
<tr><td>congedo leave, usu from military service (also = discharge), but also from work; usu in the expression in congedo = on leave (also = retired, discharged)</td></tr>
<tr><td>licenza leave (usu military); often in the expression in licenza = on leave</td></tr>
<tr><td>ponte (m) day(s) off work bridging two holidays; also used to indicate the resulting extended holiday</td></tr>
<tr><td>anno sabbatico (R2-3) sabbatical</td></tr>
</table>

TO HURRY

<table>
<tr><td colspan="2">to hurry (to do sth)</td></tr>
<tr><td>sbrigarsi (a + inf) (R1-2)</td><td>spicciarsi (a + inf) (R1)</td></tr>
<tr><td>fare presto (a + inf) to be quick (at doing sth)</td><td>correre (a + inf) to run (to do sth)</td></tr>
<tr><td>affrettarsi (a + inf) (R2-3) to hurry</td><td>precipitarsi (a + inf) (R2-3) to rush</td></tr>
<tr><td colspan="2">to be in a hurry</td></tr>
<tr><td>avere fretta</td><td>andare di fretta/corsa</td></tr>
</table>

TO INFORM

<table>
<tr><td colspan="3">general</td></tr>
<tr><td>R1</td><td>R2</td><td>R3</td></tr>
<tr><td colspan="3">far sapere (qc a qu)</td></tr>
<tr><td rowspan="2"></td><td colspan="2">informare (qu di/su qc)</td></tr>
<tr><td colspan="2">mettere al corrente (qu di qc)
rendere noto (qc a qu)</td></tr>
<tr><td colspan="2"></td><td>ragguagliare (qu su qc)</td></tr>
<tr><td colspan="3">specific</td></tr>
<tr><td colspan="2">notificare (qc a qu) (R3)
to notify</td><td>avvertire (qu di qc)
avvisare (qu di qc)
to notify; to warn</td></tr>
<tr><td colspan="2">ammonire (R3)
to warn</td><td>prevenire (R3)
to forewarn</td></tr>
<tr><td>comunicare (qc a qu) (R2-3)
to communicate</td><td>partecipare (qc a qu) (R3)
to communicate; to announce</td><td>annunciare (qc a qu)
to announce</td></tr>
</table>

TO KNOW

sapere to have knowledge of sth; to know how to do something	**conoscere** to be acquainted/familiar with sth/sb; to meet sb for the first time	**intendersi di qc** to be competent about sth, to be an expert on sth

LANGUAGE

lingua		
linguaggio type of language, language faculty	**idioma** (m R3) language, idiom	
dialetto dialect	**vernacolo** (R3) vernacular, dialect	
favella (R3) (power of) speech, talking	**gergo** jargon, slang	
parlare (m R2-3) way of speaking, dialect	**parlata** way of speaking, dialect, accent	**parola** (gift of) speech

TO LEAVE

transitive	
lasciare	**abbandonare** to abandon
intransitive (*see also* TO MOVE) NOTE: AUX **essere** unless otherwise stated; place of departure usu introduced by **da**	
partire (**per** + destination) to leave	**andarsene, andar via** to go away
allontanarsi to go off, to wander from	**uscire** to go out
decollare (R2-3) (AUX **avere**) to take off	**salpare** (**per** + destination) (R3) to weigh anchor, to set sail

LEG

gamba leg (human, furniture)	**arto inferiore** (R3) lower limb **arto posteriore** (R3) hind limb	**zampa** leg (animal), paw
coscia thigh; ALSO leg of butchered/cooked animals, e.g. **coscia di pollo** = chicken leg, drumstick	**coscio** leg of larger animals, when butchered or cooked, e.g. **coscio di agnello** = leg of lamb	

MONEY

general	**soldi** (m pl)		**denaro** (**danaro**) (more abstract and less common than **soldi**)
	quattrini (m pl R1-2) ALSO = dough		
specific			
cash	**contante** (m) usu pl, as in the expression **in contanti** = cash (as a way of payment)		(**denaro**) **liquido** (R2-3)
change	**resto** (balance of a transaction)		
coin	**moneta** ALSO = currency; money (abstr.); (R1 North) small change		**spiccioli** (m pl) loose change
currency	**valuta** (R2-3)		**divisa** (R3)
dough etc	**grana** (R1)	**pecunia** (R1)	**conquibus** (m R1)
	dindi (m pl R1, baby talk) money		**baiocchi** (m pl R1) (ALSO (lit R3) = baiocs, old papal currency)
	schei (m pl R1, Veneto) money		**palanche** (f pl R1, North) money
fortune	**fortuna**		**capitale** (m R1-2) (usu [R2] = capital)
	patrimonio (R1-2) e.g. **costare/spendere un patrimonio** = to cost/to spend a fortune; ALSO (R1-2-3) = estate		
funds	**fondi** (m pl)		
nest-egg	**risparmi** (m pl) savings	**gruzzolo** (R1-2) savings	**peculio** (R1) (ALSO [R3] = peculium)
NOTE: **un soldo**, **una lira**, **un quattrino** (R1-2), **il becco di un quattrino** (R1) are used in negative sentences, meaning (not) a penny/a twopence/a bean/a cent			

MOUTHFUL

boccone (m) mouthful, bite (of food), morsel	**boccata** mouthful, usu of air (= breath) or smoke (= puff)
morso bite (gen)	**tirata** (R1) puff (cigarette smoke)
sorso sip	**sorsata** sip, gulp

TO MOVE (intr)

to shift	**muoversi** (absolute or with direction) to move (gen, with or without changing place)	**spostarsi** (absolute or with direction or with destination) to move (usu from one place to another)
to move house	**traslocare** (AUX **avere**), **traslocarsi** (absolute or with destination)	**trasferirsi** (absolute or with destination)
to go away	**andarsene**	**sloggiare** (AUX **avere**) to move out

NAME

name, surname	**nome** (m) name (also fig); full name; given name; ALSO noun		
	cognome (m) surname, family name		
	nome di battesimo (R2-3) first name, Christian name		
	nominativo (R3) name (bureaucratic, usu in lists etc)		
	NOTE: in Italy, the practice of putting surname before name often finds its way outside the realm of bureaucracy		
nickname	**soprannome** (m)	**nomìgnolo**	**appellativo** (R3)
pseudonym	**pseudònimo** (R2-3) pseudonym (gen)	**nome d'arte** (R3) pseudonym (esp of actors); pen-name	**nome di battaglia** (R3) pseudonym, nom de guerre
insult	**insulto**, **ingiuria** (R2-3), **insultare qc**, **coprire qc di insulti** (R2-3) = to call sb names		

NATIVE

<table>
<tr><td colspan="5">noun (person only)</td></tr>
<tr><td colspan="5">indigeno person born and found living in a specified place, usu outside Europe</td></tr>
<tr><td colspan="2">aborigeno (R3) original inhabitant, esp, but not only, of Australia</td><td colspan="2">oriundo (R2-3) person of specified birth/ancestry (usu indicated by adj, e.g. oriundo italiano)</td><td>nativo (R3) person born in a specified place (more common as an adj)</td></tr>
<tr><td colspan="5">adjective</td></tr>
<tr><td rowspan="2">belonging to a place by birth</td><td>of persons</td><td>nativo di (R2-3) native of, originally from</td><td rowspan="2">originario di native of, originally from</td><td rowspan="3">indìgeno (R2-3), autòctono (R3) original to a given place, local</td></tr>
<tr><td>of culture, flora, fauna etc.</td><td></td></tr>
<tr><td>local</td><td>of persons, flora, fauna, culture etc.</td><td>locale, del luogo</td><td></td></tr>
<tr><td rowspan="2">relating to sb’s birth</td><td>of places e.g. città, paese, terra etc.</td><td colspan="3">natale, nativo, natìo (R3);
NOTE: (madre) patria = native country, fatherland</td></tr>
<tr><td>of language</td><td colspan="3">materno e.g. lingua materna
NOTE: madrelingua = mother tongue; di madrelingua = native (speakers)</td></tr>
</table>

NOISE

rumore	**verso**
gen, usu inanimate or unknown sources; ALSO = sound (when not perceived as musical or referring to human voice)	“voice”-generated noise, esp of animals

NOISES OF ANIMALS

- All the verbs in **-ire** in the following table are "**isc**" verbs.
- The first term in the animals column is the most common form for the particular breed; the respective feminine or masculine form has been given in brackets, if irregular (see also section 14.1.2).
- In the list of animal noises, the infinitive of the verb is often used as a noun, e.g. **il ragliare degli asini**.
- The Italian verb for "to go" as in "the rooster goes cockadoodledoo" is **fare**, e.g. **il gallo fa chicchirichì**.

animal		*verb*	*noun*	*noise (all R1)*
bird	**uccello**	**cinguettare** **cantare** **trillare** (R3)	**cinguettìo** **canto** **trillo** (R2-3)	**cip/cip-cip** **-** **-**
cat	**gatto**	**miagolare**	**miagolìo**	**miao**
chick; little bird	**pulcino**; **uccellino**	**pigolare**	**pigolìo**	**pio-pio**
cow (bull)	**mucca, vacca** (R1-2) (**toro**)	**muggire**	**muggito**	**muu**
crow	**corvo**; **cornacchia**	**gracchiare**	**gracchio** (R2-3)	**cra cra**
deer	**cervo**	**bramire** (R3)	**bramito** (R3)	**-**
dog (bitch)	**cane** (**cagna**)	**abbaiare** **latrare** **guaire**	**-** **latrato** **guaìto**	**bau/bau-bau** **-** **caì/caì-caì**
donkey	**asino**	**ragliare**	**raglio**	**hi ho; i-o**
elephant	**elefante** (m)	**barrire**	**barrito**	**-**
frog	**rana**	**gracidare**	**gracidìo**	**-**
goose; duck	**oca**; **anatra**	**-**	**-**	**qua qua**
hen	**gallina,** **chioccia**	**-** **chiocciare** (R2-3)	**-** **-**	**coccodè** **-**
horse	**cavallo**	**nitrire**	**nitrito**	**-**
lion, tiger, leopard etc.	**leone** (m), **tigre** (f), **leopardo** etc.	**ruggire**	**ruggito**	**-**
mouse	**topo**	**squittire**	**squittìo**	**squit/squit-squit**
pig (sow)	**maiale** (m), **porco** (R1*-1) (**scrofa**)	**grugnire**	**grugnito**	**-**
rooster	**gallo**	**cantare**	**canto**	**chicchirichì**
sheep/ewe (ram) goat	**pecora** (**montone**) **capra**	**belare**	**belato**	**bèe**
swallow	**róndine** (f)	**garrire** (R3)	**garrito** (R3)	**-**
turkey	**tacchino**	**-**	**-**	**glu-glu**
wolf	**lupo**	**ululare**	**ululato**	**-**

OTHER NOISES/SOUNDS

- Words based on English onomatopeic verbs – e.g. sniff, bang, gulp, sob, pronounced the Italian way – have become known in Italy through comic books. However, they are not normally used in the spoken language. This table lists a number of more common Italian onomatopeic terms.

source	verb	noise-producing action (noun)	noise (all R1)
child crying	**piangere**	**pianto**	**uè uè/uà uà**
sb drinking	**bere**	**bevuta**	**glu glu**
sb smacking sb	**dare uno schiaffo**	**schiaffo**	**paf/pàffete**
sb sneezing	**starnutire**	**starnuto**	**eccì**
sb/sth falling	**cadere**	**caduta** **capitómbolo** (R1-2)	**patapùm/** **patapùnfete**
sb/sth falling and/or hitting sth/sb	**cadere** **sbattere** **urtare**	**caduta** **-** **urto** **botta**	**pam/pàmfete**
sb/sth knocking on a door	**bussare**	**-**	**toc toc**
sth breaking	**rompersi** **spaccarsi**	**rottura** **-** (**spacco** = crack, not cracking)	**crac**
sth falling and/or breaking, also fig	**cadere** **rompersi**	**caduta** **rottura**	**patatrac**
bomba bomb	**esplodere**	**esplosione** **botto**	**bum**
campana (large) bell (church etc.)	**scampanare** **suonare/sonare** **rintoccare**	**scampanìo** (R2-3) **suono** **rintocco**	**din don** **din don** **din/don**
campanello (small) bell (bicycle, door etc.)	**scampanellare** **suonare/sonare** **trillare** (R3)	**scampanellìo** **suono** **trillo** (R2-3)	**drin/drindrin** **dring/dring-dring**
arma da fuoco fire-arm	**sparare**	**sparo**	**pim/pam**
orologio clock, watch	**ticchettare**	**ticchettìo**	**tic-tac**
telefono telephone	**suonare/sonare** **trillare** (R3)	**suono** **trillo** (R2-3)	**drin**, **dring**

OLD

<table>
<tr><th>persons</th><th>things</th></tr>
<tr><td colspan="2">vecchio
old (also of animals); former</td></tr>
<tr><td>anziano elderly, aged; senior</td><td>antico ancient</td></tr>
<tr><td rowspan="3">avanti negli anni
di età avanzata
di una certa età
(all somewhat euphemistic) old, well on in years</td><td>annoso (R3) old; age-old (esp of questions, arguments etc)</td></tr>
<tr><td>senile (R3) old (esp of age, e.g. età senile)</td></tr>
<tr><td>vetusto (R3) very old, ancient</td></tr>
<tr><td>maturo mature</td><td rowspan="2">secolare (R2-3) very old (of trees etc); age-old; (lit) century old/centuries old</td></tr>
<tr><td>attempato (R2-3) elderly</td></tr>
<tr><td rowspan="4">bacucco (R1) (derogatory, often after vecchio) dotard</td><td>usato used, second hand (of clothes etc)</td></tr>
<tr><td>di seconda mano second hand</td></tr>
<tr><td>stagionato (R2-3) matured (of food); seasoned (of wood); ALSO (R1) elderly (of persons)</td></tr>
<tr><td>obsoleto (R3) obsolete</td></tr>
<tr><td colspan="2">invecchiato aged
decrèpito (R2-3)
(often after vecchio) decrepit, very old</td></tr>
</table>

OUTSKIRTS, SURROUNDINGS

general	**dintorni** (m pl) surroundings **nei dintorni** (**di**) = in the vicinity (of)	**paraggi** (m pl R2-3) neighbourhood, environs; **nei paraggi** (**di**) (R2) = not far (from)
	vicinanze (f pl R2-3) environs; **nelle vicinanze** (**di**) (R2) = in the vicinity (of)	**adiacenze** (f pl R3) surroundings **nelle adiacenze** (**di**) = in the vicinity (of)
	zona limitrofa (R3) (often in the pl), **area circostante** (R3) surrounding area	
of a city	**periferia** outskirts, suburbs (as opposed to the city center)	**sobborgo** (R2-3) suburb
	porte (f pl) (city) gates e.g. **alle porte di Roma** = at the gates of Rome, just outside Rome	**borgata** suburb in the outskirts of Rome; ALSO village
	cintura (R3) belt (esp **cintura industriale** = industrial belt)	**hinterland** ['interland] (m R3) geographic area of influence of a big city e.g. **l'hinterland milanese**

PAIR, COUPLE

pair	*couple*
paio of objects made of two similar and complementary parts, e.g. **un paio di forbici/calzoni/mutande/occhiali/** etc. of sets made of two similar and strictly complementary objects e.g. **un paio di scarpe/calze/guanti**/etc.	**un paio** (**di**) (usu not with nouns forming a pair) a couple (of), about two, e.g.**un paio d'ore** = a couple of hours
compagno (f **-a**) member of a set of two objects	
coppia of two elements of the same kind (usu, but not only, persons or animals) in some way related and considered as a set, e.g. **una coppia di gemelli** (pair of twins)/**innamorati** (lovers)/**canarini** (canaries, i.e. male and female)/**assi** (aces (etc.), in card games)/etc. **fare coppia con qu** = to pair off with sb **a coppie** = in pairs	**coppia** (married) couple, e.g.**una bella coppia** = a handsome couple
NOTE the difference in the following pair of examples (**coppia di esempi**):	
una coppia di avvocati = a pair of lawyers (i.e. a team of two lawyers)	**un paio di avvocati** = a couple of lawyers (i.e. two (or three) lawyers, not necessarily connected)

PATH

concrete			
cammino path, way; ALSO journey	**mulattiera** (R2-3) mule-track	**pista** (R2-3) track; ALSO (R2) trail, ski slope, racing track; (R2-3) runway	**sentiero** path, track, usu on mountains, in woods, fields etc.
stradina **stradicciola** (smaller) lane, path	**via** path (also fig), track (in fields etc.); route; ALSO (usu) street; way	**viale** (m) **vialetto** (smaller) path in gardens, parks etc.	**viottolo** narrow path, usu through fields
abstract			
corso route	**percorso** route, run; **lungo il percorso** = en route	**tragitto** (R2-3) route, journey	**traiettoria** (R2-3) trajectory (physics, e.g. of bullets etc.)

PAY

pay (gen)	**stipendio**			
	salario pay, esp **settimanale/mensile** (monthly/weekly), usu for manual workers		**paga** pay **oraria/giornaliera/settimanale/** etc (hourly/daily/weekly/etc)	
daily pay	**giornata** day's pay		**diaria** (R2-3) day's pay; (R3) daily allowance for travelling expenses, per diem	
monthly pay	**mensile** (m) monthly pay		**mensilità** (R2-3) monthly instalment (of salary)	
	tredicesima extra monthly pay given as part of annual salary		**quattordicesima** further monthly pay given beside the **tredicesima** as part of annual salary	
bonus	**gratifica** (R3)			
allowance	**indennità** (R3) ALSO indemnity			
for specific services	**onorario** (R2-3) doctor's fee	**parcella** (R2-3) usu lawyer's fee	**competenze** (f pl R3) fee for professional services	
remuneration	**corresponsione** **rimunerazione** (**remunerazione**) (all R3)	**compenso** (R2-3) ALSO (usu) (R2) reward	**retribuzione** (R3) ALSO reward	**mercede** (f R3 literary) ALSO reward

POLICEMAN

<table>
<tr><td colspan="3">general</td></tr>
<tr><td rowspan="4">policeman (for general police purposes)</td><td colspan="2">agente (m) (di polizia/di pubblica sicurezza (R2-3))</td></tr>
<tr><td>poliziotto (R1-2)
NOTE: la polizia = the police</td><td>celerino (R1)
NOTE: la Celere = the Flying Squad</td></tr>
<tr><td>questurino (R1)</td><td>guardia (R1-2)
ALSO guard, cop,
e.g. guardie e ladri = cops and robbers</td></tr>
<tr><td>gendarme (m R1-2 old fashioned)
ALSO cop</td><td>carabiniere
member of the Carabinieri, an army corps with police duties (including traffic)</td></tr>
<tr><td colspan="3">specific</td></tr>
<tr><td>traffic police</td><td colspan="2">vigile (urbano, -a), pizzardone (m R1 Rome), ghisa (m R1 Milan)
traffic policeman (in cities)
agente (m) (della polizia stradale), mìlite (m R1)
traffic policeman (usu on roads outside cities); ALSO (R3) soldier
NOTE: collectively, la polizia/milizia stradale; la milizia (R1); la stradale (R1))</td></tr>
<tr><td>financial police</td><td colspan="2">finanziere
customs or revenue officer
NOTE: collectively, la Guardia di Finanza/la Finanza (R1-2)/(less common) le Fiamme gialle</td></tr>
<tr><td>nightwatchman</td><td colspan="2">metronotte (m), guardia notturna</td></tr>
<tr><td colspan="3">derogatory</td></tr>
<tr><td>flatfoot</td><td colspan="2">piedipiatti (m R1-2)</td></tr>
<tr><td>cop</td><td colspan="2">sbirro (R1), sgherro (R1) (both not very common)</td></tr>
</table>

POSTER, NOTICE, SIGN

notice (abstract)	**avviso** notice (esp written, also official, legal etc); advertisement in newspapers	**annuncio** notice; announcement (esp spoken); advertisement in newspapers
	inserzione (R2-3) insertion, advertisement in newspaper	**bando** (R3) public announcement (usu calling for tenders or applications to compete for a job)
(concrete)	**cartello** notice (referring to the object as well as the content), placard, sign	
road sign	**cartello** (**stradale**) (for traffic rules, directions)	
	segnale (m) (**stradale**) (for traffic rules, directions)	
	indicazione (**stradale**) (R2-3) (for directions only)	
shop sign	**insegna**, e.g. **insegna al neon/luminosa** = neon sign; ALSO (R3) emblem; ensign	
poster	**manifesto** poster (gen), bill; ALSO (R3) manifesto	
	cartellone (**pubblicitario**) poster (often on a free-standing billboard)	
	locandina (R2-3) small poster, usu advertising films, plays etc.	
	affisso (R3) bill, poster	
	réclame [re'klam](f) advertisement in media, esp television and radio, but also poster	
	poster (m) poster used for decoration, usu at home	
placard, board	**cartello** placard (in demonstrations etc.)	
	tabellone (m) (notice) board, billboard	
banner	**striscione** (m) banner (at the stadium, in demonstrations etc.)	
	stendardo (R3) banner of a knight, army corps etc.	**gonfalone** (m R3) banner of a city, town etc.
writing	**scritta** writing on wall, pavement, placard, plaque, tablet etc.	
	iscrizione (R2-3) inscription (usu on stone or metal)	
	epìgrafe (f R3) epigraph	**epitaffio** (R3) epitaph
plaque, slab	**targa** (R2-3) (usu metal) plaque, plate; ALSO usu (R2) car number plate	
	placca (R3) (metal) plaque, plate (in general)	
	làpide (f R2-3) (stone) (memorial) stone/tablet/slab; tombstone	

PROUD

positive	**fiero** (positive connotation) **essere fiero di** = to be proud of	
negative	**orgoglioso** (either positive or negative connotation) **essere orgoglioso di** = to be proud of	
	superbo haughty, proud; **superbia** = pride, as one of the deadly sins; ALSO (not of persons) superb	
haughty, disdainful	**altero** (R3) haughty, disdainful	**altezzoso** (R3) haughty
	sdegnoso (R2-3) disdainful	**sprezzante** (R2-3) disdainful, scornful
conceited	**montato** (R1-2) swollen-headed	**pieno di sé** (R1-2) full of oneself
	presuntuoso presumptuous	**pretenzioso** (R3) pretentious
	spocchioso conceited	**tronfio** (R2-3) puffed up
boastful	**vanaglorioso** (R3) vainglorious	
vain	**vanitoso** vain	**fatuo** (R3) fatuous
arrogant	**arrogante** arrogant	**borioso** (R2-3) arrogant
	burbanzoso (R3) arrogant	**protervo** (R3) arrogant, insolent
	tracotante (R3) arrogant	

TO REPAIR

general			
usu concrete	**accomodare**, **aggiustare** to repair, to fix (also fig)		
	rabberciare, **racconciare**, **raffazzonare** to fix in a botchy way		
	NOTE the following colloquial (R1) expressions: **dare un'accomodata/un'aggiustata/una rabberciata/racconciata/raffazzonata/rappezzata/rimediata/riparata/sistemata** (**a qc**) to fix (sth) quickly and in a botchy way		
concrete or abstract	**riparare** (**qc**) to repair (gen); to make amends for (injustice etc.); (**a qc**) (R2-3) to put right, to remedy		
	rimediare (**a qc**) to put right, to find a remedy (for sth); ALSO (R1) to fix the best one can (**qc** = sth)		
usu abstract	**correggere** to correct	**rettificare** to rectify	**sistemare** to settle; ALSO to fix (fig)
specific			
to restore	**restaurare** to restore (esp works of art, buildings etc.); to re-establish (monarchy etc)	**ripristinare** (R2-3) to restore (buildings etc); to re-establish (public order, services etc.)	**ristrutturare** to renovate (buildings)
to repair clothes	**rammendare** to mend, to darn	**rappezzare** to patch (up), also (R1) fig = to fix in a botchy way	**rattoppare** to patch (up)

ROCK, STONE

general			
roccia rock, usu large and ‘in situ’, on mountains, in the ground etc; also in science			
pietra stone (small piece of rock; material); fig **cuore di pietra** = heart of stone **pietra angolare** (R2-3) cornerstone **pietra filosofale** (R3) philosopher’s stone **pietra focaia** (R2-3) flintstone **pietra miliare** (R2-3) milestone **pietra di paragone** (R3) touchstone **pietra preziosa** precious stone, gem **pietra tombale/sepolcrale** (R2-3) tombstone			
sasso stone (small piece of rock), pebble; fig **rimanere/restare di sasso** = to be dumbfounded			
specific			
large	**masso**, **macigno** boulder; e.g. **caduta massi** = falling rocks (warning sign)		
small	**ciottolo**, **sassolino** pebble		
loose	**breccia** road metal; gravel	**ghiaia** (fine) gravel (esp on garden paths)	**pietrisco** road metal, crushed stone (esp for mixing in concrete)

other	
rock in the sea	**scoglio** rock in the sea, cliff, crag
Rock of Gibraltar	**rocca di Gibilterra**
paving stone	**selce** (f) flint; cobblestone (roads etc.)
	sampietrino (R1-2) paving stone (roads etc. in Rome)
kidney stone	**calcolo**
memorial stone	**lapide** (f) tablet; tombstone
gem	**gemma**

TO SAY, TO TELL, TO SPEAK, TO TALK

to say, to tell *The Italian verbs in this column are usu tr or followed by a declarative clause*		*to speak, to talk* *The Italian verbs in this column are intr (AUX **avere**), unless differently specified*	
to say, to tell (gen)	**dire**	*to speak, to talk*	**parlare** (ALSO = to give a speech/ talk); tr with languages, e.g. **parlare il francese**
to tell (stories, past events)	**raccontare** to tell, to narrate	*to express oneself*	**esprimersi** (R2-3)
	narrare (R2-3) to narrate, to tell (esp stories)		**pronunciarsi** (R2-3) to express one's opinion
to tell (to blab)	**spiattellare** (R1) to blab	*to converse, to discuss*	**conversare** (R2-3) to talk, to converse
	spifferare (R1) to blab, to spill the beans		**discorrere** (R2-3) to talk, to converse
to state, to maintain	**dichiarare** to declare		**dialogare** (R2-3) to converse, to hold a dialogue
	sostenere to maintain		**discutere** (also tr) to discuss, to debate
	affermare (R2-3) to state		
	asserire (R3) to assert		
to report	**riferire** to report, to tell		
to announce	**annunciare**	*to chat*	**chiacchierare**
to proclaim	**proclamare** (R2-3)		**confabulare** (R2-3) to talk/to chat in secret (usu ironic)
to admit, to confess	**ammettere** to admit		
	confessare to confess	*to talk idly, to gossip*	**cianciare** (R1), **cicalare** (R1) to talk idly, to chatter
to utter	**pronunciare** to utter, to pronounce		**ciarlare** (R1) to chat idly, to gossip
	proferire (R3) to utter, to pronounce (solemnly)		**spettegolare** (R1) to gossip
	articolare (R3) to utter, to articulate	*to talk nonsense*	**blaterare** (R1-2) (also tr) to talk nonsense in a noisy way
to recite	**recitare** to recite; ALSO (intr) to act		**farneticare** (R2-3) to talk nonsense; ALSO (lit) to be delirious
	declamare (R3) to declaim		
to explain	**spiegare** to explain		**straparlare** (R1) to rave, to talk wildly
	esporre (R2-3) to expound, to explain		

NOTE the following R2-3 expressions:
to give a talk = **tenere una conferenza**
to give a speech = **fare** (R2)/**pronunciare** (R2-3) **un discorso**
to start to speak, to take the floor = **prendere la parola**

SEAT

abstract	
place where one can sit	**posto** place (gen), seat (theater, cinema, train, plane, school etc.); ALSO **posto a sedere** as opposed to **posto in piedi**
place where sth is located	**sede** (f) seat, headquarters, main office; also fig **la sede dell'intelletto** the seat of intellect **centro** center, seat
electoral district	**seggio** seat; polling station (**seggio** (**elettorale**)); ALSO (R3, concrete, also fig) chair/throne of person in authority
concrete = object on which one can sit	
general	**sedile** (m) any object used to sit on; bench, seat, esp in means of transportation (car seat etc); part of a chair where one sits
specific seats	
bench	**panca** long seat, bench (gen, but not fig in sport) **panchina** bench, usu outdoors, e.g. park, station etc; also fig in sport **banco** bench, usu indoors and for specific purposes: pew, desk (for students in classrooms), dock (**banco degli imputati**), jury-box (**banco della giuria**), members' seats in parliament (**banchi dei deputati**); ALSO long table, counter; bank.
chair	**sedia**, **sèggiola** (Tuscan, less common)
armchair	**poltrona**; ALSO stall (theater); comfortable seat in gen (cinema etc)
deck-chair	**sedia a sdraio**, **sdraio** (f R1-2)
highchair	**seggiolone** (m)
small chair	**seggiolino** small chair/seat (esp for children); pilot seat (**seggiolino eiettabile** = ejector seat)
important seats	**trono** throne
	seggio (R3) seat/throne of person in authority
	scanno (R3) stall, seat in solemn places, e.g. parliament, church (choir)
	scranno/scranna (R3) high-backed chair (e.g. of judges)
other seats	**strapuntino** folding seat (car, train, cinema)
	gradinata (usu pl **gradinate**) tier(s) of seats in a stadium
	sella saddle and other seats one sits astride on, e.g. motorbicycle, bicycle (also **sellino** = bicycle seat)
stool	**sgabello**, **panchetto** (less specific)
NOTE : "seat" in garments = **fondo** (lit = bottom)	

SERVANT

Some of the Italian terms may sound offensive if used out of an appropriate context.

<table>
<tr><td rowspan="8">lower
↑
perceived social standing
↓
higher</td><td colspan="3">schiavo/-a slave (also fig)</td></tr>
<tr><td colspan="3">sguattero/-a (R2-3) scullery boy/maid, dishwasher (also derogatory)</td></tr>
<tr><td colspan="3">servo/-a servant (also fig and derogatory); NOTE servitù = servants, household staff, BUT ALSO (R2-3) servitude, slavery</td></tr>
<tr><td colspan="3">servitore servant (servitrice is less common)</td></tr>
<tr><td>domestico/-a (R2-3) (household) servant

cameriere/-a (house) (household) servant/ (house)maid</td><td>donna/uomo (less common) delle pulizie cleaning lady/cleaner</td><td>donna/persona di servizio maid/servant;
personale (m) (di servizio) = staff
NOTE: uomo di servizio is not used</td></tr>
<tr><td>cameriere/-a (hotel) manservant/ (chamber)maid (restaurant) waiter/waitress</td><td>colf (f, short for collaboratrice familiare) (household) helper, housemaid</td><td>inserviente (m/f R2-3) attendant (gen in hospitals, hotels etc)</td></tr>
<tr><td colspan="3">governante (f R2-3) housekeeper; nanny</td></tr>
<tr><td colspan="3">maggiordomo butler</td></tr>
<tr><td colspan="4">NOTE: there is no exact equivalent of "civil servant" in Italian:
funzionario statale/dello stato State official (generic);
impiegato statale State employee (generic, usu not at a high level);
buròcrate (m) bureaucrat (often with negative "red tape" overtones)</td></tr>
</table>

SHOE, BOOT

general	
calzatura (R2-3, term used in official communications in preference to **scarpa**) footwear, shoe	
specific	
shoe (gen)	**scarpa**
moccasin	**mocassino** (usu slip-on shoe, without laces)
sport shoe	**scarpa da tennis** tennis shoe; ALSO (in gen) training shoe, trainer
	scarpa da ginnastica training shoe, trainer (for specific sports, **scarpa da** + sport)
open shoe	**infradito** (m/f) flip-flop (UK), thong (Aus)
	sàndalo sandal
	zòccolo clog
boot (high)	**stivale** (m) knee-high boot, usu leather (horse riding etc.) or rubber (Wellington boot (UK), gumboot (Aus)); **lo Stivale** = the Italian peninsula, Italy
low boot	**stivaletto** ankle-high boot (in a variety of materials)
heavy boot	**scarpone** (m) heavy ankle-high boot, esp for skiing
light boot for sport	**scarpa da**..., e.g. **scarpa da calcio** = football boot
slipper	**pantòfola**
	ciabatta slipper or worn-out shoe used at home; (fig) old and worn-out thing
	pianella flat slipper
	babbuccia slipper (not common); knitted footwear (usu in wool) for newborn baby; (R3) babouche
galosh	**caloscia** (**galoscia**), **soprascarpa**
NOTE: horse-shoe = **ferro di cavallo**	

TO SHOOT (*see also* GUN)

with a weapon	
to fire a weapon (at sb/sth)	**sparare** (**a qu/qc**) (also fig) **fare fuoco** (R2-3) (**contro qu/qc**)
to shoot sb	**ferire/uccidere** (**a colpi di pistola/fucile/arma da fuoco** [R2-3] etc.) to wound/kill (with a handgun/rifle/fire-weapon etc.) **fucilare**, **passare per le armi** (R2-3) to execute by shooting
to shoot oneself	**spararsi**
to shoot down (sb/sth)	**abbattere** (**qu/qc**) to shoot down (esp planes), to kill
to shoot (sport)	**tirare** (**a qc**); shooting range = **polìgono di tiro** NOTE: **sparo** usu refers to the noise of the shot; **tiro** usu refers to its length, accuracy etc.
to hunt	**andare a caccia** (**di qc**) (ALSO [fig.] = to look for sb/sth); **cacciare** (R2-3, less common)
with a ball (sport)	
to kick/throw (a ball)	**tirare**, **fare un tiro**
to shoot a goal	**fare** (**un**) **gol**, **segnare** (**un gol/una rete**) (football etc.); **fare** (**un**) **canestro** (basketball)
with a camera	
photo	**fotografare** to photograph **fare fotografie** (R1-2), **scattare fotografie** (R2-3) to shoot photos
movie	**filmare** (**qc**), **riprendere** (**qc**) to film sth **girare** (**un film**) to shoot (a film)
figurative	
to shoot heroin	**farsi le pere** (R1)
NOTE: some fig meanings of "to shoot" (= to do sth fast and/or suddenly), can be translated in Italian by the verb indicating the action modified by an appropriate adverb, such as **velocemente**, **all'improvviso** etc.	

SHOP, STORE

<table>
<tr><td colspan="5">large shop, store (large variety of goods, with a large staff)</td></tr>
<tr><td rowspan="4">smaller
↕
larger</td><td colspan="2">bazar (m) [bad'dzar] messy store with a large variety of goods; bazaar</td><td colspan="2">emporio (R2-3) large store with a large variety of goods</td></tr>
<tr><td colspan="4">supermercato, supermarket (m) supermarket, selling mainly food, drinks (including spirits), and household consumable goods</td></tr>
<tr><td colspan="4">grande magazzino (usu pl) (R2-3) department store, usu called by its proper name (e.g. la Rinascente)</td></tr>
<tr><td colspan="4">ipermercato, ipermarket (m) hypermarket, very large supermarket, also selling furniture, electrical goods etc., usu situated on main roads, in the outskirts of cities</td></tr>
<tr><td colspan="5">small shop (small variety of goods, with a small staff)</td></tr>
<tr><td>R1</td><td>R2</td><td>R3</td><td colspan="2">shopkeeper</td></tr>
<tr><td colspan="3">negozio
shop (gen)</td><td colspan="2">negoziante (m/f)</td></tr>
<tr><td colspan="3">bottega
small and usu specialized shop; ALSO workshop
NOTE: the noun has an overtone of subdued simplicity, but is today often used to name small but glitzy establishments</td><td colspan="2">bottegaio/-a (R2-3) (only for low-key shops)</td></tr>
<tr><td colspan="3">spaccio
small shop (usu food, drinks and household goods)
ALSO spaccio aziendale, the shop set up by a (small) factory, processing plant etc., to sell directly to the public</td><td colspan="2">NOTE:
spacciatore/ spacciatrice
usu drug dealer</td></tr>
<tr><td rowspan="3"></td><td colspan="2">boutique (f) [bu'tik]
boutique, up-market shop (clothes, accessories etc.)</td><td colspan="2"></td></tr>
<tr><td colspan="2">rivendita (di generi alimentari)
small food shop</td><td colspan="2">rivenditore/ rivenditrice
retailer (gen)</td></tr>
<tr><td></td><td>punto vendita
outlet (commercial)</td><td colspan="2"></td></tr>
<tr><td></td><td></td><td>esercizio commerciale
shop (bureaucratic)</td><td colspan="2">esercente (m/f R3)</td></tr>
</table>

TO SHOW

to make sb see sth	
general	**fare vedere** (**qc a qu**)
	mostrare (**qc a qu**)
to point to/at	**indicare** to indicate, to point to; to denote **additare** (R2-3) to point to/at
to point out	**segnalare** (R2-3) to point out
to explain	**spiegare** to explain
to display	
to give proof (of sth)	**dimostrare** (**qc**) to demonstrate, to prove; to show, to display **dare prova** (**di qc**) (R2-3) (usu persons as S) to show, to display (esp personal qualities)
to manifest	**manifestare** (R2-3) (usu person as S), to manifest, to display (feelings etc.) **palesare** (R3) (usu person as S) to manifest, to make known
to present	**presentare** (person or thing as S) to present, to offer; (person as S) to show, to produce (esp documents); to introduce
to put on display	**esporre** to display (concrete objects, e.g. goods for sale, art in exhibitions, notices); ALSO (abstr.) to expound
to reveal, to denote	**rivelare** (thing as S) to reveal, to show, to display; (person as S) to disclose **denotare** (R2-3) (usu thing as S) to show, to denote **esibire** (R2-3) (also concrete, usu person as S) to exhibit, to display (qualities etc.), to show (off); to produce (documents)
to show off	**mettere in mostra** (also concrete) to display, to show (off) (no exaggeration implied) **ostentare** (R3) to show off, to flaunt (some exaggeration implied)

SIDE

general	
abstract or concrete	**lato** side (also fig and in polygons) NOTE the expressions: **da un lato… dall’altro** = on the one hand… on the other hand **di lato** = sideways
	parte (f) side (also fig, e.g. **da che parte stai?** = whose side are you on?); ALSO part, portion; direction, way; region NOTE the expressions (cf. section 25.5.5)**:** **da parte** = aside; **da una parte… dall’altra** = on the one hand… on the other hand; **d’altra parte** = on the other hand (BUT **dall’altra parte** = on the other side)
usu concrete	**fianco** side, flank (of human/animal bodies and things in general) NOTE the expressions: **di fianco** = sideways; **a fianco** (**di qu**/**qc**) = next to sb/sth; **fianco a fianco** = side by side
specific	
car etc.	**fiancata** (whole) side (car, building, piece of furniture etc.)
coin, medal	**faccia** side; face (solid geometry)
edge (gen)	**bordo** (e.g. **sul bordo della strada** = on the side/edge of the road)
	margine (m) margin, edge
of river, lake etc	**sponda** bank, shore; ALSO the edge of a bed and any side of a billiard/pool table
	riva bank, shore
of road	**banchina** (R3)
mountain	**parete** (f) mountainside, face
	versante (m R2-3) hillside, mountainside
page	**facciata** one of the two sides of a page; ALSO façade (building)
team	**squadra**
other common expressions with “side”	
from all sides	**da tutte le parti**; (fig) **da tutti i punti di vista**
offside (sport)	**fuorigioco**/**fuori gioco**
on every side	**da tutte le parti**; (= everywhere) **dappertutto**, **ovunque**, **dovunque**
on the side	**come attività extra**, **in più** (both expressions R1-2)

SMELL

<table>
<tr><td colspan="2">pleasant</td><td>unpleasant</td></tr>
<tr><td colspan="3">odore
smell (also fig)</td></tr>
<tr><td colspan="3">sentore (R3)
smell, scent (also fig: avere sentore di qc = to get wind of sth)</td></tr>
<tr><td colspan="2">general</td><td>general</td></tr>
<tr><td colspan="2" rowspan="2">profumo
(somewhat stronger than buon odore)
beautiful smell, scent (esp flowers, herbs, soap etc., but also food, wine etc.); ALSO perfume</td><td>puzza/puzzo (R1-2)
stench, stink</td></tr>
<tr><td>cattivo odore
unpleasant smell (polite)</td></tr>
<tr><td colspan="2" rowspan="2">buon odore
nice smell (formal)</td><td>specific</td></tr>
<tr><td rowspan="3">afrore (R3)
acrid smell, esp of fermenting grapes, sweat etc.</td></tr>
<tr><td colspan="2" rowspan="2">fragranza (R2-3)
delicate scent, fragrance (esp flowers, perfumes etc., but also food)</td></tr>
<tr><td rowspan="2">esalazione (pestilenziale) (R2-3)
unhealthy stench coming from swamps, chemicals etc.</td></tr>
<tr><td colspan="2">specific</td><td rowspan="2">fetore (R2-3)
strong nauseating stench (e.g. corpses)</td></tr>
<tr><td rowspan="2">food</td><td>odorino/profumino (R1-2)
(usu) nice smell of (cooked) food</td></tr>
<tr><td rowspan="2">aroma (m)
aroma (coffee, wine, herbs etc)</td><td>lezzo (R3)
stench, esp from filthy things/animals/persons</td></tr>
<tr><td>wine</td><td rowspan="2">miasma (m R3)
stench coming from putrescent organisms, esp in swamps etc.</td></tr>
<tr><td>wine</td><td>bouquet (R3) [bu'kɛ]
bouquet</td></tr>
<tr><td>other</td><td>olezzo, effluvio (both R3 poetic)
scent (not food)</td><td>tanfo (R2-3)
stench, esp stuffy, musty, mouldy smell</td></tr>
<tr><td colspan="2" rowspan="4">NOTE: all the terms in this column can be used ironically in R1 to mean a bad smell</td><td>zaffata (R1-2)
whiff</td></tr>
<tr><td>particular smells</td></tr>
<tr><td>odore (R2)/puzza (R1-2) di muffa
musty/mouldy smell</td></tr>
<tr><td>odore (R2)/puzza (R1-2) di chiuso
stuffy smell</td></tr>
<tr><td colspan="2"></td><td>odore (R2)/puzza (R1-2) di sudore
body odor</td></tr>
</table>

TO STEAL, TO ROB

	R1	R2	R3
to steal sth	**rubare** (**qc a qu**) to steal (sth from sb)		
	scippare qc (**a qu**) to snatch on the run (usu from a motorcycle) sth (esp handbag) (from sb)		
	portare via qc (**a qu**) to take away (gen)		
	arraffare (quickly) to grab, to snatch, to pinch		**trafugare** to steal, to filch
	fregare qc (**a qu**) (R1*-1) to pinch (from sb); ALSO to trick (sb = **qu**)	**appropriarsi** (**di qc**) to steal, to misappropriate (sth); ALSO to appropriate	
	fare sparire to steal, to pinch	**sottrarre** (**qc a qu**) to steal, to remove (sth from sb)	
	grattare to steal	**razziare** (**qc**), **fare razzìa** (**di qc**) to steal sth (by raid, esp livestock, food); ALSO to raid (a place)	
	sgraffignare to pinch (with sleight of hand, often used jokingly)	**estorcere** (**qc a qu**) to extort, to wrest (not only valuables, by means of force, threat, deception etc)	
	soffiare to pinch (e.g. boyfriend, parking spot, but usu not valuables)		**frodare** (**qc a qu**) (usu money) to steal by fraud (sth from sb); ALSO to swindle (**qu di qc** = sb out of sth)
to steal sb	**rapire qu** to kidnap (sb)	**sequestrare qu** to kidnap (sb); ALSO to confiscate (**qc** = sth)	
to rob a place	**rapinare qc** (less common **qu**) to rob (usu establishments, e.g. bank, esp at gun point)		
	svaligiare to rob, to clean out, to burgle (house, safe, establishments etc.)		
	ripulire qc (less common **qu**) to clean out (sth, e.g. safe, flat)		**depredare** (**qc**) to plunder (a place); ALSO to rob sb (**qu**)
		saccheggiare (**un luogo**) to sack, to plunder, to loot (a place)	
to rob sb	**derubare qu** to rob sb		
	scippare qu to rob sb on the run		
	spennare qu to fleece (not necessarily unlawful; a degree of naivety is implied in the victim)	**borseggiare qu** (**di qc**) to pick (sth from sb's) pocket (bag etc.)	
		spogliare qu/un luogo di qc to strip, to clean out sb/a place of sth	

pole, post	**palo** pole, post (also goal post in football etc.), not only wood, usu stuck in the ground	
	pertica long and thin pole (also in the gymnasium), perch (also measurement), usu wood; also fig (R1) tall person, bean pole	
	asta thin pole, not only wood, eg **asta della bandiera** = flagpole; (sport) **salto con l'asta** = pole vault; rod (curtains)	
bar	**sbarra** bar, barrier (usu metal, but also wood etc.), used esp to restrict access to places or to limit freedom (e.g. in cages, railway crossings)	
	spranga cross-bar (usu metal) used to lock doors; ALSO bar used as a (street) weapon	
	stanga long bar (usu wood), with rectangular/square cross-section; often fig (R1) tall person, bean pole	
	barra (R2-3) bar, esp on boats (helm); also bar of (precious) metal; **barra di uranio** = rod/bar of uranium; BUT cross bar (sport) = **traversa**	
cudgel	**mazza** bludgeon, cudgel, mace (ancient weapon); mace, baton (ceremonial/symbolic); walking stick (less common than **bastone**); ALSO (sport): club (golf), bat (cricket, baseball), stick (hockey)	
	manganello cudgel, truncheon	
	clava club (usu prehistoric weapon, made of wood)	
	randello big stick for hitting (esp people), cudgel, truncheon (usu wood)	
	sfollagente (m) (short) baton used by police	
slat	**stecca** (gen) slat, thin rod (usu wood), often used for structural support in corsets (whalebone), umbrellas (rib), shutters or fans (slat), with fractured limbs (splint), in sails; ALSO picket (in a gate); billiard cue	
stake, peg	**paletto** small post, stake (in fences, to support plants etc.)	
	picchetto picket, stake; tent-peg	
	piolo peg (usu wood, cylindrical; to hang coats etc.); picket; rung (on a ladder)	
stick	**bastone** (m) stick (gen, also for hitting persons/animals); walking stick; ALSO hockey stick (**bastone/mazza da hockey**)	
	canna reed; rod, esp **canna da pesca** = fishing rod; walking stick, cane (less common than **bastone**); ALSO cross-bar (bicycle); barrel (fire-arms); pipe (organ); flue (chimney)	
	verga (R2-3) small cane or thin, flexible branch, also for hitting persons/animals	
small	**bastoncino** small stick (in icecreams etc); ALSO **bastoncino di pesce** = fish finger, fish stick	
	bacchetta small stick (also used for beating at school); wand (e.g. **bacchetta magica** = magic wand); baton (orchestra conductor)	
other	drumstick (drums)	**bacchetta** (**di tamburo**)
	(chicken leg)	**coscia di pollo**
	joystick (planes)	**cloche** (f) [klɔʃ] (R2-3), **barra di comando** (R3)
	(videogames)	**joystick** (m) [dʒɔistik]
	stick of dynamite	**candelotto di dinamite**
twig	**ramoscello** (**secco**) (dry) twig	
	stecco dry, leafless twig, small stick; fig (R1) very skinny person	
	sterpo (R2-3) dry, leafless twig; withered thornbush, often pl (= scrub)	

STORM

general	
temporale (m) thunderstorm (usu brief and localized, with wind, rain, and often hail)	
	bufera storm, esp with strong winds, often with snow (blizzard)
	burrasca storm, esp at sea
	fortunale (m R2-3) storm, esp with strong winds
perturbazione (R2-3) meteorological disturbance (in official weather forecast)	
procella (R3 literary) storm	
weaker ← → *stronger*	
specific	
rain	**pioggia** rain
	acquazzone (m) sudden short downpour
	diluvio heavy rain (usu causing floods), deluge, also fig; NOTE: **il diluvio universale** = the Flood
	rovescio (R2-3) sudden and very short downpour, shower
	scroscio (**di pioggia**) (R2-3) sudden and very short shower, downpour of pelting rain; NOTE: **scroscio** refers to the noise of falling water and also, fig, of applause etc.
	nubifragio (R3) cloudburst, downpour (often causing floods)
hail	**grandinata** hailstorm
snow	**nevicata** snowfall, snowstorm
	bufera (**di neve**), **tormenta** snowstorm (with high winds), blizzard
wind	**bufera** (**di vento**) windstorm, gale
	mulinello small whirlwind; ALSO whirlpool
	tornado tornado
	tromba d’aria tornado, whirlwind; NOTE: **tromba marina** = waterspout
	tùrbine (m R2-3) whirlwind
other: cyclone	**ciclone** (m R2-3); fig (R1-2) very active person, dynamo
hurricane	**uragano** also fig, e.g. **uragano di proteste**
typhoon	**tifone** (m R2-3) (China Sea or NW Pacific)

STRING

general				
	cavo cable	**corda** rope	**spago** twine, string	
	fune (f R2-3) rope	**cordone** (m) **cordicella** **cordoncino** thin rope	**filo** thread, wire; **filo di perle** = string of pearls	
			refe (m R2-3) thread for sewing	
thick ← → *thin*				
specific				
lace, tie	**laccio** lace, tie (gen)	**stringa** lace (usu shoes)	**legaccio** (R2-3) strap, tie, lace	
G string	**perizoma** (m)			
hamstring	**tendine** (m) **del ginocchio** (humans)/**garretto** (animals)			
wire cord	**corda** (in bows, musical instruments etc.); the strings (mus.) = **gli archi**			
figurative				
series (gen)	**serie** (f) series (gen)	**filza** (R2-3)/**sfilza** (long) series (also of insults)	**sequela** (R2-3) series (esp of bad things)	
chain	**catena** chain (of events, of hotels, shops etc.; also of mountains)			
of bits	**stringa** (**di bit/caratteri**) (R3) string of bits/characters (computers etc.)			
of onions	**treccia** string (of onions, garlic); lit = plait, braid	**filza** (R2-3) string (of onions, garlic, sausages etc.)	**resta** (R3) string of onions/garlic	
line (gen)	**fila**, **coda** row, line, queue			
moving line	**carovana** caravan (also of vehicles)	**colonna** column (of vehicles, persons)		
	corteo procession; motorcade	**processione** procession (usu persons)	**sfilata** parade (fashion etc); (fig) long line (of cars, houses etc.)	
conditions	**condizioni** (f pl) (**vincolanti** [R3]), **vìncoli** (m pl R2-3)			

STUPID, IDIOT of persons

- The feminine ending of the nouns is indicated if it exists.
- The literal meaning of words used figuratively (for "idiot" or "stupid") has been indicated (in italics, if obsolete or uncommon).
- Although the frequency of use of some of the terms may vary from region to region, those that have been highlighted are frequently heard throughout Italy.
- All the Italian nouns in this table can be used as direct insults.

R	Italian word	n or adj	f	lit meaning	usu meaning
1*	**coglione**	usu n (m)	**-a**	testicle	testicle; idiot
	cazzone	usu n (m)	**-a**	big penis	idiot (Center)
	pirla	n (m)		penis (North)	idiot (North)
1*-1	**minchione**	usu n (m)	**-a**	*big penis* (South)	idiot (Center, South)
	bìschero	usu n	**-a**	*penis* (Tuscany)	idiot (Tuscany)
1	**babbeo**	usu n	**-a**		blockhead, sucker
	baccalà	n (m)		stockfish	idiot
	bietolone	usu n (m)	**-a**	*big beet*	simpleton (Tuscany)
	deficiente	usu n (m/f)		(mentally) deficient	idiot
	fesso	usu n	**-a**	*cracked* (referring to female genitals)	idiot (R1*-1 South)
	gonzo	usu n	**-a**		sucker, fool
	grullo	n/adj			simpleton (Tuscany)
	mammalucco	usu n	**-a**	*Mamluk*	(childish) simpleton
	merlo	n	**-a**	blackbird	sucker
	oca	n (f)		goose	fool (esp girl, woman)
	rimbambito	n/adj			imbecile, dotard
	salame	n (m)		salami	idiot
	scimunito	usu n	**-a**		nitwit, dotard
	testone	usu n (m)	**-a**	big head	fathead, thickhead
	tonto	usu n	**-a**		dope
	zuccone	usu n (m)	**-a**	*big pumpkin/head*	fathead, thickhead

R	Italian word	n or adj	f	lit meaning	usu meaning
1-2	**allocco**	m	**-a**	*tawny owl*	dunce, idiot
	baggiano	usu n	**-a**		fool (esp North)
	balordo	n/adj			idiot; silly
	beota	usu n (m/f)		*Boeotian*	(uncommon) idiot; silly
	citrullo	usu n	**-a**		idiot, numskull; silly
2	**cretino**	n/adj			cretin; stupid
	idiota	usu n (m/f)			idiot; idiotic
	imbecille	n/adj			imbecil; stupid
	scemo	n/adj			fool; silly
	semplicione	usu n (m)	**-a**		simpleton
	stupido	n/adj			idiot; stupid
2-3	**duro** (**di comprendonio**)	adj		hard of understanding	slow-witted
	èbete	n/adj			idiot; obtuse
	mentecatto	usu n (m)	**-a**	insane	lunatic; fool, idiot
	poco intelligente	adj			not very intelligent
	sciocco	n/adj			fool; silly
3	**insensato**	usu adj			senseless
	insulso	adj			dull, insipid
	ottuso	adj		obtuse (of angles)	obtuse
	stolido	adj			foolish
	stolto	n/adj			fool; foolish

STUPID of things

The adjectival use of most of the Italian expressions in the above table is often possible in theory, but in actual terms rather infrequent. With things it appears to be even more limited than with persons. In many cases the adjectives are only found in connection with words relating to sb's expression (e.g. **sguardo**, **espressione**, **aria** etc.). The most common adjectives meaning "stupid" and the "things" with which they tend to be used are listed in the following table.

R	adjective	things usu associated
1	**babbeo**	look, expression
	deficiente	look, expression
	fesso	idea
	rimbambito	expression
	scimunito	expression
	tonto	expression
1-2	**balordo**	idea, action, look, expression, speech
	beota	look, expression
2	**cretino**	idea, action, behavior, expression, speech, joke (verbal and practical)
	idiota	idea, action, behavior, look, expression, speech, joke (verbal and practical)
	imbecille	look, expression
	scemo	joke (verbal)
	stupido	idea, action, behavior, look, expression, speech, word, joke (verbal and practical) etc.
2-3	**èbete**	look, expression
	poco intelligente	idea, action, behavior, look, expression, speech etc.
	sciocco	idea, behavior, speech, word, joke (esp verbal)
3	**insensato**	idea, action, behavior, speech, word
	insulso	idea, action, behavior, speech, word, joke (verbal)
	ottuso	look, expression

TO TAKE, TO BRING, TO CARRY (*see also* TO GET HOLD OF)

<table>
<tr><td colspan="4">to take "to"</td></tr>
<tr><td>general</td><td colspan="3">portare
to take, to bring, to carry; to lead, to guide, to accompany</td></tr>
<tr><td>to carry</td><td>avere con sé
to have with oneself, to take</td><td>trasportare
to transport</td><td>recare (R3)
to bear (e.g. gifts, news)</td></tr>
<tr><td rowspan="3">to lead</td><td colspan="2">accompagnare
to accompany</td><td>condurre
to drive, to lead, to take/bring (persons)</td></tr>
<tr><td colspan="2">guidare
to guide</td><td rowspan="2">menare (Tuscany)
to take (persons, animals); NOTE: outside Tuscany, mostly found in idiomatic expressions (with this meaning)</td></tr>
<tr><td colspan="2">scortare (R2-3)
to escort</td></tr>
<tr><td colspan="4">to take "in"</td></tr>
<tr><td>general</td><td colspan="3">prendere
to take (e.g. appunti (notes), medicine (medicines)); ALSO = to react to events etc. to receive, to get, to catch</td></tr>
<tr><td colspan="4">to take "from"</td></tr>
<tr><td rowspan="3">to take away, to take off</td><td colspan="2">portare via
to take away, to carry away</td><td>levare, togliere
to take off, to take away, to remove (from sth = da qc; from sb = a qu)</td></tr>
<tr><td colspan="2">sottrarre
(R2) to subtract (math.); (R2-3) to remove, to steal (from sth = da qc; from sb = a qu)</td><td>asportare (R3)
to take away, to remove (also surgically) (from sth = da qc; from sb = a qu)
rimuovere (R3)
to remove (also = to tow away)</td></tr>
<tr><td colspan="3">NOTE: take-away (of food) = da portar via/da asporto (R3)</td></tr>
</table>

TEACHER

<table>
<tr><td colspan="3">school/university teacher</td></tr>
<tr><td>kindergarten, primary school teachers
(asilo, scuola elementare)</td><td>secondary school teachers
(scuola media inferiore/superiore)</td><td>university teachers
(università)</td></tr>
<tr><td colspan="3">insegnante (m/f)
teacher (less common for university)</td></tr>
<tr><td colspan="3">docente (m/f R2-3)
teacher (gen), lecturer (most common for university); also adj, e.g.
il personale docente = the academic/teaching staff</td></tr>
<tr><td rowspan="2">maestro/-a
(d’asilo/di scuola)
teacher, also of music, martial arts etc; ALSO = master, also fig</td><td colspan="2">professore/professoressa
secondary school teacher, professor</td></tr>
<tr><td>prof (m/f R1, students’ jargon)
secondary school teacher</td><td>assistente (m/f)
(universitario/-a)
assistant lecturer</td></tr>
<tr><td></td><td colspan="2">ordinario (R2-3)
(full) professor (more common for university)</td></tr>
<tr><td></td><td></td><td>titolare (m/f R2-3)
cattedratico (R3)
professor (holder of a chair)</td></tr>
<tr><td></td><td></td><td>lettore/lettrice (R2-3)
lector, language tutor</td></tr>
<tr><td>direttore/direttrice</td><td>prèside (m/f)</td><td rowspan="2">rettore
chancellor</td></tr>
<tr><td colspan="2">capo d’istituto
headmaster/headmistress</td></tr>
<tr><td colspan="3">other</td></tr>
<tr><td colspan="2">istruttore/istruttrice
instructor (usu in practical activities, e.g. driving, flying, sailing)</td><td>istitutore/istitutrice (R2-3)
precettore (R3)
tutor (esp in the wealthy/noble families of old or in boarding schools)</td></tr>
<tr><td colspan="2">educatore/educatrice (R2-3)
educator, pedagogist</td><td>pedagogo (R3)
pedagogue; (literary) tutor</td></tr>
</table>

THIN (of people)

positive connotation	*usu negative connotation*	
magro slim, thin, skinny		
àgile agile, slender	**deperito** (R1-2) run-down, haggard	**smilzo** skinny
asciutto lean	**pelle e ossa** (R1-2) skin and bone	**denutrito** (R2-3) underfed
slanciato slender, tall and slim	**rinsecchito** (R1-2) skinny, gaunt	**scarno** (R2-3) lean, skinny
snello slender, slim	**sciupato** (R1-2) worn-out, skinny, haggard	**schelètrico** (R2-3) skeletal
	secco (R1-2) skinny	**segaligno** (R2-3) tall and skinny
	allampanato skinny, gaunt	**smunto** (R2-3) pale and emaciated, gaunt
	èsile slight, thin	**sparuto** (R2-3) puny, haggard
	gràcile puny	**emaciato** (R3) emaciated, haggard
	mingherlino thin and frail	**macilento** (R3) emaciated, skinny and weak

NOTE: **svelto** and **sottile** mean "thin," "slender" when referring to things; when referring to persons, they usu mean, respectively, "quick" and "sharp," "subtle"; e.g.:

una ragazza dalla corporatura svelta/sottile = a girl of slender build;
una ragazza svelta = a quick girl; **una ragazza sottile** = a subtle/sharp girl

TO THROW

aim usu involved
tirare to throw, to toss; ALSO to pull (see also TO SHOOT)
lanciare to fling, to throw, also fig (e.g. accusations), to launch (a rocket, a product, a star); to toss (a coin etc.)
no aim usu involved
buttare to throw (away), to toss, to fling **buttare via** = to throw away **buttare fuori** = to throw out NOTE: **buttare** (**giù**) **la pasta** (R1-2) = put the pasta in boiling water to cook it
gettare to throw (away), to toss, to cast; **gettare via** = to throw away; NOTE: **usa e getta** = disposable
scagliare (R2-3) to cast, to fling, to hurl (far away, often with violence), e.g. stones; also fig, e.g. insults
scaraventare (R2-3) to hurl, to fling (far away, often with violence)
proiettare (R3) to throw (forward), to cast, to project (esp lights, shadows); often in the passive (= to be thrown); ALSO (R2-3) to screen (films etc.)

TOOTH

dente (m) tooth (gen), also in saws, combs, cog-wheels (cog), forks and rakes (prong)	**zanna** tusk, long and protruding tooth in some large animals; sharp tooth of large meat-eating mammals, fang (BUT for snakes **dente** (**velenifero** [R3]) is more common)

TOP

top part			
general	**il** (**di**) **sopra** (R1-2) **la parte di sopra** (R1-2) **la parte superiore** (R2-3)		
of clothes	**giacca** jacket, top (e.g. pyjamas etc.)	**top** (m) sleeveless top, singlet (usu for women)	
	reggipetto/reggiseno bikini top (usu = brassiere)	(**il**) **pezzo di sopra** (R1-2) (the) top piece, bikini top	
surface	**superficie** (f) top, surface (of liquids etc.)		
cover			
lid, plug	**tappo** (it usu fits inside the opening it stops) cork, plug; also screw cap	**coperchio** (it usu sits on top of the opening it closes) lid, cover	**cappuccio** (it usu sits on and around the top or the tip of the object it covers) cap (esp pens); ALSO hood
roof	**tetto** roof (buildings, cars, trains etc.)	**capote** (f R2-3) [ka'pɔt] **ca**(**p**)**potta** soft top, hood (cars)	**palato** top of the mouth, roof of the mouth, palate
highest point			
general	**cima** top of trees, mountains, towers, skyscrapers etc. **da cima a fondo** = from top to bottom, from beginning to end **in cima a** = on top of, at the top of (e.g. pages) **in cima in cima** (R1-2) = on the very top		
	NOTE ALSO **dall'alto** (**di qc**) = from the top (of sth)		
of mountains	**cocùzzolo/cucùzzolo** (R1-2), **sommità** (R2-3), **vetta** (R2-3), **cresta** (R3) (also of waves) top, peak, summit		
of pages, lists	**principio**, **inizio** beginning		
	NOTE ALSO **a capopagina** = at the beginning of the page		
figurative			
apex	**colmo**, **cùlmine** (m R2-3), **vèrtice** (m R2-3), **àpice** (m R3), **apogeo** (R3) top, height, apex, climax		
best	**il massimo** (R1-2), **il top** (R1-2), **il/la migliore**, **il non plus ultra** (R2-3) the top, the best		

NOTE: the Italian translation of "top" used with an adjectival value before a noun usu expresses the ideas of "superficial", "highest" or "last" in a series of levels, and "best", e.g.:
the top layer of the earth's crust = **strato superficiale della crosta terrestre**
the top layer of a cake = **lo strato più alto** (or **l'ultimo strato**) **di un dolce**
the top level = (abstr.) **il livello più alto**; (= top floor) **l'ultimo piano**
the top player = **il giocatore migliore/più bravo**
BUT top spin = **top spin** (m) (or, more generically, **effetto** = spin of a ball)

TO TRY

to try + verb	
provare a + inf to try doing sth (usu as a means to achieve something else: the ability to perform the action expressed by the infinitive is not in question); to have a go at doing sth	**cercare di** + inf to try to do sth (usu as a goal in itself: the ability to perform the action expressed by the infinitive is in question); to strive to do sth
sforzarsi di + inf to try hard/to strive to do sth	**tentare di** + inf to attempt to do sth (usu implying little chance of succeeding)
fare del proprio meglio per + inf to try/do one’s best to do sth	**fare di tutto/fare il possibile per** + inf to do everything possible to do sth
vedere di + inf (R1-2) (only present, future and, less common, imperfect) to try to do sth, to try and do sth	

to try + noun	
to try sth	*to try sb*
provare qc to try sth (ALSO = to taste); to test sth (e.g. a car); to experience sth (esp feelings)	**provare con qu** to try (with) sb NOTE: **provare qu** (R2-3) = (in past tenses) to wear sb out
tentare qc to attempt sth	NOTE: **tentare qu** = to tempt sb
mettere alla prova qc (R2-3) to put sth to the test	**mettere alla prova qu** (R2-3) to try sb, to put sb to the test
giudicare (R2-3) to try (a legal case); ALSO (R2) to judge	**processare qu** to try sb (legally)
assaggiare qc to try food/wine, to taste sth	
collaudare qc (R2-3) to test sth, usu professionally (cars, planes etc.)	
sperimentare qc (R2-3) to try out sth; to test sth	

TO VISIT

<table>
<tr><th>persons</th><th>places</th></tr>
<tr><td>fare (una) visita a qu
to visit sb, to pay sb a visit, to call on sb</td><td rowspan="2">visitare
to visit (e.g. cities, museums etc.);
NOTE: visitare qu usu refers to doctors visiting/examining patients</td></tr>
<tr><td>passare da qu (AUX essere)
to call on sb, to go/come and see sb;
NOTE: with a place, it simply means to pass through, to go/come via that place</td></tr>
<tr><td>andare/venire a trovare qu (R1-2)
to (go/come and) visit sb, to call on sb</td><td>andare/venire a vedere
to visit (places, monuments etc.); ALSO to go/come and see (lit)</td></tr>
<tr><td colspan="2">fare un salto da qu (or a/in + place) (R1)
fare una scappata da qu (or a/in + place) (R1)
to drop in on sb, to dash to sb's place/somewhere</td></tr>
</table>

WALL

<table>
<tr><th>internal</th><th>external</th></tr>
<tr><td colspan="2">muro
wall (in its lit meaning usu implying construction); also fig, wall, barrier (e.g. muro di critiche/silenzio), wall-like structure, esp as a barrier (e.g. muro di ghiaccio/roccia)</td></tr>
<tr><td>parete (f)
wall, usu internal or seen from the inside, both man made (e.g. in houses, boxes) and natural (in caves, body parts etc); ALSO = mountainside</td><td>barriera
barrier; also fig, barrier, obstacle, wall (also in football)</td></tr>
<tr><td rowspan="3">(muro) divisorio (R2-3)
tramezzo (R2-3)
partition (wall)</td><td>muraglia
large wall, usu fortified, e.g. la (grande) muraglia cinese = the Great Wall of China</td></tr>
<tr><td>muraglione (m)
very large wall, often built for retaining purposes</td></tr>
<tr><td>muretto, muricciolo
low (boundary/enclosure) wall</td></tr>
</table>

WINDOW (see also GLASS)

in buildings	*in means of transportation*
finestra window	**finestrino** (side) window
portafinestra French window	**parabrezza** windscreen (usu car)
sportello office window, counter, teller	**lunotto** (R2-3) rear window (car)
vetrata large window, consisting of a number of glass panes inserted in a frame, esp stained-glass window (in churches etc.)	**oblò** (R2-3) porthole, round window on ships
vetrina shop window; ALSO glass-fronted cupboard, glass showcase	
rosone (m R3) rose-window	

WORK, JOB

general

lavoro
work (ALSO = piece of work), job, employment, occupation

job, employment

impiego job, position, post (usu "white collar"); employment; ALSO = use,	**occupazione** job; employment (unemployment = **disoccupazione**)	**posto** job, position, post **posto di lavoro** = job (in statistics etc.), e.g. **100 posti di lavoro** = 100 jobs

job to do, task, duty

commissione errand	**cómpito** task, duty; homework (usu pl)	**dovere** duty
faccenda job, e.g. **faccende domestiche/di casa** = housework; ALSO thing (to do), matter	**carica** (R2-3) office, position (usu official and important)	**incarico** (R2-3) task, assignment, charge; ALSO (important) post, usu temporary
funzione (R2-3) (often pl) function, position, duty	**incombenza** (R3) (important) duty, task	**mansione** (R3) (usu pl) duty, function
ufficio (R3) office		

job done, service, piece of work

opera piece of work	**servizio** service	**prestazione** (R2-3) (usu pl) services (often of professional people); ALSO performance

NOTE: **questa è opera tua** = this is your work (= you must have done this)
questo è compito tuo = this is your job (= this is what you have to do)

labor

fatica toil, labor, hard work; NOTE: **fare fatica** (**a fare qc**) = to struggle (to do sth)	**mano** (f) **d'opera** labor (gen, as a component of invoices etc.), e.g. **il costo della mano d'opera è alto** = labor costs are high

trade, profession, occupation

mestiere trade	**professione** profession	**attività** activity (gen), occupation, e.g. **svolgere un'attività** = to do something (as a job), to have an occupation

4 Complex verbal expressions

This chapter deals with common Italian verbs or verbal expressions that do not have a direct equivalent in English (see also chapter 6, "Idioms, similes, and proverbs").

4.1 Single English verbs corresponding to complex Italian expressions

English verb	Italian expression
to agree (with sb on sth)	**essere d'accordo** (**con qu su qc**)
to annoy sb	(usu) **dare fastidio a qu**
to blame sb/sth	**dare la colpa a qu/qc**
to borrow	**prendere in prestito**
to lend	**dare in prestito/prestare** NOTE: **chiedere in prestito** = to ask to borrow
to butt sb/sth	**dare una testata a qu/qc**; (for horned animals) **dare una cornata**
to compete (commercially)	**fare** (**la**) **concorrenza a qc/qu**
to drop sth (to let sth fall) to drop sth (to cause sth to fall)	**lasciare cadere qc** **fare cadere qc**
to feed sb	**dare da mangiare a qu** (people or animals) NOTE: for plants, **fertilizzare** – for things, **rifornire** (machines), **alimentare** (fires etc.)
to haggle (over sth)	**tirare sul prezzo** (**di qc**) (R1–2) ALSO **contrattare** (R2–3, used without object)
to hurt sb I have a headache my feet are hurting	**fare male a qu** **mi fa male la testa/ho mal di testa** **mi fanno male i piedi**

English verb	Italian expression
to kick sb/sth	**dare un calcio a qu/qc** (one kick) **prendere a calci qu/qc** (one or more kicks, usu with violence, anger etc.) NOTE: **calciare** (R2–3) (usu with things as DO) is uncommon and mostly restricted to sports like football (**calcio**), e.g. **calciare il pallone**
to listen to sb (= to listen to sb's advice) listen to me (= follow my advice)	**dare retta a qu** (R1–2) **dammi retta**
to lock (a door etc.)	**chiudere a chiave** (e.g. **una porta**) NOTE: to lock sb/sth somewhere = **rinchiudere qu/qc da qualche parte**
to miss sb/sth I miss you	**sentire la mancanza di qu/qc** **sento la tua mancanza** (OR **mi manchi** [from **mancare**])
to need sb/sth	**avere bisogno di qu/qc**
to nod to nod affirmatively	**accennare**, **fare un cenno col capo/con la testa** **accennare**, **fare cenno di sì col capo/con la testa**
to notice sb/sth, to attach importance to sb/sth	**fare caso a qu/qc** (R1–2)
not to notice sb/sth; to ignore sb/sth; not to worry about sb/sth	**non fare caso a qu/qc** (R1–2)
I didn't notice (it) don't worry (about it)/ignore it! think about it!	**non ci ho fatto caso** (R1–2) **non farci caso!** (R1–2) **facci caso!** (R1)
to punch sb/sth (with fists)	**dare un pugno a qu/qc**
to smack sb	**dare uno schiaffo a qu** (one smack) **prendere a schiaffi qc** (one or more smacks, usu with violence, anger etc.) NOTE: **schiaffeggiare** (R2–3) (= **prendere a schiaffi**) is less common
to smack a (child's) bottom	**sculacciare** (R1–2)
to starve	(tr) **far morire di fame qu** (ALSO lit = to starve sb to death); **affamare** is less common (intr) **morire di fame** (also fig); **avere una fame da lupo** (fig only)
to trip sb	**fare lo sgambetto a qu**, **fare inciampare qu**

4.2 Single Italian verbs corresponding to complex English expressions

Italian verb	English expression
accendere, **spegnere**	turn on/off, switch on/off BUT to turn on/off a tap = **aprire/chiudere un rubinetto**
addormentarsi	to go to sleep, to fall asleep
allunare	to land on the moon
ammalarsi	to become sick
ammarare	to land on water (esp the sea); to splash down
apparecchiare/sparecchiare (**la tavola**)	to set/to clear the table (for/after a meal)
appisolarsi	to nod off
approfittare di qc/qu	to take advantage of sth/sb NOTE: in Italian, as in English, the use of this verb with a person as object usually has a negative sexual connotation (= to seduce, to rape)
approfondire (**un argomento**)	to study (a topic) more in depth
degnarsi di + inf (ironic)	to be bothered to do sth, e.g. **non si è degnato di venire** = he couldn't be bothered coming
distare da qc/qu	to be far from sth/sb, e.g. **quanto dista casa tua dal centro?** = how far is your place from the town centre?
guardarsi (**bene**) **dal/dall'/dallo** + inf	to take (great) care not to do sth, e.g. **si è guardato bene dal venire** = he took great care/made a point not to come/of not coming
limitarsi a + inf	to do sth and no more: **si è limitata a guardarlo** = she only looked at him/it
pernottare (R2–3)	to spend the night (usu in relation to a location)
spiccare	to stand out
valere NOTE: **non vale!** (R1)	to be worth (with an expression of value), to be valuable; to be valid it's not fair!

4.3 Complex Italian expressions corresponding to complex English expressions
(cf. section 27.8)

Italian expression	English expression
andare a male (intr)	to go off (food, drinks)
avere a che fare con qu	to have sth to do with sb
avere ragione/torto **dare ragione a qu** **dare torto a qu**	to be right/wrong to agree with sb, to say that sb is right, to prove sb right (of events) to judge sb wrong, to say that sb is wrong, to prove sb wrong (of events)
fare a meno di qu/qc **non poter fare a meno di** + inf	to do without sb/sth not to be able to avoid doing sth
fare causa a qu (R1–2), **intentare un processo/una causa a/contro qu** (R2–3) ALSO quite common is **denunciare qu** (R1–2)	to take sb to court to sue sb
fare in modo che + subj **fare in modo/vedere** (R1–2) **di** + inf **farò in modo che tu ci sia** **farò in modo/vedrò di esserci** (cf. section 27.7)	to see that I shall see that you are there I shall see that I am there
farsi una colpa di qc	to feel guilty/responsible for/over sth **non fartene una colpa!** = don't feel guilty about it
mettersi/schierarsi (R2–3) **dalla parte di qu**	to take sb's side
tenere conto di qu/qc	to take sb/sth into account
tenere presente qc	to bear sth in mind
essere solito fare qc (R2–3) NOTE: the use of **solere** (R3, defective) is uncommon and usu restricted to some persons of the imperfect and the present tense (indic)	to be used to doing sth

4.4 Italian "impersonal" verbs

The verbs in this section are often referred to as "impersonal," since they are often used in the third person singular and appear to be lacking a subject. In fact, in those cases you will usually find that they have a whole clause as subject. For the student, the main difficulty with these verbs lies in their construction. Characteristically, for the majority of them, the Italian indirect object will correspond to the subject in English and, when applicable, the Italian subject will correspond to the direct object of the commonly used English equivalent, e.g. **mi** (IO) **piace la pizza** (S) = I (S) like PIZZA (DO). In the following table, the personally constructed English equivalents have been indicated in italics in square brackets, beside a more literal translation of the Italian verbs, whenever possible.

In the following table, only the meanings and uses relevant to the topic of this section have been taken into account. Different meanings and constructions may be possible, for some verbs, in different contexts.

When used as below, all the Italian verbs are intransitive and take **essere** as auxiliary.

andare a qu	to suit sb [*to feel like*]
non mi va	I don't feel like it
ti andrebbe un caffè?	would you (feel) like a coffee?
gli andava di uscire	he felt like going out
non mi andava che tu uscissi da sola	I didn't like the idea of you going out on your own
avanzare (**a qu**)	to be left over [*to have sth left over*]
avanzano 10 euro	There is ten euro left over
mi avanzano 10 euro	I have ten euro left over
ci è avanzato del pane	we have some bread left over
bastare (**a qu**)	to be enough
basta! basta così!	stop it/enough! that's enough!
(**mi**/**ti**/ . . .) **bastano 50 centesimi**	50 cents are enough (for me/you/ . . .)
non ti bastava vederlo?	wasn't it enough for you to see it?
ci basta che tu ti sia pentito	it is enough for us that you are sorry
non le sono bastati i soldi	she has run out of money
non le bastavano i soldi	she didn't have enough money
ALSO: **basta che** (R1–2)	provided that
basta che lui lo chieda	he only has to ask for it
te lo do: basta che te ne vai (R1) / **vada** (R1–2)	I'll give it to you if you go away
capitare (**a qu**)	to happen
gli capitò un fatto strano	a strange thing happened to him
BUT: **se capiti da queste parti**	if you happen to be around here
se ti capita di venire a Roma	if you happen to come to Rome
mi è capitato di sentirla ieri	I happened to hear (from) her yesterday

convenire	to be better [*to have to* and similar]
ci conviene farlo adesso	we'd better do it now
conviene che tu lo dica/ti conviene dirlo	it's better for you to say it/you'd better say it/you should say it
dispiacere	[*to be sorry*, *to mind*]
mi dispiace lasciarti qui	I am sorry to leave you here
ci è dispiaciuto che tu ti sia offeso	we were sorry that you took offence
ti dispiace chiudere la porta?	do you mind closing the door?
vi dispiace se me ne vado?	do you mind if I go?
importare	to be important, to matter [*to care*, *to mind*]
non importa	it doesn't matter
non m'importa/non me ne importa	I don't care
non importa che lui non ci sia/se lui non c'è (R1–2)	it doesn't matter that he is not here/if he's not here
t'importa che lui non ci sia/se lui non c'è (R1–2)**?**	do you care/mind if he's not here?
non c'importa di stancarci	we don't mind getting tired/we don't care if we get tired
t'importa di lui?	do you care about him?
che t'importa? (R1)	what do you care?

NOTE: without an indirect object this verb is mostly used in negative sentences: in affirmative contexts **essere importante** tends to be preferred.

mancare (**a qu**)	to be lacking, to be missed (by sb) [*to lack*, *to miss*, *to need*]
gli manca molto la mamma	he misses his mother very much
mi mancano dieci euro	I'm missing ten euro/I need an extra ten euro
le mancano tre pagine per finire	she has three pages to go
gli manca un pezzo	he's missing a piece
vi manca l'energia	you're lacking the energy
qui ci manca il sale (R1–2)	there is no (*or* not enough) salt here
a questo libro manca una pagina/in questo libro ci manca una pagina (R1–2)	this book is missing a page/there is a page missing from this book
mancare di qc (R2–3)	to lack sth
non manchi di nulla (R2–3, less common than **qui non ti manca nulla**)	you have everything
questo sugo manca di sale (R2–3, less common than **in questo sugo ci manca il sale** [R1–2])	this sauce lacks salt
occorrere (**a qu**)	to be necessary, to be needed (by sb) [*to need*, *to have to*]
vi occorre niente/qualcosa?	do you need anything?/anything you need?
non occorre che tu ci vada	it's not necessary for you to go (there)/you don't have to go (there)

piacere	to be pleasing [*to like*]
questo film mi piace	I like this movie
non ci piacciono i funghi	we don't like mushrooms
non le piace uscire	she doesn't like going out
non mi piace che tu rimanga qui	I don't like you remaining here
riuscire	to succeed, to manage to, to be able to
non riesco a correre	I can't run
sei riuscito a parlarle?	did you manage to speak to her?
BUT **non mi riesce di contattarlo**	I am not able to contact him
il solitario ci è riuscito	we've succeeded in (finishing) our game of patience
sembrare, **parere** (**a qu**)	(lit) to seem, to look (like) [*to think*]
mi sembravi/parevi un altro	you looked like someone else
pare/sembra che sia partito	it looks like he's left/he appears to have left
BUT **non mi sembra che lei ci sia**	I don't think she is here
mi pare di no	I don't think so
le è sembrato di vederlo	she thinks she saw him
le pare/sembra di averlo visto	she thinks she saw him (OR has seen him)
servire	to be needed [*to need*]
mi serve un cacciavite	I need a screwdriver
gli servivano più soldi (R1–2)	he/they needed more money

NOTE: in the compound tenses **servire** tends to mean "to be useful," "to use", e.g.:

ti sono serviti i miei appunti? = were my notes of any use to you?/did you find my notes useful?/did you use my notes?

toccare (**a qu**)	to be necessary [*to have to*]
mi è toccato rifarlo	I've had to do it again
ci tocca pagare	we have to pay

NOTE: **a chi tocca? tocca a me** = whose turn is it? it's my turn

4.5 Verbal expressions with la, ne, ci

Even though for some of the expressions given here a literal meaning may still be possible in suitable contexts, most of them are generally used idiomatically, whereby **la** and **ne** do not refer specifically to anything or anybody, and **ci** has no connotation of place.

NOTE that the idiomatic use of many of the following tends to be restricted to specific tenses.

4.5.1 Idiomatic verbal expressions with **la**

La is feminine singular and requires agreement where appropriate, e.g. **non ce la siamo sentita di venire** (= we didn't feel like coming); **lui non ce l'ha fatta** (= he didn't make it)

averla/avercela (R1–2) **con qu**	to be angry with sb
berla/bersela (R1–2)	to swallow (= to believe)
cavarsela (R1–2)	to scrape through; to be reasonably good (at sth), e.g. **a tennis se la cava** = s/he's not too bad at tennis
credersela (R1)	to think highly of oneself
darla a bere (R1–2)/**intendere**	to lead sb to believe sth
farcela (**a** + inf)	to make it, e.g. **non ce la faccio** = I can't do it; BUT **non ce la faccio più** = I am really tired; I can't go on any more
farla finita (R1) **farla finita** (R1–2)	to stop (doing sth), e.g. **falla finita!** = stop it! to commit suicide
farla/dirla grossa (R1–2) **farla franca** (R1–2)	to do/say a very stupid thing to get away (with sth)
farla lunga (R1)	to go on and on in an argument or discussion, e.g. **quanto la fai lunga!** = you go on and on . . .!
fidarsela (R1)	to feel up to sth
filarsela/squagliarsela/svignarsela/battersela (all R1)	to run away, to flee
finirla/smetterla (**di** + inf) (both R1 –2)	to stop (doing sth), e.g. **smettetela!** = stop it!; **finitela di litigare!** = stop arguing!
intendersela (**con qu**) (R1–2)	to have a secret understanding/affair (with sb)
passarla bella/brutta (R1–2) **passarsela** (R1)	to get through a bad experience to be (doing), e.g. **come te la passi?** how are you doing?
piantarla (**di** + inf) (R1)	to stop doing sth, e.g. **piantala!** = stop it!
prendersela (**con qu**)	to get cross (with sb)
saperla lunga	to know a thing or two
scamparla (**bella**) (R1–2)	to have a narrow escape
sentirsela (**di** + inf) (R1–2)	to feel up to sth/like sth
tirarla per le lunghe (R1–2)	to take too long a time over sth
vedersela (**con qu**)(R1–2)	to deal with sb, e.g. **con te me la vedo più tardi** = I'll deal with you later; **véditela tu!** = you sort it out/see what you can do!
vedersela brutta	to feel all is lost

4.5.2 Idiomatic verbal expressions with **ne**

NOTE that **ne** is used with a locative value in **andarsene**, **tornarsene**, **uscirsene** and **starsene** (*starsene da parte*, *starsene per conto proprio* etc. seem to have an element of distance from something). In **non poterne più** and **importarsene**, **ne** has a more or less generic genitive value.

andarsene	to go away
non poterne più	to have had enough (of sth/sb)
importarsene NOTE: **infischiarsene** (R1*-1), **fregarsene** (R1*), **fottersene** (R1*) are much less polite alternatives	to care (about sth/sb), esp negative or interrogative, e.g.: **non me ne importa un fico secco** (R1) = I couldn't care less **chi se ne importa?** (R1–2) = who cares?
starsene	to stay, to be
tornarsene in qualche luogo	to go back somewhere
uscirsene	to go out; ALSO (R1–2) to say something unexpectedly, e.g.: **se n'è uscito dicendo che** . . . = he came out saying that . . . **se n'è uscito con una parolaccia** = he came out with a swear word
volerne a qu (R2–3)	to hold it against sb, e.g. **non me ne volere** = don't hold it against me

4.5.3 Idiomatic verbal expressions with **ci**

In some of the following expressions, the originally locative **ci** is used with the value "for it," "about it," or "to it." This indirect pronominal use of **ci** is quite common in many Italian dialects and regional varieties, where it is often extended to people (**che ci hai fatto, a tuo fratello?** [R1] = what did you do to your brother?) (cf. section 16.2).

andarci matto (R1)	to be crazy for it
averci (R1)	to have, to own
badarci	to care about sth, e.g. **non ci badare** = don't worry about it
contarci	to count on sth, e.g. **ci contavo** = I was counting on it
crederci	to believe sth, e.g. **non ci credo** = I don't believe it

entrarci	to have to do with sth, e.g. **che c'entra?** = what's it got to do with it?
mancarci	to be lacking (fig and ironically), e.g. **ci mancava solo questa!** = (ironic) that's all we needed!; **ci manca** (**mancherebbe**) **soltanto che piova** (**piovesse**)**!** = let's only hope it doesn't rain!; **ci mancherebbe** (**altro**)**!** = that would be the limit, of course, not at all; **c'è mancato poco!** = that was close!; **ci manca poco** = there is not long to go
metterci	to take (in time expressions), e.g. **ci hai messo una vita!** (R1) = it took you ages! (lit "a lifetime") NOTE: the literal meaning of this verb (= to put sth into sth else) is quite common, e.g. **ci ho già messo il sale** = I have already put salt in it; also fig, e.g. **ci devi mettere più energia** = you must put more energy into it
parlarci (R1–2)	to speak to sb, e.g. **con lui non ci parlo** = I don't (want to) speak to him
pensarci	to think about sth (or sb [R1])
provarci (R1–2) **provarci con qu** (R1)	to try to make sexual advances to sb
riuscirci	to manage to do sth, e.g. **non ci riesco** = I can't do it
sentirci	to be able to hear
starci (R1–2)	to agree to sth, to accept sth, e.g. **ci sto** = I'm in it ALSO **starci** = **entrarci**, e.g. **in cinque nell'ascensore non ci stiamo** = (the) five of us can't fit in the lift/elevator NOTE: in Southern Italy, **starci** usually means **esserci**, e.g. **ci sta Ciro?** = is Ciro there?
tenerci (**a qc**)	to care a lot about sth
vederci	to be able to see
volerci	to take (in order to do sth), e.g. **non ci vuole molto** = it doesn't take much (time or effort or even money); **che ci vuole?** = what does it take (to do that)?, usu ironic for "that's not difficult!"

5 Affective suffixes

These suffixes are usually listed, in Italian grammars, under the heading **alterazione**, and the words modified by them are called **alterati**. Among them we find nouns, adjectives, a handful of adverbs, and also some verbs.

The use of **alterati** is very common in spoken Italian (R1, R1–2). It is often characterized by affective overtones, which, in some cases, can neutralize and even reverse the face value of the alteration. **Cattivaccio**, for instance, can express fondness as well as disapproval (cf. English *naughty*); **tardino**, literally *a little late*, can be used ironically to mean *very late*. The basic value of the alteration associated with each suffix, however, should not be overlooked. In fact, there are many instances where the modified term has acquired a life of its own, generating in turn some more or less lexicalized alterations (see section 2.3.2).

carta (paper) > **cartella** (*page*, *file*, *folder*, *briefcase*, *schoolbag*)
> **cartellina** (*small* ***cartella***);
> **cartello** (*notice*, *placard*, *sign*)
> **cartellone** (*bill*, *poster*);
> **cartoccio** (*paper wrap*, *often in the shape of a cone*)
> **cartoccetto**, **cartoccino** (*small* ***cartoccio***),
> **cartoccione** (*large* ***cartoccio***);
> **cartone** (m) (*cardboard*)
> **cartoncino** (*light cardboard*, *card*),
> **cartuccia** (*cartridge*).

On the other hand, some terms, in spite of their appearance, were never obtained through alteration. **Bottino** (*booty*) and **bottone** (*button*), for example, did not derive from **botte** (*cask*), **botto** (*blow*, *shot*, *bang*), or **botta** (*blow*, *bump*), but from French words.

The gender of nouns is given only where it is not predictable from the principles given in ch. **14**.

In some words, an accent is used to indicate the main stress but should not be used when writing. See p. 29.

The suffixes for nouns, adjectives and adverbs have been divided into two groups, diminutive and augmentative. Positive (fondness, admiration) or negative (disapproval, contempt) overtones can be found in both groups. The suffixes for verbs are listed separately.

Apart from the specific destination of some suffixes and a tendency to avoid awkward repetitions (**cuscinetto**, but not **cuscinino**; **lettino** but not **lettetto**; **astuccino**, but not **astucciuccio**, and so on), there is no precise rule to determine which words can take which suffixes: only experience can tell. The lists that follow are only an approximate guide to the intrinsic value of some suffixes.

It is possible to have two suffixes in succession, e.g. **tavolinetto** (*nice little table*); **tavolinuccio** (*insignificant little table*); **omaccione** (*big ugly man*); **casettina** (*nice little house*); **grassottello** (*plumpish*).

Altered adjectives follow the noun they modify.

Only a handful of adverbs admit suffixes. The most common are: **adagio**, **bene**, **male**, **piano**, **forte**, **poco**, **tanto**, **presto**, **tardi**.

Altered adverbs are often preceded (in R1) by reinforcing, although ultimately redundant, adverbial expressions such as **un po'**, e.g. **un po' prestino**. Similarly, some altered nouns are sometimes accompanied (in R1–2) by reinforcing adjectives such as **grande** and **piccolo**, e.g. **un gran macchinone**, **un piccolo lettino**.

Suffixes are given with their masculine singular ending, when applicable.

5.1 Diminutive suffixes

Suffix	Notes and examples
-ino (with **–(i)cino** and **-olino**)	The most common diminutive suffixes. They can express cuteness and fondness, e.g. **manina** = *(cute) little hand*; **cuoricino** = *(dear) little heart*; **topolino** = *(cute) little mouse* (**Topolino** is Italian for *Mickey Mouse*). Some feminine nouns may become masculine when altered with **-ino**, e.g. **pentola** > **pentolino** (as well as **pentolina**) = *small pot*. With adjectives and adverbs they tend to have an attenuating value, e.g. **magrolino** = *a little skinny*; **verdino** = *light green, greenish*; **benino** = *fairly well*. NOTE: nouns in **-one**/**-ona** are usu restricted to the suffix **-cino**, e.g. **scarpone** (*mountain boot*) > **scarponcino**; **poltrona** > **poltroncina**.

Suffix	Notes and examples
-etto	Very common suffix, generally used with affectionate overtones, e.g. **bacetto** = *nice little kiss*; **casetta**, *cute little house*. It attenuates adjectives, e.g. **piccoletto** = *a bit small*. Apart from **un pochetto** (*a little bit*), with its variation **un pochettino**, it is not used with adverbs.
-ello (with **-(i)cello** and **-erello**)	Quite common diminutive suffixes, similar in meaning to the ones above, but not used with adverbs, e.g. **alberello** = *(delicate) little tree*; **venticello** = *nice gentle breeze*; **focherello** = *small fire* (NOTE the regular disappearance of the "dittongo mobile" and preservation of the [k] sound of **fuoco**); **cattivello** = *a bit naughty*; **pazzerello** = *a bit mad* (in a nice way).
-uccio (**-uzzo**)	This diminutive suffix can express a certain degree of endearment, as when used with proper nouns (e.g. **Carluccio**), or nouns like **ziuccio** = *dear uncle*, **boccuccia** = *cute little mouth* etc., but also contempt, e.g. **avvocatuccio** = *little-known, incompetent lawyer*. With adjectives it is attenuating, e.g. **calduccio** = *(nice and) warm*; **deboluccio** = *a bit weak*.
-icciolo (**-icciuolo**)	As with the previous suffix, smallness as expressed through this suffix can convey a sense of cuteness, e.g. **festicciola** = *small, intimate party*, **porticciolo** = *(nice) little port*, or a sense of insignificance, e.g. **donnicciola** = *small insignificant woman*. Not for adjectives or adverbs.
-ùcolo	This suffix is used only with nouns and has pejorative overtones, e.g. **poetucolo** = *worthless poet*.
-olo (**-uolo**)	A rather neutral diminutive suffix, e.g. **montagnola** = *small mountain, mound*; **capannola** = *small hut*.

Suffix	Notes and examples
-otto	A variation of **-etto**, this suffix is used to indicate the young of some animals (e.g. **aquilotto** = *eaglet*), and it can add a note of likable clumsiness to the nouns with which it combines, e.g. **contadinotto** = *a stout peasant*. At times it may lose its diminutive character: a **ragazzotto** is not necessarily smaller than a **ragazzo**. Some feminine nouns can turn masculine when modified by this suffix, e.g. **candela** > **candelotto** = *short and thick candle*. With adjectives it has an attenuating effect, e.g. **piccolotto** = *somewhat small* (usually of persons); **vecchiotto** = *rather old*.
-acchiotto	Mostly found in the words for young animals: **orsacchiotto** = *young bear*, *teddy bear*; **lupacchiotto** = *young wolf*. Also used with a moderating effect with a few adjectives, e.g. **furbacchiotto** = *quite cunning*.
-iciàttolo	This diminutive suffix is only used with nouns and expresses contempt: **fiumiciattolo** = *small and insignificant river*; **omiciattolo**= *small and insignificant man*; **mostriciattolo** = *insignificant ugly creature*, *small monster*.
-ónzolo	Used with a few nouns, it has a pejorative connotation, e.g. **mediconzolo** = *incompetent doctor*; **paperonzolo** = *clumsy gosling*.
-iccio	For adjectives only. This basically attenuating suffix adds a note of imperfection or approximation to the adjectives or adjectival past participles it alters, e.g. **malaticcio** = *sickly*; **bruciaticcio** = *half burned*; **sudaticcio** = *rather sweaty*. It sometimes corresponds to the English suffix *-ish*, e.g. **rossiccio** = *reddish*. Its use has been extended to a few nouns, but with a tendency to lexicalization, e.g. **terriccio** = *rich soil suitable for potting* (from **terra**, with a change of gender).
-igno	For adjectives only. Less frequent than **-iccio**, this suffix also expresses approximation, e.g. **asprigno** = *sourish*.

Suffix	Notes and examples
-ògnolo	For adjectives only and similar in value to the previous, e.g. **amarognolo** = *bitterish*, this suffix is especially used with colors, e.g. **verdognolo** = *greenish*; **giallognolo** = *yellowish*.
-occio	Used only with adjectives, it has an attenuating value and it is often used jokingly, e.g. **belloccio** = *kind of good looking*; **grassoccio** = *plump(ish)*.

5.2 Augmentative suffixes

Possibly because of an overlapping in meaning with the superlative, the use of these suffixes with adjectives results in substantivization. To translate *he is very bad*, beside **è cattivissimo/molto cattivo** etc., we can use **è un cattivone**, but not **è cattivone**.

Suffix	Notes and examples
-one	The most common augmentative suffix, it conveys the idea of bigness, e.g. **ragazzone** = *big boy*, **librone** = *big book*, or even greatness, e.g. **professorone** (R1) = *eminent professor*. It may change the gender of feminine nouns, e.g. **bottiglia** > **bottiglione** (as well as **bottigliona**) = *big bottle*; **donna** > **donnone** (as well as **donnona**) = *big woman*. Substantivized adjectives are reinforced by **-one**, e.g. **pigrone** = *very lazy person*, and so is also the adverb **bene**: **benone** = *very well*. NOTE: nouns like **chiacchierone** (*chatterbox*) or **mangione** (*big eater*), being derived from verb stems, are not proper "alterati."
-accio (–**azzo**)	This is the most common pejorative suffix, e.g. **libraccio** = *very bad book*, **ragazzaccio** = *very rude boy*, **coltellaccio** = *big (threatening) knife*.
-astro	Quite common suffix. With nouns it conveys contempt, e.g. **poetastro** = *a bad poet*; with adjectives, it expresses approximation, sometimes with a hint of dislike, e.g. **biancastro** = *whitish*, *off-white*; **dolciastro** = *sweetish*.

Suffix	Notes and examples
-acchione	Less frequent and productive than the previous ones, this suffix can be used with joking affection as well as in a pejorative sense, e.g. **fratacchione** = *big jolly friar* or *big fat friar*.

5.3 Suffixes for verbs

These suffixes are in general less productive than most of the suffixes for nouns and adjectives. Some of them are found in only very few verbs.

Suffix	Notes and examples
-acchiare **-icchiare** **-ucchiare**	These suffixes generally indicate the irregular repetition of the action in a somewhat weakened form, e.g. **sparacchiare** = *to shoot at irregular intervals and without much care*; **canticchiare** = *to sing softly, absent-mindedly, with pauses*; **mangiucchiare** = *to nibble*.
-ellare **-arellare** **-erellare**	These suffixes have a diminutive and iterative value, e.g. **saltellare**, **saltarellare**/ **salterellare** = *to skip*, *to hop*; **giocherellare** = *to play absent-mindedly with sth*, *to fiddle with sth*.
-ettare **-ottare**	These are quite similar in meaning to the previous suffixes: e.g. **fischiettare** = *to whistle away (a tune)* (usually softly and rather absent-mindedly); **parlottare** = *to chat in a low voice*.
-ucolare	This suffix has a diminutive value and is only found in **piagnucolare** (from **piagnere**, a non-standard form of **piangere**) = *to whine*, *to whinge*.
-uzzare	Like some of the above, this suffix has a diminutive and iterative connotation, e.g. **tagliuzzare** = *to cut into (many) small bits*.

6 Idioms, similes, and proverbs

Idioms, similes, and proverbs are the spices of all natural languages. Italian offers a great choice of such colourful "ingredients." In fact, since the popular tradition from which so many of these locutions originate is inextricably intertwined with the dialects, the average native Italian speaker will also use a whole range of idioms and proverbs with more or less accentuated dialectal overtones. The latter are typically at an R1 (or R1*) level. Conversely, the use of idioms, similes, and proverbs in standard Italian – of which the lists below are but very small samples – is generally closer to R2 (and above).

6.1 Idioms

The following idioms are sorted according to their cardinal word or group of words. The latter are underlined when not in initial position, for ease of consultation.

With regard to all the expressions with **avere**, it should be pointed out that in colloquial Italian **averci** is much more common, e.g. **c'ha** [tʃa] **la faccia tosta**.

R1* vulgar or indecent
R1 informal, colloquial
R2 neutral, unmarked
R3 formal, written
Italian words and expressions are R2 unless otherwise indicated. See also p. 5.

In some words, an accent is used to indicate the main stress but should not be used when writing. See p. 29.

	Italian idiom	English equivalent
A	**essere con/avere l' acqua alla gola**	to be in deep water, to be in great difficulties
	fare acqua (**da tutte le parti**) (lit and fig)	(lit) to take in water (everywhere); (fig, of argument) not to hold water (at all)
	acqua in bocca! (R1)	mum's the word
	essere/trovarsi/navigare in cattive acque	to be in dire straits
	dormire/riposare sugli allori (R2–3)	to rest on one's laurels
	scoprire gli altarini (**di qu**) (R1)	to find out sb's secrets (not seriously)
	andare a ruba	to go/sell like hot cakes
	darsi delle (R1–2)/**molte** (R1–2)/**un sacco di** (R1) **arie**	to put on airs
	avere un asso nella manica	to have a trick up one's sleeve
	lasciare/piantare in asso qu	to leave sb high and dry
	fare l'avvocato del diavolo	to play devil's advocate
B	**piantare baracca e burattini** (R1–2)	to drop/to leave everything
	mettere il bastone tra le ruote	to put a spoke in the wheel
	chiudere il becco (R1)	to shut up
	essere la bestia nera (**di qu**)	to be sb's bugbear
	passare una notte in bianco	to have a sleepless night
	in bianco e nero	black and white (films etc.) BUT in black and white (in writing) = **nero su bianco**, e.g. **mettiamo nero su bianco** = let's put it in writing
	restare/rimanere a bocca aperta (R1)	to be left gaping, open-mouthed (in bewilderment, surprise, admiration)
	tornare a bomba (R1–2)	to get back to the point
	sentirsi cascare le braccia (R1)	to lose hope
	a bruciapelo	point-blank; (fig) suddenly, unexpectedly, e.g. **fare una domanda a bruciapelo**

	Italian idiom	English equivalent
C	**rimandare alle calende greche** (R2–3)	to put sth off until doomsday
	nascere con la camicia	to be born lucky
	sudare sette camicie	to work really hard, to sweat blood
	menare il can per l'aia (R2–3)	to beat about the bush
	tirato per i capelli	far-fetched
	spaccare un capello in quattro	to split hairs
	non avere né capo né coda	to have neither rhyme nor reason
	salvare capra e cavoli (R1–2)	to have one's cake and eat it
	in carne ed ossa (R1–2)	in the flesh, in person
	mettere troppa carne al fuoco (R1–2)	to bite off more than one can chew
	mettere il carro innanzi ai buoi	to put the cart before the horse
	avere/dare carta bianca	to have/to give a free hand/carte blanche
	a casaccio (R1)	haphazardly, at random
	cavallo di battaglia (R2–3)	pièce de résistance, strong point, forte
	avere una brutta cera	to look unwell
	essere al settimo cielo	to be in seventh heaven
	passarne/vederne di tutti i colori/ di cotte e di crude (R1–2)	to go through thick and thin
	dare il colpo di grazia a qu	to finish sb off
	dare un colpo al cerchio e uno alla botte	to run with the hare and hunt with the hounds
	fare colpo (**su qu**) (R1–2)	to make an impression (on sb)
	come se nulla fosse	as if nothing had happened
	fare il (**porco** [R1*-1]) **comodo proprio** (R1–2)	to do as one pleases
	essere in condizioni (**di fare qc**)	to be able (to do sth)
	fare i conti con qu (R1)	to settle accounts with sb
	avere un conto in sospeso con qu	to have an account to settle with sb

	Italian idiom	English equivalent
	andare controcorrente	to go against the current, to swim against the tide
	avere le corna; **mettere le corna a qu** (R1)	to be a cuckold; to be unfaithful to sb
	dire peste e corna di qu (R1)	to speak very badly of sb
	salvarsi in corner (R1)	to have a narrow escape
	tirare le cuoia (R1)	to kick the bucket
D	**avere un diavolo per capello**	to be furious
	mettere il dito sulla piaga (R1–2)	to touch on a sore point
	doccia scozzese (R2–3)	a succession of good and bad news
	dormire della grossa (R1–2)	to sleep like a log
F	**avere la faccia tosta/di bronzo** (R1)	to have cheek, to be brazen-faced
	avere fegato; **avere il fegato di fare qc** (R1–2)	to have guts; to have the guts to do sth
	essere ai ferri corti	to be at loggerheads
	toccare ferro (R1)/**fare le corna** (R1)/**fare gli scongiuri**	to touch wood NOTE **fare le corna** also indicates the insulting gesture accompanying the accusation of "cuckold"
	conciare per le feste (R1–2)	to reduce to a sorry state
	in fila indiana	in single file
	filarsela all'inglese (R2–3)	to take French leave
	dare del filo da torcere (**a qu**)	to make things hard (for sb)
	essere il fior fiore di qc (R2–3)	to be the cream of sth
	avere fortuna (R2)/**culo** (R1*), e.g.: **che fortuna/culo** (R1*)**!**	to be lucky what a fluke!
	fare un freddo cane (R1–2)	to be freezing cold (of weather)
	molto/tutto fumo e poco/niente arrosto (R1–2)	more appearance than substance, all appearance and no substance
	andare in fumo	to go up in smoke
	essere/trovarsi tra due fuochi	to be caught in the crossfire, be between two fires

	Italian idiom	English equivalent
	essere fuori di sé	to be beside oneself (usu negative)
	uscire/essere/andare fuori dai gàngheri (R1–2)	to lose one's temper
	fare il furbo, e.g.: **non fate i furbi!**	to try to be smart/clever don't you try to be smart!
G	**fare una gaffe** [gaf]	to put one's foot in it, to make a faux pas
	andare a letto con le galline (R1–2)	to go to bed very early
	una (**brutta**) **gatta da pelare** (R1–2)	a hard nut to crack
	(**esserci**) **quattro gatti** (R1) e.g.: **c'erano quattro gatti**	very few people (to attend) there were very few people
	in gioco/in ballo (R1–2)	at stake
	un gioco da ragazzi (fig)	a piece of cake (fig)
	prendere in giro/per i fondelli (R1–2)/**per il culo** (R1*) (**qu**)	to pull sb's leg, to make a fool of sb, to cheat sb
	la goccia d'acqua che fa traboccare il vaso	the straw that broke the camel's back, the last straw
	alzare il gómito	to drink (alcohol), to bend the elbow
I	**essere/trovarsi tra l'incùdine e il martello**	to be between the devil and the deep blue sea
L	**spezzare una lancia a favore di qu** (R3)	to plead sb' s cause
	in linea d'aria	as the crow flies
	in linea di massima	generally speaking
	non avere una lira (R1–2)	not to have a bean/a penny/a cent
	dare alla luce (**un bambino**) (R2–3); **vedere la luce** (R3)/**venire alla luce** (R2–3)	to give birth; to be born, to be published
	a lume di naso (R1–2)	at a guess
M	**allargarsi/espandersi a macchia d'olio**	to spread quickly in all directions

Italian idiom	English equivalent
mandare qu a farsi friggere (R1)/**a farsi benedire** (R1)/**al diavolo** (R1*-1)/**a quel paese** (R1)/**affanculo** (*originally in central and Southern Italy for* "a fare in culo," *very rude but very common expression*) (R1*)	to send sb packing: to tell sb to push off/to go jump in the lake/to go to hell/to get lost/to fuck off (all these are idiomatic and not literal translations of the Italian) NOTE: as direct insults, these expressions are used with **andare**, e.g.: **va' a farti friggere/a farti benedire/a quel paese** (all R1*-1)/**affanculo** (R1*) = push off/go jump in the lake/go to hell/get lost/fuck off
mangiare a quattro ganasce (R1)	to wolf down
un altro paio di maniche (R1–2)	another kettle of fish
essere in maniche di camicia	to be in one's shirt-sleeves
lavarsene le mani (**di qc**)	to wash one's hands of sth
mangiarsi le mani (**per qc**) (R1)	to regret (sth)
venire alle mani (R2–3)	to come to blows
dare una mano a qu (R1–2)	to give sb a hand
fuori mano (R1–2)	out of the way, far, remote (of places)
metterci una mano sul fuoco (R1–2)	to have total trust in sth/sb
fare marcia indietro (R1–2)	to go into reverse, (fig) to change one's mind
da che mondo è mondo (R1–2)	since time began
saltare la mosca al naso (**a qu**) (R1–2), e.g.:	to get cross
gli è saltata la mosca al naso	he got cross
rompere (**spaccare** [R1*-1]) **il muso** (R1)/**la faccia** (R1) **a qu**	to smash sb's face (in)

	Italian idiom	English equivalent
N	**ficcare il naso (in qc)** (R1)	to snoop around (in sth)
	non importare un bel nulla/fico secco (R1–2)/**cavolo** (R1*–1)	not to matter two hoots/a damn
	non esserci anima viva/un'anima (R1–2)/**un cane** (R1) e.g.:	there to be not a living soul
	non c'era anima viva	there was no one/not a living soul
	non sapere a che santo votarsi (R1–2)/**che pesci pigliare** (**prendere**) (R1–2)	to be at one's wits' end, not to know where to turn, to be at a loss
	nuovo di zecca	brand new
	avere la testa tra le nuvole/vivere nelle nuvole (R1–2)	to have one's head in the clouds, to be up in the clouds, to be away with the fairies
	cascare dalle nuvole	to be astonished, to come back to earth
O	**saltare agli occhi** (R1–2)	to be patently obvious
	a occhio e croce (R1–2)	more or less, roughly
	chiudere un occhio	to turn a blind eye
	dare nell' occhio (a qu)	to be conspicuous, to attract the attention (of sb)
	in un batter d'occhio	in the twinkling of an eye
	non chiudere occhio (R1–2)	not to sleep a wink
	pagare/costare un occhio (della testa) (R1–2)	to pay through the nose/to cost an arm and a leg
	essere tutt'orecchi	to be all ears
	fare orecchie da mercante	to pretend not to hear
	essere bagnato fino all' osso/alle ossa (R1–2)	to be soaked to the skin
P	**cadere dalla padella nella brace**	to jump out of the frying pan into the fire
	dire pane al pane e vino al vino (R1–2)	to call a spade a spade
	parla come mangi! (R1)	speak simply and clearly!
	parlare del più e del meno	to chat about this and that
	parlare turco/arabo/ ostrogoto (all R1)	to talk double-Dutch
	parlarsi addosso	to talk too much and for oneself

Italian idiom	English equivalent
essere di parola	to be reliable
prendere la parola (R2–3)	to take the floor
mangiarsi le parole (R1)	to speak indistinctly
fare quattro passi (R1–2)	to go for a stroll
essere pazzo/matto da legare (R1)	to be completely mad
non avere peli sulla lingua (R1–2)	not to mince words
non stare più nella pelle (R1–2)	to be beside oneself (with joy or expectation)
avere la pelle d'oca; **far venire la pelle d'oca a qu** (R1)	to get goose pimples/bumps; to make sb get goose pimples/bumps
cercare il pelo nell'uovo	to be always picking holes in things
per un pelo (R1), e.g.: (**lui**) **ce l'ha fatta per un pelo** **per un pelo non è caduto**	just; nearly he made it by the skin of his teeth (affirmative) he very nearly fell down (negative)
perdere la bùssola/la tramontana/le staffe	to lose one's temper
pagare di persona	to meet one's responsibilities squarely
fare un pesce d'aprile a qu	to play an April's Fool's Day trick on sb
pezzo grosso (R1–2)	big shot, important person
scendere in picchiata	to dive (of a plane)
prendere due piccioni con una fava (R1–2)	to kill two birds with one stone
andare a picco; **colare a picco**	to sink (intr); to sink (both tr and intr)
non reggersi in piedi	to be weak, not to stand up (lit of people etc., fig of arguments etc.)
andare coi piedi di piombo (R1–2)	to watch one's step, to proceed very carefully
indorare la pìllola (R2–3)	to sugar/gild the pill, to make sth easier to swallow
piove che Dio la manda (R1)/ **piove a catinelle** (R1–2)	it's raining cats and dogs/buckets
essere il pomo della discordia	to be the bone of contention

	Italian idiom	English equivalent
	essere poveri in canna (R1–2)/**ridotti sul lastrico** (R2–3)/**al verde** (R1–2)/**in bolletta** (R1–2)	to be broke
	mettere la pulce nell'orecchio a qu (R1–2)	to insinuate sth, to hint at sth
	mettere i puntini sulle/sugli i (R1–2)	to dot one's i's and cross one's t's
	di punto in bianco	out of the blue
	essere a un punto morto	to be at a standstill (of negotiations etc.)
	scatenare un putiferio/fare un casino (**del diavolo/della madonna**) (R1*)	to cause a row
Q	**a quattrocchi** (R1)	in private
R	**dare ragione/torto a qu**	to say that sb is right/wrong
	tirare i remi in barca	to back out of (some enterprise)
	mettere a repentaglio (R2–3)	to put in danger, to jeopardize
	rimangiarsi una promessa/la parola data	to go back on a promise/on one's word
	rispondere per le rime	to answer back, to give tit for tat
	alla rinfusa	helter-skelter, higgledy-piggledy
	rompere le scatole (R1)/**le palle** (R1*)/**i coglioni** (R1*), OR simply **rompere** (R1*-1) (**a qu**)	to annoy, to pester sb
	mancare una rotella (**a qu**) (R1)	to have a screw loose
	uscire/passare/farcela per il rotto della cuffia (R1–2)	to get off/to squeeze through/to make it by the skin of one's teeth
S	**fare schifo** (**a qu**) (R1*-1)	to disgust (sb); to be awful; (fig) to be bad (at sth = **in qc** OR **a qc** [game, sport])
	scoprire l'acqua calda/l'America (both R1), e.g.: **hai scoperto l'acqua calda!**	to be clever (ironic or sarcastic) aren't you clever! (sarcastically)
	ritornare in sé	to regain consciousness, to come round
	prendere sul serio	to take seriously

	Italian idiom	English equivalent
	essere agli sgoccioli (R1–2)	to be at the very end/about to finish
	per/a quattro soldi (**comprare/vendere**) (R1–2)	for a song (to sell/to buy) (**quattro soldi** = very little money)
	esserci sotto qualcosa, e.g.: **qui c'é sotto qualcosa**	there to be sth fishy there's something fishy here
	essere (**stare**)/**tenere sulle spine**	to be/to keep on tenterhooks
	fare la spola/la navetta	to shuttle/go back and forth
	gettare la spugna	to throw in the towel/sponge
	chiudere la stalla quando sono scappati i buoi	to lock the stable door after the horse has gone/bolted
	non essere uno stinco di santo (R1)	to be no saint
	stare sullo stomaco (R1–2)/ **sui coglioni** (R1*)/**sul cazzo** (R1*) **a qu**	to be utterly unbearable to sb
T	**fare tabula rasa** (R2–3)	to make a clean sweep
	bruciare le tappe	to go fast (also fig, e.g. in a career)
	col passare del tempo	as time goes/went by
	fare il bello e il cattivo tempo (R1–2)	to wield absolute power, to do as one pleases
	tenere a bada qu	to keep/hold sb in check/at bay
	tagliare la testa al toro	to cut things/the matter short
V	**fare le valigie** (fig R1–2)	to leave
	vedere tutto nero (R1–2)	to be pessimistic
	vedere tutto rosa (R1–2)	to see life/everything through rose-tinted glasses
	essere in vena (R1–2)	to be in the mood
	dare via libera	to give the green light
	avere sette vite (**come un gatto**)	to have nine lives (like a cat)
	avere voce in capitolo (R2–3)	to have a say (in the matter)
	volere la botte piena e la moglie ubriaca (R1–2)	to want to have one's cake and eat it
Z	**darsi la zappa sui piedi** (R1–2)	to damage/contradict oneself unwittingly; to shoot oneself in the foot

6.2 Similes based on adjectives

Sometimes a metaphor can take the place of a simile: **è un pezzo di pane** instead of **è buono come il pane**. In some cases (not listed) the metaphor is preferred, e.g. **è una lumaca** "s/he is (as slow as) a snail."

For increased emphasis, the simile can be transformed into a comparative clause with **più** . . . **di**/**che** . . . , wherever indicated (cf. section 17.1).

Italian expression	English equivalent
bagnato come un pulcino (R1–2)	soaking wet
bello come il sole	dazzlingly handsome
bianco come la (più bianco della) neve	as white as (whiter than) snow
brutto come la fame/il demonio/la morte/il peccato (R1)	as ugly as sin
buono come il pane (R1–2)	"a living saint," goodness itself
chiaro come il sole	as clear as day(light)/crystal
cieco come una talpa	as blind as a bat
contento come una pasqua (R1–2)	as happy as a lark
duro come il sasso/l'acciaio	as hard as a rock/as tough as nails
facile come bere un bicchier d'acqua	as easy as winking/ABC (of doing sth)
forte come (più forte di) un toro	as strong as an ox
freddo come la neve/il ghiaccio	as cold as ice
grande/**grosso** come una casa (R1–2)	huge
grasso come un maiale (R1)	as fat as a pig
liscio come l'olio	very flat (of water surface); (fig) as smooth(ly) as possible
muto come un pesce	close-mouthed, tight-lipped
nero come il carbone	as black as soot/pitch
raro come una mosca bianca (OR le mosche bianche)	extremely rare
sano come un pesce	as sound as a bell, as fit as a fiddle
solo come un cane	all alone
sordo come una campana	as deaf as a post
vecchio come il (più vecchio del) cucco (R1) (OR vecchio come [più vecchio di] Matusalemme)	as old as (older than) the hills/Methuselah
veloce come il vento	as swift as the wind

6.3 Similes based on verbs

Italian expression	English equivalent
bere come una spugna (R1–2)	to drink like a fish (usu alcohol)
cantare come un usignolo	to sing like a canary
dormire come un ghiro	to sleep like a log
fumare come un turco (R1)	to smoke like a chimney
girare come una tròttola (also fig)	to spin like a top
mangiare come un lupo (R1–2)	to eat like a horse
mangiare come un maiale (R1)	to eat like a pig (i.e. with bad table manners)
nuotare come un pesce (R1–2)	to swim like a fish
parlare come un libro stampato (R1–2)	to talk like a book, to speak eloquently
piangere come una fontana (R1–2)	to cry buckets/floods of tears
piangere come una vite tagliata (R1–2)	to cry uncontrollably
tremare come una foglia (R1–2)	to tremble like a leaf

6.4 Other proverbial comparisons

Italian expression	English equivalent
capitare/essere come il cacio sui maccheroni (R1)	to be the right thing/person at the right time
è come parlare al muro/al vento (R1–2)	it's like talking to a brick wall/the wall
essere come cane e gatto (R1–2)	to be (always fighting) like cat and dog
essere come il diavolo e l'acqua santa (R1–2)	to be like cat and dog
essere come il vaso di coccio tra i vasi di ferro (R2–3)	to be in a risky situation, in the company of much rougher comrades
essere/fare come il bue che dice cornuto all'asino (R1)	to be/to do like the pot that calls the kettle black
essere/sentirsi come un pesce fuor d'acqua	to be/to feel like a fish out of water
peggio che andar di notte (R1–2)	worse than ever (of situations)
stare come un pascià (R1–2)	to be surrounded by comfort and luxury; to be in one's element

6.5 Proverbs

A great number of proverbs exist and are commonly used in Italian and in the Italian dialects. Their diffusion at all levels is such that in everyday use many of the following proverbs are simply "prompted," that is, "suspended" after the first few words (e.g. **chi tardi arriva . . .**), on the assumption that the listener will be able to fill in the missing words (cf. English "where there's a will . . ." and so on). Likewise, some of the components of these proverbs can be used separately though still preserving their proverbial meaning, e.g. **è acqua passata** (said of a past event that should not worry us anymore).

The following is only a small sample of the most common Italian proverbs. (See also chapter 10.)

A literal translation has been offered for those Italian proverbs without a more or less direct English equivalent. When no equivalent English proverb can be found, an explanation of the Italian saying is provided.

Italian proverb	**English equivalent**
Aiutati che il ciel/Dio t'aiuta	*God helps those who help themselves*
Batti il ferro finché è caldo	*Strike while the iron is hot*
A caval donato non si guarda in bocca	*Never look a gift horse in the mouth*
Chi dorme non piglia pesci	*lit* S/he who sleeps does not catch fish, i.e. *The early bird catches the worm*
L'abito non fa il mònaco	*It's not the cowl that makes the monk*
Meglio un/l'uovo oggi che una/la gallina domani	*lit* Better an egg today than a hen tomorrow, i.e. *A bird in the hand is worth two in the bush*
Non si parla di corda in casa dell'impiccato	*Don't speak of rope in the house of the hanged*
Occhio non vede cuore non duole	*lit* Eye does not see, heart does not ache, i.e. *Out of sight, out of mind*
Paese che vai usanza che trovi	*lit* The town you go to, the customs you find, i.e. *When in Rome, do as the Romans do*
Quando il gatto non c'è i topi ballano	*When the cat's away, the mice will play*
Tra il dire e il fare c'é di mezzo il mare	*lit* Between saying and doing there is the sea in the middle, i.e. *Easier said than done*
Una róndine non fa primavera	*One swallow doesn't make a summer*
A pagare e morire c'è sempre tempo	*lit* There is always time to pay and to die i.e. *Payments and death can always wait*
Chi ben comincia è a metà dell'opra	*Well begun is half done*
Chi cerca trova	*Seek and you shall find*
Chi non risica non rosica	*lit* S/he who does not risk, does not gnaw, i.e. *Nothing ventured, nothing gained*
Chi rompe paga (e i cocci sono suoi)	*lit* S/he who breaks must pay (and the broken pieces are hers/his), i.e. *He who's guilty must pay*

Italian proverb	English equivalent
Chi tardi arriva male alloggia	*lit* S/he who is late will not find good lodgings, i.e. *First come first served*
Chi troppo vuole nulla stringe	*lit* S/he who wants too much gets nothing, i.e. *Grasp all lose all*
Chi va con lo zoppo impara a zoppicare	*lit* S/he who goes with the lame learns to limp, i.e. *Bad company will teach you bad things*
Chi va piano va sano e va lontano	*lit* S/he who goes slowly goes safely and far, i.e. *Slow and steady wins the race*
Finché c'è vita c'è speranza	*While there's life there's hope*
La gatta frettolosa fece i gattini ciechi	*lit* The hasty cat made blind kittens, i.e. *Acting in a hurry only leads to bad results* or *More haste less speed*
Mal comune mezzo gaudio	*lit* Shared evil, half joy, i.e. *A problem shared is a problem halved*
Meglio soli che male accompagnati	*Better alone than in bad company*
Meglio tardi che mai	*Better late than never*
Non tutto il male vien (OR **non tutti i mali vengono**) **per nuocere**	*lit* Not all evil comes to do harm, i.e. *Every cloud has a silver lining*
Troppi galli a cantar non fa mai giorno	*lit* (With) too many roosters the morning never comes, i.e. *Too many cooks spoil the broth*
Ride bene chi ride (**l'**)**ultimo**	*He who laughs last laughs best*
Rosso di sera buon tempo si spera; rosso di mattina mal tempo s'avvicina	*Red sky at night shepherd's delight, red sky in the morning shepherd's warning*
Tra due litiganti il terzo gode	*lit* Between two quarreling parties it's the third that gains, i.e. *The onlooker gets the best*
Tutti i gusti sono gusti	*lit* All tastes are tastes, i.e. *There is no accounting for tastes*
Uomo avvisato mezzo salvato	*lit* A warned man is half saved, i.e. *Forewarned is forearmed*
Vale più la pratica che la grammatica	*lit* Practice is worth more than grammar, i.e. *Practice is better than theory*

7 Personal names

Apart from names of popes (e.g. John Paul II = **Giovanni Paolo II**), in modern/contemporary times, only the names of royalty tend to be translated into Italian. For instance, Queen Elizabeth, Prince Charles, Prince Philip, Princess Anne become, respectively, **la regina Elisabetta**, **il principe Carlo**, **il principe Filippo**, **la principessa Anna**. This "rule" does not seem to apply to anybody else, be they Presidents or Prime Ministers, famous or ordinary people. Consequently, Tony Blair, George Bush, or any Johnny Lambs will remain untranslated, rather than becoming Antonio Blair, Giorgio Bush or Gianni Lambs (not to mention Giorgio Cespuglio or Gianni Agnelli). The names of famous historical or literary characters of the past, on the other hand, have in many cases been Italianized, especially, but not only, first names (e.g. **Abramo Lincoln**, **Beniamino Franklin**). This trend has waned in recent times.

Latin names (personal as well as geographical) are usually Italianized. This "rule" applies to classical antiquity (all names, including Greek ones, had a Latin equivalent), and also, in more recent times, to a number of characters whose names were Latinized (e.g. Descartes > Cartesius > **Cartesio**), and to the popes (who always take Latin names).

In the following small samples – in which more obvious names, such as **Augusto**, have not been included – some of the unusual stresses have been indicated. In normal circumstances the usual Italian conventions with regard to written stresses will apply.

In some words, an accent is used to indicate the main stress but should not be used when writing. See p. 29.

7.1 The ancient world: Greece and Rome

Achilles	**Achille**	Julius Caesar	**Giulio Cesare**
Aeneas	**Enea**	Juno	**Giunone**
Aeschylus	**Eschilo**	Jupiter/Jove	**Giove**
Aesop	**Esòpo**	Leto	**Latona**
Ajax	**Aiace**	Livy	**Tito Livio**
Alexander	**Alessandro**	Mark Antony	**Marcantonio**
Archimedes	**Archimede**	Nero	**Nerone**
Ariadne	**Arianna**	Oedipus	**Edipo**
Aristophanes	**Aristofane**	Ovid	**Ovidio**
Aristotle	**Aristotele**	Phidias	**Fidia**
Artemis	**Artèmide**	Phoebus	**Febo**
Boethius	**Boezio**	Plato	**Platone**
Caligula	**Caligola**	Pompey	**Pompeo**
Cato	**Catone**	Praxiteles	**Prassitele**
Cicero	**Cicerone**	Pythagoras	**Pitagora**
Constantine	**Costantino**	Romulus	**Romolo**
Cyrus	**Ciro**	Scipio	**Scipione**
Diocletian	**Diocleziano**	Socrates	**Socrate**
Euclid	**Euclide**	Solon	**Solone**
Euripides	**Euripide**	Suetonius	**Svetonio**
Hannibal	**Annìbale**	Sulla	**Silla**
Hector	**Ettore**	Terence	**Terenzio**
Hercules	**Ercole**	Venus	**Venere**
Homer	**Omèro**	Vergil/Virgil	**Virgilio**
Iliad	**Ilìade** (f)	Xenophon	**Senofonte**
Odyssey	**Odissèa**	Xerxes	**Serse**
Horace	**Orazio**		

7.2 The Bible

7.2.1 Old Testament

Aaron	**Aronne**	Esau	**Esaù**
Abel	**Abele**	Isaac	**Isacco**
Abraham	**Abramo**	Isaiah	**Isaìa**
Adam	**Adamo**	Jacob	**Giacobbe**
Beelzebub	**Belzebù**	Jehovah	**Gèova**
Cain	**Caìno**	Jeremiah	**Geremia**
David	**Davide**	Job	**Giobbe**
Delilah	**Dàlila**	Joshua	**Giosuè**
Elijah	**Elìa**	Methuselah	**Matusalemme**

Moses	**Mosè**	Queen of Sheba	**la Regina di Saba**
Nebuchadnezzar	**Nabucodonosòr**	Samson	**Sansone**
Noah	**Noè**	Saul	**Sàul**

7.2.2 New Testament

Andrew	**Andrèa**	Mark	**Marco**
Bartholomew	**Bartolomèo**	Mary	**Maria**
Belshazzar	**Baldassarre**	Mary Magdalene	**Maria Maddalena**
Caiphas	**Caifa**	Matthew	**Matteo**
Herod	**Erode**	the Messiah	**il Messia**
James	**Giàcomo**	Pontius Pilate	**Ponzio Pilato**
Jesus Christ	**Gesù Cristo**	Satan	**Sàtana**
John (the Baptist)	**Giovanni (Battista)**	Saul (Paul)	**Sàulo (Paolo)**
		Simon Peter	**Simon Pietro**
Joseph	**Giuseppe**	the Wise Men	**i Re Magi**
Judas	**Giuda**	Zachaeus	**Zaccheo**
Lazarus	**Lazzaro**	[NOTE: Gospel	**Vangelo**]
Luke	**Luca**		

NOTE: the feminine of **Andrea** is **Andreina**. Similarly, **Nicòla** (m = Nicholas) – **Nicoletta** (f). Also, the name "Simon" on its own is **Simone**.

7.3 The Middle Ages to the twentieth century

7.3.1 Non-Italian names

Francis/Roger Bacon	**Francesco/Ruggero Bacone**	Hamlet	**Amleto**
		Magellan	**Magellano**
Charlemagne	**Carlo Magno**	Marie Antoinette	**Maria Antonietta**
Charles V	**Carlo V (quinto)**	Martin Luther	**Martìn Lutèro**
René Descartes	**Cartesio**	Mary Stuart	**Maria Stuarda**
Don Quixote	**Don Chisciotte**	Mohammed	**Maometto**
Francis I	**Francesco I (primo)**	Napoleon	**Napoleone**
		Nicolas Copernicus	**Nicòla Copernico**
Franz Joseph	**Francesco Giuseppe**	Otto	**Ottone**
		Richard the Lionheart	**Riccardo Cuor di Leone**
Henry VIII	**Enrico VIII (ottavo)**	Romeo and Juliet	**Giulietta e Romèo**
Joan of Arc	**Giovanna d'Arco**		
John Calvin	**Giovanni Calvino**	Thomas More	**Tommaso Moro**
John de Hawkwood	**Giovanni Acuto**	Queen Victoria	**la regina Vittoria**
John Lackland	**Giovanni Senza Terra**	William the Conqueror	**Guglielmo il Conquistatore**
Louis	**Luigi**		

7.3.2 Italian names with a Latinized or Anglicized form in English

Aldus Manutius	**Aldo Manuzio**	Raphael	**Raffaello**
Christopher Columbus	**Cristoforo Colombo**	Thomas Aquinas	**Tommaso d'Aquino**
Francis of Assisi	**Francesco d'Assisi**	Titian	**Tiziano**
Petrarch	**Petrarca**	Victor Emmanuel	**Vittorio Emanuele**

8 Geographical and astronomical names and related adjectives

As with personal names, so with geographical names: the older the name (in the Latin or Italian tradition, that is), the more likely it is that it will have an Italianized version. This explains the great number of European locations in the following lists.

Each continent, country, region, and city has been complemented, whenever possible, by the adjective that, used as a noun, denotes the corresponding inhabitant. The adjectives that do not fulfil this function have been put in brackets. Any special form used in compound adjectives (e.g. **anglo**-) has also been given.

The geographical adjectives, even though the suffixes **-ese** and **-ano** characterize many of them, show a variety of endings, and in some cases appear quite removed from the name of the place they refer to. This is usually due to their deriving directly from older (mostly Latin or Latinized) geographical denominations, e.g. **londinese** < Lat. *londiniensem* < *Londinium* (London).

In everyday speech, if the particular adjective does not exist or is not known – some of those referring to less prominent places tend to be less commonly used – it is always possible to resort to the expression **di** (or **del**/**dello**/etc., according to the nature of the locality) + *name of the place*, e.g. **quella signora è di Aosta**; **quella signora è della Valle d'Aosta**.

Gender and number of regions and countries has been indicated only in difficult cases.

In the list of countries and regions of the world, the symbol † indicates that in normal circumstances that particular name should not be used with the definite article.

R1* vulgar or indecent
R1 informal, colloquial
R2 neutral, unmarked
R3 formal, written
Italian words and expressions are R2 unless otherwise indicated. See also p. 5.

The gender of nouns is given only where it is not predictable from the principles given in ch. **14**.

In some words, an accent is used to indicate the main stress but should not be used when writing. See 29.

The usual Italian pronunciation of foreign words is given in phonetic spelling in square brackets whenever appropriate.

8.1 Italy: administrative regions

Region	Adjective	Region	Adjective
Abruzzo	**abruzzese**, **aprutino** [R3]	**Molise** (m)	**molisano**
		Piemonte (m)	**piemontese**
Basilicata (**Lucania**)	**lucano**	**Puglia**	**pugliese** (**àpulo** [R3] usu refers to ancient Apulia)
Calabria	**calabrese** (**càlabro** [R2–3] usu refers to ancient Calabria)	**Sardegna**	**sardo**
Campania	**campano**	**Sicilia**	**siciliano** (**sìculo** [R2–3] usu refers to ancient Sicily)
Emilia	**emiliano**		
Romagna	**romagnolo**		
Friuli (m s)	**friulano**	**Toscana**	**toscano**, **tósco** (R3)
Venezia Giulia	**giuliano**	**Trentino**	**trentino**
Lazio	**laziale** (**latino** usu refers to ancient Latium)	**Alto Adige**	**altoatesino**
		Umbria	**umbro**
Liguria	**lìgure**	**Valle d'Aosta**	**valdostano**
Lombardia	**lombardo**	**Veneto**	**veneto**
Marche (f pl)	**marchigiano**		

NOTE: **laziale** is often used to indicate a supporter or a player of the Lazio football team. When talking about the region (or one of its inhabitants), it is less confusing to use the expression **del Lazio**.

8.2 Italy: cities

There follows a list of the capitals of all the provinces of Italy, their **sigle**, which are abbreviations used in car registration numbers (= **targhe** [**automobilistiche**]), addresses etc., and their corresponding adjectives.

NOTE that next to **romano**, **torinese**, **milanese** we also find the adjectives **romanista**, **torinista**, **milanista**, which are exclusively used in relation to the corresponding football teams **Roma**, **Torino** and **Milan**. Both sets of adjectives can be used as nouns, e.g. **un milanese** (= a (male) citizen of (or person born in) Milan), **un milanista** (= a (male) supporter of AC Milan).

The adjective **ambrosiano** (from **Ambrogio**, patron saint of Milan) is often used (in R2–3) as an alternative to **milanese**.

The English name of the Italian town (if any) is given in brackets.

Each of the two provinces of Massa-Carrara and Pesaro-Urbino has one *sigla*, respectively MS and PS, but two capitals. The corresponding adjectives have been given for both pairs.

City	Abbr.	Adjective	City	Abbr.	Adjective
Agrigento	**AG**	**agrigentino**	**Enna**	**EN**	**ennese**
Alessandria	**AL**	**alessandrino**			
Ancona	**AN**	**anconetano**, **anconitano**	**Ferrara**	**FE**	**ferrarese**
			Firenze (Florence)	**FI**	**fiorentino**
Aosta	**AO**	**aostano**			
Arezzo	**AR**	**aretino**	**Foggia**	**FG**	**foggiano**
Ascoli Piceno	**AP**	**ascolano**	**Forlì**	**FO**	**forlivese**
Asti	**AT**	**astigiano**	**Frosinone**	**FR**	**frusinate**
Avellino	**AV**	**avellinese**			
			Genova (Genoa)	**GE**	**genovese**
Bari	**BA**	**barese**			
Belluno	**BL**	**bellunese**	**Gorizia**	**GO**	**goriziano**
Benevento	**BN**	**beneventano**	**Grosseto**	**GR**	**grossetano**
Bèrgamo	**BG**	**bergamasco**			
Biella	**BI**	**biellese**	**Imperia**	**IM**	**imperiese**
Bologna	**BO**	**bolognese**	**Isernia**	**IS**	**isernino**
Bolzano	**BZ**	**bolzanino**, **-ese**			
Brescia	**BS**	**bresciano**	**L'Aquila**	**AQ**	**aquilano**
Brìndisi	**BR**	**brindisino**	**La Spezia**	**SP**	**spezzino**
			Latina	**LT**	**latinense**
Càgliari	**CA**	**cagliaritano**	**Lecce**	**LE**	**leccese**
Caltanissetta	**CL**	**nisseno**	**Lecco**	**LC**	**lecchese**
Campobasso	**CB**	**campobassano**	**Livorno** (Leghorn)	**LI**	**livornese**
Caserta	**CE**	**casertano**			
Catania	**CT**	**catanese**	**Lodi**	**LO**	**lodigiano**
Catanzaro	**CZ**	**catanzarese**	**Lucca**	**LU**	**lucchese**
Chieti	**CH**	**teatino**, **chietino**			
Como	**CO**	**comasco**, **comacino** (R3)	**Macerata**	**MC**	**maceratese**
			Mantova (Mantua)	**MN**	**mantovano**
Cosenza	**CS**	**cosentino**			
Cremona	**CR**	**cremonese**	**Massa Carrara**	**MS**	**massese** **carr(ar)ese**
Crotone	**KR**	**crotonese**			
Cùneo	**CN**	**cunee(n)se**	**Matera**	**MT**	**materano**

City	Abbr.	Adjective	City	Abbr.	Adjective
Messina	**ME**	**messinese**	**Rimini**	**RN**	**riminese**
Milano (Milan)	**MI**	**milanese**	**Roma**	**ROMA**	**romano**
			Rovigo	**RO**	**rodigino**, **rovigotto**
Modena	**MO**	**modenese**			
Napoli (Naples)	**NA**	**napoletano**	**Salerno**	**SA**	**salernitano**
			Sassari	**SS**	**sassarese**
Novara	**NO**	**novarese**	**Savona**	**SV**	**savonese**
Nuoro	**NU**	**nuorese**	**Siena**	**SI**	**senese**
			Siracusa	**SR**	**siracusano**
Oristano	**OR**	**oristanese**	**Sondrio**	**SO**	**sondriese**, **sondriotto**
Padova (Padua)	**PD**	**padovano**			
Palermo	**PA**	**palermitano**	**Tàranto**	**TA**	**tarantino**
Parma	**PR**	**parmigiano**, **parmense**	**Tèramo**	**TE**	**teramano**
			Terni	**TR**	**ternano**
Pavia	**PV**	**pavese**	**Torino** (Turin)	**TO**	**torinese**
Perugia	**PG**	**perugino**			
Pesaro	**PS**	**pesarese**	**Tràpani**	**TP**	**trapanese**
Urbino		**urbinate**	**Trento** (Trent)	**TN**	**trentino**
Pescara	**PE**	**pescarese**	**Treviso**	**TV**	**trevisano**, **trevigiano**
Piacenza	**PC**	**piacentino**			
Pisa	**PI**	**pisano**	**Trieste**	**TS**	**triestino**
Pistoia	**PT**	**pistoiese**			
Pordenone	**PN**	**pordenonese**	**Udine**	**UD**	**udinese**
Potenza	**PZ**	**potentino**			
Prato	**PO**	**pratese**	**Varese**	**VA**	**varesino**, **varesotto**
Ragusa	**RG**	**ragusano**	**Venezia** (Venice)	**VE**	**veneziano**
Ravenna	**RA**	**ravennate**, **ravegnano** (less common)	**Verbania**	**VB**	**verbanese**
			Vercelli	**VC**	**vercellese**
Reggio Calabria	**RC**	**reggino**	**Verona**	**VR**	**veronese**
			Vibo Valentia	**VV**	**vibonese**
Reggio Emilia	**RE**	**reggiano**	**Vicenza**	**VI**	**vicentino**
Rieti	**RI**	**reatino**, **rietino**	**Viterbo**	**VT**	**viterbese**

8.3 Continents

English name	Italian name	Italian adjective
Africa	**Africa**	**africano**, **afro-**
America	**America**	**americano**
North America	**America del Nord**, **Nordamerica**	**nordamericano**
South America	**America del Sud**, **Sudamerica**	**sudamericano**
Antarctica	**Antàrtide** (f)	(**antàrtico**)
Asia	**Asia**	**asiatico**
Europe	**Europa**	**europeo**, **euro-**
Oceania	**Oceania**	**oceaniano** (R3)

NOTE: **America** is often used (in R1–2) meaning **Stati Uniti**, and **americano** (in R2) meaning **statunitense**.

8.4 Europe: countries and regions

This table lists a number of European countries and regions that have an Italian name markedly different from the English, and/or an unusual adjective.

English name	Italian name	Italian adjective
Albania	**Albanìa**	**albanese**, **albano-**
Armenia	**Armenia**	**armeno**
Austria	**Austria**	**austriaco**, **austro-**
Bavaria	**Baviera**	**bavarese**
Belgium	**Belgio**	**belga** (pl. **belgi**/**belghe**)
Bohemia	**Boemia**	**boemo**
Bulgaria	**Bulgarìa**	**bùlgaro**
Burgundy	**Borgogna**	**borgognone**
Catalonia	**Catalogna**	**catalano**
Cornwall	**Cornovaglia**	(**còrnico**) (R3)

English name	Italian name	Italian adjective
Corsica	**Corsica**	**còrso**
Croatia	**Croazia**	**croato**
Cyprus	**Cipro †** (f)	**cipriota**
Czech Republic	**Repubblica Ceca**	**ceco**
Denmark	**Danimarca**	**danese**
Estonia	**Estonia**	**èstone**
Finland	**Finlandia**	**finlandese**, **finnico** (R2–3)
France	**Francia**	**francese**, **franco-**
Germany	**Germania**	**tedesco**
Great Britain	**Gran Bretagna**	**britannico**
England	**Inghilterra**	**inglese**, **anglo-**
Northern Ireland	**Irlanda del Nord**	**nordirlandese**
Scotland	**Scozia**	**scozzese**
Wales	**Galles** (m)	**gallese**
United Kingdom	**Regno Unito** (R2–3)	**–**
Greece	**Grecia**	**greco**
Greenland	**Groenlandia**	**groenlandese**
Holland	**Olanda**	**olandese**
Hungary	**Ungheria**	**ungherese**, **ugro-**
Ireland	**Irlanda**	**irlandese**
Iceland	**Islanda**	**islandese**
Italy	**Italia**	**italiano**, **ìtalo-**
Kosovo	**Kosovo**	**co(s)sovaro**
Lapland	**Lapponia**	**làppone**
Latvia	**Lettonia**	**lèttone**
Lithuania	**Lituania**	**lituano**
Luxembourg	**Lussemburgo**	**lussemburghese**
Macedonia	**Macedonia**	**macèdone**
Moldova	**Moldavia**	**moldavo**
Monaco	**Montecarlo †** (f)/**Principato di Mònaco**	**monegasco**

English name	Italian name	Italian adjective
Montenegro	**Montenegro**	**montenegrino**
Norway	**Norvegia**	**norvegese**
Poland	**Polonia**	**polacco**
Portugal	**Portogallo**	**portoghese**
Provence	**Provenza**	**provenzale**
Rhodes	**Rodi** † (f)	**rodiota** (R2–3), **rodiense** (R2–3), **rodiese**, **ròdio** (R3)
Romania	**Romania**	**romeno**, **rumeno**
Russia	**Russia**	**russo**
San Marino	**San Marino** † (f)	**sanmarinese**
Savoy	**Savoia**	**savoiardo**
Saxony	**Sassonia**	**sàssone**
Scandinavia	**Scandinavia**	**scandinàvo**
Serbia	**Serbia**	**serbo**
Slovak Republic	**Slovacchia**	**slovacco**
Slovenia	**Slovenia**	**sloveno**
Soviet Union	**Unione Sovietica**	**sovietico**
Spain	**Spagna**	**spagnolo**, **ispano-**
Swabia	**Svevia**	**svevo**
Sweden	**Svezia**	**svedese**
Switzerland	**Svizzera**	**svizzero**
Turkey	**Turchia**	**turco**
Ukraine	**Ucràina**	**ucràino**
Vatican City	**Città del Vaticano**	(**vaticano**)

NOTE: the terms **Inghilterra/inglese** (and **anglo-**) are often used (R1–2) with the meanings of **Gran Bretagna/britannico**. Similarly, **Russia/russo** are often used with the meaning of **Unione Sovietica/sovietico**.

NOTE ALSO that, although rejected by purists, the pronunciation **scandìnavo** is commonly used.

8.5 The Americas: countries and regions

Many South American countries have the same name in Italian as in English, and a corresponding adjective formed along the lines of **Colombia – colombiano**. They have not been included in this list.

English name	Italian name	Italian adjective
Argentina	**Argentina**	**argentino**
Brazil	**Brasile** (m)	**brasiliano**
Canada	**Cànada/Canadà** (m)	**canadese**
Chile	**Cile** (m)	**cileno**
Ecuador	**Ecuador** (m)	**ecuadoriano**
El Salvador	(**El**) **Salvador** (m)	**salvadoregno** (R2–3)
Guatemala	**Guatemala** (m)	**guatemalteco** (R2–3)
Honduras	**Honduras** (m)	**honduregno** (R2–3), **honduriano**
Mexico	**Messico**	**messicano**
Nicaragua	**Nicaragua** (m)	**nicaraguegno** (R2–3), **nicaraguese**
Panama	**Panama** † (f)	**panamense**
Peru	**Perù** (m)	**peruviano**
Puerto Rico	**Portorico**	**portoricano**
Tierra del Fuego	**Terra del Fuoco**	**–**
US(A)	**Stati Uniti** (**d'America**) (m pl), **America** (R1–2)	**statunitense** (R2–3), **americano**

NOTE: some of the States of the USA have a corresponding adjective in Italian: **californiano**, **texano**, **georgiano**, **hawaiano** [ava'jano/awa'jano].

8.6 Asia: countries and regions

This table lists some of the Asian countries that have an Italian name markedly different from the English, and/or an unusual adjective.

Due to the origin of the geographical names ending in *-stan* (= territory [of a certain people]) a similar pattern characterizes most

adjectives corresponding to regions ending in this way, e.g. **Afganistan** – **afgano**, **Usbechistan** – **usbeco**. A notable exception is **Pakistan** (whose formation is different), that gives the adjectives **pachistano**, **pakistano**.

English name	Italian name	Italian adjective
Afghanistan	**Afganistan** (m)	**afgano**
Burma	**Birmania**	**birmano**
Cambodia	**Cambogia**	**cambogiano**
China	**Cina**	**cinese**, **sino-**
Iraq	**Iraq** (m)	**iracheno**
Israel	**Israele** † (m)	**israeliano**
Japan	**Giappone** (m)	**giapponese**
Java	**Giava** †	**giavanese**
Jordan	**Giordania**	**giordano**
Laos	**Laos** (m)	**laotiano** (R2–3)
Lebanon	**Libano**	**libanese**
Malaya	**Malesia**	**malese**
Middle East	**Medio Oriente**	**mediorientale**
Mongolia	**Mongolia**	**mòngolo**
Palestine	**Palestina**	**palestinese**
Philippines	**Filippine** (f pl)	**filippino**
Saudi Arabia	**Arabia Saudita**	**arabo**, **saudita**, **arabo-**
Thailand	**Tailandia**	**tailandese**
Tibet	**Tìbet** (m)	**tibetano**
Vietnam	**Vietnam** (m)	**vietnamita**
Yemen	**Yemen** (m)	**yemenita**

NOTE: **israelita** (= Israelite) is not used to indicate an inhabitant of modern Israel. Also: Hebrew, Jew = **ebreo** (n); Hebrew (adj) = **ebraico**; Jewish = **ebraico**, **ebreo** (less common).

8.7 Africa: countries and regions

This table lists some of the African countries and regions that have an Italian name markedly different from the English, and/or an unusual adjective. For a number of African countries that are not in the list, e.g.

Ghana, **Niger** etc., the corresponding adjectives don't exist or are not commonly used.

English name	Italian name	Italian adjective
Algeria	**Algerìa**	**algerino**
Egypt	**Egitto**	**egiziano**
Ethiopia	**Etiopia**	**etìope**, (**etiopico**), **etiopico-**
Kenia	**Kenia** (m)	**keniano**, **keniota**
Libya	**Libia**	**lìbico**
Mauritania	**Mauritania**	**mauritano**
Morocco	**Marocco**	**marocchino**
Somalia	**Somalia**	**sòmalo**
South Africa	**Sudafrica** (m)/**Repubblica Sudafricana** (R2–3)	**sudafricano** NOTE: Bushman = **boscìmano**
Tunisia	**Tunisìa**	**tunisino**

8.8 Oceania: countries and regions

For some of the States of Australia there are Italian versions, which have been included in the list next to the original English name. Apart from Tasmania, all the States and the Territory are masculine in Italian, when used in their English form.
NOTE that even though **Galles** (=Wales) is masculine on its own, the Italian version of New South Wales is sometimes feminine (**la Nuova Galles del Sud**).

English name	Italian name	Italian adjective
New Zealand	**Nuova Zelanda**	**neozelandese**
New Guinea	**Nuova Guinea**	**–**
Western Australia	**Western Australia**, **Australia Occidentale**	**westaustraliano** [westaustra'ljano]
South Australia	**South Australia**, **Australia Meridionale**	**sudaustraliano**

English name	Italian name	Italian adjective
New South Wales	**New South Wales**, **Nuovo/-a Galles del Sud**	**–**
Northern Territory	**Northern Territory**, **Territorio del Nord**	**–**
Victoria	**Victoria** (m)	**–** NOTE: **vittoriano** usu refers to Queen Victoria

8.9 Historical or mythical places

English name	Italian name	Italian adjective
Aix-la-Chapelle	**Aquisgrana**	**–**
Alexandria	**Alessandria** (**d'Egitto**)	**alessandrino**
Antioch	**Antiochia**	**antiocheno** (R3)
Atlantis	**Atlàntide** (f)	**–** NOTE: **atlantico** refers to the Atlantic Ocean
Bethlehem	**Betlemme**	**–**
Byzantium	**Bisanzio**	**bizantino**
Carthage	**Cartàgine**	**cartaginese**, (**pùnico**)
Constantinople	**Costantinopoli**	**–**
Corinth	**Corinto**	**corinzio**
Damascus	**Damasco**	**damasceno** (R3), **damaschino**
Galilee	**Galilea**	**galileo**
Gaul	**Gallia**	**gallo**, (**gàllico**)
Iberia	**Iberia**	**ibèro**, (**ibèrico**), **ìbero-**
Judaea	**Giudea**	**giudeo**, (**giudàico**)

English name	Italian name	Italian adjective
Nazareth	**Nazaret**	**nazareno**
Smyrna	**Smirne**	**smirnèo** (R3, ancient times), **smirniota** (R3, modern times)
Thrace	**Tracia**	**tracio**
Troy	**Troia**	**troiano** NOTE: 'Trojan horse' is translated **cavallo di Troia** (NOT **cavallo troiano**)

8.10 Cities of the world

English name	Italian name	Italian adjective
Adelaide	**Adelaide** [ade'laide]	**–**
Algiers	**Algeri**	**algerino**
Antwerp	**Anversa**	**–**
Athens	**Atene**	**ateniese**
Baltimore	**Baltimora**	**–**
Barcelona	**Barcellona**	**–**
Belgrade	**Belgrado**	**belgradese**
Berlin	**berlino**	**berlinese**
Bern	**Berna**	**bernese**
Cadiz	**Càdice**	**gaditano** (R3)
Cairo	**Il Cairo**	**cairota** (m pl **-i**, f pl **-e**) (R3)
Cape Town	**Città del Capo**	**–**
Cologne	**Colonia**	**–**
Dublin	**Dublino**	**dublinese**
Edinburgh	**Edimburgo**	**–**
Frankfurt	**Francoforte**	**–**

English name	Italian name	Italian adjective
Geneva	**Ginevra**	**ginevrino**
Gibraltar	**Gibilterra**	**–**
Hamburg	**Amburgo**	**amburghese**
Havana	**L'Avana**	**avanese**
Krakow	**Cracovia**	**cracoviano**
Liege	**Liegi**	**–**
Lisbon	**Lisbona**	**lisbonese**
London	**Londra**	**londinese**
Lyon	**Lione**	**lionese**
Madrid	**Madrid**	**madrileno**
Marseille	**Marsiglia**	**marsigliese**
Mexico City	**Città del Messico**	**–**
Moscow	**Mosca**	**moscovita**
Munich	**Mònaco** (**di Baviera**)	**monacense** (R3)
New York	**New York** [nju'jɔrk] (less frequently **Nuova York**)	**newyorkese** [njujor'keze], **nuovaiorchese/-kese**
Nice	**Nizza**	**nizzardo** NOTE: the inhabitants of **Nizza Monferrato** (Piemonte) are called **nicesi** or **nizzesi**
Nuremberg	**Norimberga**	**–**
Paris	**Parigi**	**parigino**
Peking/Beijing	**Pechino**	**pechinese**
Philadelphia	**Filadelfia**	**filadelfiese** (R2–3)
Piraeus	**Il Pireo**	**–**
Prague	**Praga**	**praghese**
Salzburg	**Salisburgo**	**salisburghese**
São Paulo	**San Paolo**	**–**
Seville	**Siviglia**	**sivigliano**
Sophia	**Sòfia**	**–**

English name	Italian name	Italian adjective
St Petersburg	**San Pietroburgo**	**–**
Stockholm	**Stoccolma**	**–**
Strasbourg	**Strasburgo**	**–**
The Hague	**L'Aia**	**–**
Tunis	**Tunisi**	**tunisino**
Vienna	**Vienna**	**viennese**
Zaragoza	**Saragozza**	**–**

8.11 Rivers of the world

The rivers in this table are masculine unless otherwise stated (cf. section 14.3).

Amazon	**Rio delle Amàzzoni**	Rhone	**Ròdano**
Danube	**Danubio**	Seine	**Senna** (f)
Euphrates	**Eufrate**	St. Lawrence	**San Lorenzo**
Ganges	**Gange**	Tagus	**Tago**
Indus	**Indo**	Thames	**Tamigi**
Loire	**Loira** (f)	Tiber	**Tévere**
Nile	**Nilo**	Tigris	**Tigri**
Rhine	**Reno**	Yellow River	**Fiume Giallo**

NOTE the adjectives **tiberino**, for the **Tevere**, and **padano**, for the **Po** river.

8.12 Mountains and volcanoes of the world

Alps	**le Alpi**	Matterhorn	**il (monte) Cervino**
Apennines	**gli Appennini**	Mont Blanc	**il Monte Bianco**
Appalachians	**gli Appalacchi**	Pyrenees	**i Pirenei**
Carpathians	**i Carpazi**	Rocky Mountains	**le Montagne Rocciose**
Caucasus	**il Càucaso**		
Himalayas	**l'Himalàia** (m)	Urals	**gli Urali**
Kilimanjaro	**il Kilimangiaro**	Vesuvius	**il Vesuvio**

8.13 Planets, stars, and constellations

With the exception of **la Terra**, the planets are masculine.

Earth	**Terra**	Leo	**Leone** (m)
Jupiter	**Giove**	Libra	**Bilancia**
Mars	**Marte**	Pisces	**Pesci** (m pl)
Mercury	**Mercurio**	Sagittarius	**Sagittario**
Neptune	**Nettuno**	Scorpio	**Scorpione** (m)
Pluto	**Plutone**	Taurus	**Toro**
Saturn	**Saturno**	Virgo	**Vergine** (f)
Uranus	**Urano**	Pole Star, North Star	**Stella Polare**
Venus	**Venere**	Southern Cross	**Croce del Sud**
Aquarius	**Acquario**	Ursa Major, Big Bear, Big Dipper (US)	**Orsa Maggiore**, **Gran Carro**
Aries	**Ariete** (m)		
Cancer	**Cancro**	Ursa Minor, Little Bear, Little Dipper (US)	**Orsa Minore**, **Piccolo Carro**
Capricorn	**Capricorno**		
Gemini	**Gemelli** (m pl)		

9 Abbreviations and acronyms

The abbreviations and acronyms in use in Italian are many and ever changing. The following conventions apply generally in Italian.

For all measurements (metric, scientific etc.) the abbreviations used in Italian follow international conventions.

Words are usually truncated after a consonant or cluster of consonants, e.g. **part.**(*icipio*) **pass.**(*ato*). Days and months, on the other hand, are often found abbreviated after their third letter, e.g. **gio** for **giovedì**, **ago** for **agosto**. A shortened form is sometimes followed by the last letters of the word, e.g. **Gent.mo** for **Gentilissimo**.

In acronyms, the plural is sometimes indicated in writing by doubling the initial letter, e.g. **AA VV** for **Autori vari**; in some truncated words, the last letter (consonant) may be found repeated, e.g. **pagg.** for **pagine** as opposed to **pag.** for **pagina**.

The shortening of words is mainly a writing expedient and truncated words are mostly read in their full form: **Sig.** is always read "**signor**(**e**)."

Acronyms, on the other hand, are pronounced and can be written as normal nouns whenever possible, e.g. **UFO**, which is read "ufo" and can be found written **Ufo** or **ufo**. In some cases, however, a letter by letter reading is unavoidable, e.g. **BBC**, pronounced "bi-bi-cì". There are also some "hybrid" forms, such as **CGIL** (a trade union), pronounced "ci-gi-elle," with "gi" incorporating "i," or **RAI TV**, pronounced "rai ti-vù." Note that among the acronyms we can count also those word-like abbreviations obtained by using more than just the first letter of the words of the full denomination, e.g. (**la**/**una**) **colf** for **collaboratrice familiare**; (**la**) **Cariplo** ['kariplo], for **Cassa di Risparmio delle Provincie Lombarde**. Other forms of common word-like abbreviations are obtained by contracting the (two) most meaningful words of the full name into one word, e.g. (**la**) **Confindustria** [konfin'dustrja], for **Confederazione Generale dell'Industria Italiana**.

In most cases acronyms take articles: definite, in the case of specific objects or organizations (e.g. **la NATO**, **la BBC**, **il DNA**); definite or indefinite in the other cases (e.g. **l'**/**un UFO**, **il**/**un CD**).

Acronyms usually maintain gender and number of the head noun of the full Italian expression, e.g.:

la Fabbrica Italiana Automobili Torino > **la FIAT**.

Among the very few exceptions we can count **UPIM**, usu feminine in spite of its original, but all-but-forgotten meaning, **Unico Prezzo Italiano di Milano**.

For foreign acronyms, gender and number are usually those of the corresponding Italian expression, e.g.:

"organization" = *organizzazione* (f s) > **la FAO**, **la NATO**;

"States" = *Stati* (m pl) > **gli USA**

The "word-like" acronyms that may be used in the plural tend to remain invariable, e.g. **un Ufo**, **dieci Ufo**.

Tables of common Italian abbreviations and acronyms

The following tables contain a small sample of the abbreviations and acronyms commonly used in Italian. Please note the following.

The acronyms with a 'spelling-like' pronunciation, e.g. **BBC**, are preceded by an asterisk * (for the pronunciation of letters see section 12.2.2).

'Word-like' acronyms, e.g. **UFO**, are preceded by the symbol °. Their pronunciation is given in the form of Italian words (to be read according to Italian pronunciation conventions), in italics and within square brackets, in the second column of each table.

All the other abbreviations are pronounced in their full form, as indicated in the second column of each table.

9.1 Titles and other frequently used abbreviations

Note that, although they may be reported in lower case, all the abbreviated titles are very often used with a capital letter, e.g. **Sig.ra**, instead of **sig.ra**, as a (further) sign of respect.

There is no Italian equivalent of *Ms* (cf **14.2**).

	Abbreviation		Italian meaning, pronunciation	English counterpart
*	**A . . .**	f	Autostrada (+ *number*), e.g. **A 25**, pronounced *a venticinque*	M (UK), Motorway, Freeway
	a.C.		avanti Cristo	BC (Before Christ)
	AA. VV.		Autori vari	(by) various authors
* °	**AIDS**	f	Sindrome di Immunodeficienza Acquisita [*aidiesse* or *àids*]	AIDS
	avv.		avvocato (+ *name*)	lawyer
°	**BOT**	m	Buono (Ordinario) del Tesoro [usu pl *i bot*]	Treasury bond
	c.a.		corrente anno	current year

	Abbreviation		Italian meaning, pronunciation	English counterpart
°	**C.A.P.**	m	Codice di Avviamento Postale [*cap*] NOTE: in addresses, the C.A.P. is written before the city, e.g. **sig. Bianchi, via Verdi 8, 00100 Roma**	Post/Zip Code
	c.d.d.; **c.v.d.**		come dovevasi dimostrare; come volevasi dimostrare	Q.E.D.
	c.m.		corrente mese	current month, inst.
	C.P.		Casella Postale	PO Box
	c.so		corso	(main street, boulevard)
	c/c		conto corrente	current/cheque/check (US) account
	c/o		presso	c/o
	ca.		circa	c., ca.
	cap.		capitolo	ch., chapter
*	**CD** (**ROM**)	m	Compact disc [*ci dì* (*rom*)]	CD (ROM)
	cfr.		(Lat. *confer*) confronta	cf.
°	**colf**	f	collaboratrice familiare [*colf*]	housemaid
	d.C.		dopo Cristo	AD (NOTE: AD *year* = *year* d.C., e.g. AD 79 = **79 d.C.**)
*	**DNA**	m	acido deossiribonucleico	DNA
°	**DOC**		Denominazione d'Origine Controllata [*doc*, adj, e.g. **vino doc** = *vino a denominazione di origine controllata*]	Wine denomination and origin certified
	dott./ **dott.ssa**		dottor/dottoressa (+ *name*)	title given to anyone with a university degree
	E		est	E (East)
	ecc.		eccetera	etc.
	Egr.		egregio	distinguished (in letters, addresses)
	es.; **p. es.**		esempio; per esempio	ex., example; e.g.
	et al.		(Lat. *et alii*) e altri	et al.
	F.lli		Fratelli (+ *name*)	Bros.
	G.U.		Gazzetta Ufficiale	Official Government Bulletin

	Abbreviation		Italian meaning, pronunciation	English counterpart
	ibid.		ibidem	ibid.
	id.		idem	id.
	Ill.mo		Illustrissimo	most illustrious (in formal letters and addresses)
	ing.		ingegner (+ *name*)	engineer (used as title)
°	**IVA**	f	Imposta sul Valore Aggiunto [*iva*]	VAT, Value Added Tax (= approx. GST, Goods and Services Tax)
*	**k.o.**		fuori combattimento	K.O., knock(ed) out
	l.go		largo	type of "piazza"
	loc. cit.		(Lat. *loco citato*) al passo citato	loc. cit.
	N		nord	N (North)
	N.B.		Nota Bene	(please) note, NB
	N.d.A.		nota dell'autore	author's note
	N.d.R.		nota del redattore	editor's note
	N.d.T.		nota del traduttore	translator's note
	ND		nobil donna	M(r)s . . . (in mail addresses)
	NH		nobil uomo	Mr . . . (in mail addresses)
*	**NN**		padre ignoto/genitori ignoti (only in the locution **figlio/-a di NN**)	
	N°; **n.**		numero	No., number
	NS		Nostro Signore	Our Lord
	ns.		nostro/-a	our(s) (usu = our letter)
	O (*also* W)		ovest	W (West)
	op. cit.		(Lat., *opere citato*), opera citata	op. cit.
	p. es.		per esempio	e.g., for example
	p., **pag.**; **pp.**, **pagg.**		pagina; pagine	p., pp.; page, pages
	p.c.		per conoscenza	c.c., cc. (carbon copy), copy to
	P.I.L.	m	prodotto interno lordo	GNP
*	**P.S.**	m	postscriptum, poscritto	P.S., postscript
	p.v.; **pv/**		prossimo venturo	prox., next (month)

	Abbreviation		Italian meaning, pronunciation	English counterpart
	p.za		piazza	Sq.
	R.I.P.		riposi(no) in pace	R.I.P.
	racc.		raccomandata	registered mail (letter)
	rag.		ragionier (+ *name*)	accountant, book keeper (title)
	s., seg.; **ss.**		seguente; seguenti	f.; ff. (following)
	s.; **S.**		san, santo, sant', santa	St.
	S.A.R.		Sua Altezza Reale	H.R.H.
	s.l.m.		sul livello del mare	above sea level
*	**S.p.A.**		Società per Azioni	joint-stock company
*	**S.r.l.**		Società a responsabilità limitata	Ltd., limited liability company
	S.S.		Strada Statale	National Road
	S.S.		Sua Santità	H.H., His Holiness
	s.v.		(Lat. *sub voce*) sotto la voce	reference in dictionaries; s.v.
	S.V; **SS.VV**		Signoria Vostra; Signorie Vostre	formal "you" (s and pl)
	sc.		(Lat. *scilicet*), vale a dire	viz., sc.
	sig.		signor (+ *name*)	Mr
	sig.na		signorina (+ *name*)	Miss
	sig.ra		signora (+ *name*)	Mrs
	Soc.		Società	Company NOTE: ". . .& Co." corresponds to Italian **. . . e C.** [*e compagni*].
	Spett.		spettabile	dear, lit respectable (in letters and addresses)
	SS.		Santissimo	Most Holy
	ss., **SS**.		santi/sante	SS, Saints
	T		Tabaccheria	Tobacconist (shop sign)
°	**TAC**	f	Tomografia Assiale Computerizzata [*tac*]	CAT scan
	tel.		telefono	tel., ph.
	u.s.		ultimo scorso	ult., last (month)
	v.		vedi	see; v.
	v.le		viale	Av(e).; Blvd.
	vs.		vostro/-a	your(s), (*usu* = your letter)

9.2 International organizations

	Abbreviation		Italian meaning, pronunciation	English counterpart
*	**BBC**	f	Ente Britannico di Radiodiffusione	BBC
	BCE		Banca Centrale Europea	ECB
	CD		Corpo Diplomatico	CD
°	**CEE**	f	Comunità Economica Europea [*cèe*]	EEC
°	**CIA**	f	Agenzia Centrale d'Informazione [*cia*]	CIA
	CIO		Comitato Olimpico Internazionale	IOC
*	**FBI**	m	Ufficio Federale Investigativo [pronounced *(l') effebiài*]	FBI
°	**FIFA**	f	Federazione Internazionale del Calcio [*fifa*]	FIFA
	FMI	m	Fondo Monetario Internazionale	IMF
*	**IBM**	f	Società Internazionale Macchine per Uffici	IBM
°	**NATO**	f	Organizzazione del Trattato Nord Atlantico [*nato*]	NATO
*	**OLP**	f	Organizzazione per la Liberazione della Palestina	PLO
	OMS		Organizzazione Mondiale della Sanità	WHO
°	**ONU**	f	Organizzazione delle Nazioni Unite [*onu*]	UNO
°	**OPEC**	f	Organizzazione dei Paesi esportatori di petrolio [*òpec*]	OPEC
°	**RAF**	f	Aviazione militare inglese [*raf*]	RAF
°	**SME**	m	Sistema Monetario Europeo [*lo sme*]	EMS
	UE		Unione Europea	EU
	UEM		Unione Economica e Monetaria	EMU
°	**URSS**		Unione delle Repubbliche Socialiste Sovietiche [usu *l'Unione Sovietica*, or *la Russia* (R1–2), but also *l'urs*]	USSR
°	**USA**	m	Stati Uniti (d'America) [*gli usa*]	USA
*	**WWF**	m	Fondo Mondiale per la Natura [pron. *vu vu èffe*]	WWF

9.3 Italian non-political organizations

Some of the organizations mentioned in this list are today in a state of flux. Changes in the ownership of part or all of their corporate structures may affect their denomination and, in some cases, their existence.

Some non-official political organizations have been included in this list rather than the next one.

	Abbreviation		Italian meaning, pronunciation	Explanatory notes
°	**ACLI**	f	Associazioni Cattoliche dei Lavoratori Italiani [*le acli*]	Italian Workers' Catholic Associations
°	**AGIP**	f	Azienda Generale Italiana Petroli [*agip*]	State oil company
	A.I.		Aeronautica Italiana	Italian Air Force
°	**ANAS**	f	Azienda Nazionale Autonoma delle Strade [*anas*]	National roads board
*	**B.R.**		Brigate rosse [*le bierre*]	Red Brigades (terrorists)
°	**CARIPLO**	f	Cassa Risparmio Provincie Lombarde [*càriplo*]	(Bank)
	CC		Carabinieri	(Military police)
°	**CEI**	f	Conferenza Episcopale Italiana [*cei*]	Italian bishops' Conference
*	**CL**		Comunione e Liberazione [(no article) *ci-èlle*, *i ci-ellìni*]	(Catholic movement)
*	**CNR**	m	Consiglio Nazionale delle Ricerche	National research council
°	**CONI**	m	Comitato Olimpico Nazionale Italiano [*coni*]	Italian national Olympic committee
	CRI	f	Croce Rossa Italiana	Italian Red Cross
	E.I.		Esercito Italiano	Italian Army
°	**ENEL**	m/f	Ente Nazionale Energia Elettrica [*enel*]	State electric company
°	**ENI**	m/f	Ente Nazionale Idrocarburi [*eni*]	State company for hydrocarbons
	FF. AA.		Forze Armate	Armed forces
	FF. SS.		Ferrovie dello Stato	Italian railways
	FI . . .		Federazione Italiana . . .	Italian federation . . . (*appears in many acronyms*)

	Abbreviation		Italian meaning, pronunciation	Explanatory notes
°	**FIAT**	f	Fabbrica Italiana Automobili Torino [*fiat*]	FIAT
	FIGC		Federazione Italiana Gioco Calcio	Italian football federation
	G.d.F.		Guardia di Finanza	Finance police
°	**IRI**	m/f	Istituto per la Ricostruzione Industriale [*ìri*]	(The "umbrella" for state-owned companies)
°	**ISTAT**	m	Istituto Centrale di Statistica [*ìstat*]	Central institute for statistics
	M.M.		Marina Militare	Italian Navy
*	**P.S.**	f	Pubblica Sicurezza	Police
°	**RAI** (**TV**)	f	Radio-televisione Italiana [*rai (ti (v)vù)*]	State television company
°	**STANDA**	f	Società Tutti Articoli Nazionali dell'Arredamento e Abbigliamento [*standa*]	(Chain of department stores)
°	**UPIM**	f	Unico Prezzo Italiano di Milano	(Chain of department stores)
	VV. UU.	m	Vigili Urbani	Municipal traffic police

9.4 Italian official political organizations, unions etc.

In the last fifty years, the fertile world of Italian politics, with its characteristically "hot" climate, has been particularly favorable to the sprouting of a great variety of parties and organizations. Many of them are often referred to in their abbreviated form, not only in writing, but also in speech. Of these, the following table lists the most frequently mentioned, including some that, although politically extinct or existing under different denominations, are still linguistically alive. It should be borne in mind that the winds of change of the last few years may well keep blowing into the immediate future.

	Abbreviation		Italian meaning, pronunciation	Explanatory notes
*	**AN**	f	Alleanza Nazionale [*aenne* (no article)]	National Alliance
*	**CCD**	m	Centro Cristiano Democratico [*il cicidì*, *i democratici di centro*]	Christian Democratic Center
*	**CDU**	m	Cristiani Democratici Uniti [*il cidiù*]	Christian Democrats United

	Abbreviation		Italian meaning, pronunciation	Explanatory notes
*	**CGIL**	f	Confederazione Generale Italiana del Lavoro [*la cigi-èlle*]	(Trade union)
°	**CISL**	f	Confederazione Italiana Sindacati Lavoratori [*la cisl*]	(Trade union)
*	**DC**	f	Democrazia Cristiana [*la diccì*, *i democristiani*]	Christian Democrats (extinct)
*	**DS**		Democratici di sinistra [*diesse* (no article)]	Left Democrats
°	**MSI**	m	Movimento Sociale Italiano [*il mis*, *i missini*]	(Extreme right-wing party now extinct)
*	**PCI**	m	Partito Comunista Italiano [*il piccì*, *i comunisti*]	Communist Party (extinct)
°	**PLI**	m	Partito Liberale Italiano [*il pli*, *i liberali*]	Liberal Party
*	**PPI**	m	Partito Popolare Italiano [*il pippi-ì*, *i popolari*]	Italian Popular Party
	PR		Partito Radicale [or *i radicali*]	Radical Party
°	**PRI**	m	Partito Repubblicano Italiano [*il pri*, *i repubblicani*]	Republican Party
°	**PSDI**	m	Partito Socialista Democratico Italiano [*il psdi* (note the article), *i socialdemocratici*]	Socialist Democratic Party (extinct)
°	**PSI**	m	Partito Socialista Italiano [*il psi* (note the article), *i socialisti*]	Socialist Party (extinct as **PSI**, resurrected as **PS** [*partito socialista*])
°	**PSIUP**	m	Partito Socialista Italiano di Unità Popolare [*il psiùp*, *i psiuppini* (note the articles)]	Socialist Party of Popular Unity (extinct)
*	**UDR**	f	Unione Democratica per la Repubblica [*l'udierre*]	Democratic Union for the Republic
°	**UIL**	f	Unione Italiana del Lavoro [*la uìl*]	(Trade union)

Some of the more frequently used Italian abbreviations are formed by creating new words out of two from the full name. In many cases, the first of the words involved is **confederazione**, which gives **conf-**, followed by the word that defines the organization. The resulting abbreviations are all pronounced and used as regular feminine nouns. The associations in this

list are generally representing the employers/owners/lessors in various fields of the economy.

Abbreviation	Italian meaning	Explanatory notes
Coldiretti	Confederazione nazionale coltivatori diretti	National Small Farmers' Federation
Confagricoltura	Confederazione Generale dell'Agricoltura Italiana	Italian Farmers' Association
Confapi	Confederazione Generale della Piccola Industria	Italian Small Manufacturers' Federation
Confartigianato	Confederazione Generale dell'Artigianato Italiano	Italian Artisans' Federation
Confcommercio	Confederazione Generale del Commercio	Italian Traders' Federation
Confedilizia	Confederazione Italiana della Proprietà Edilizia	Italian House Owners' Federation
Confindustria	Confederazione Generale dell'Industria Italiana	Italian Manufacturers' Federation

10 Latin expressions and sayings

Some of the most common Latin expressions in use in today's Italian are listed in the following tables. (See also section 9.1 for Latin abbreviations.)

NOTE that, in the Italian tradition, Latin is pronounced according to the rules of modern Italian, except for the diphthongs "ae" and "oe," read [ɛ] – e.g. *ex aequo* [ɛgz'ɛkwo/ɛks'ɛkwo] – and the group "ti" followed by vowel, which is pronounced [tsj] – e.g. *a fortiori*, [a for'tsjɔri]. In particular, "h" is always silent – e.g. *ad hoc* [ad ɔk] - and "j" is pronounced [j] – e.g. *Juventus* [ju'vɛntus].

10.1 Latin expressions

For some of these expressions the boundary between Latin and Italian is somewhat blurred, at least in most speakers' perception. In a case like **nota bene**, the argument in favour of an Italian reading is quite strong (to the point that this expression has not been included here as Latin); in others, such as **grosso modo**, the confusion arises from their widespread use and the existence of similar Italian words.

The following expressions are used as adjectives and/or adverbs, unless otherwise indicated. An English explanation of the Italian use of each expression has been given. A common Italian alternative has also been provided whenever available.

The symbol **#** indicates a similar use of the same expression in English, whereas the exclamation mark **!** warns that there are differences between Italian and English in their use of the same (or similar) Latin expression.

	Latin	Register	Italian	English
#	**a fortiori**	R3	a maggior ragione	*even more so*
#	**a posteriori**	R3	basato/basandosi sull'esperienza; dopo il fatto	*based on experience; after the event; with the benefit of hindsight*
#!	**a priori**		(R3) basato/basandosi sulla ragione; prima del fatto BUT usu (R2) = senza dati di fatto	*based on reason (not experience); before the event; without the support of facts*
#!	**ad hoc**	R2–3	(fatto) apposta/per l'occasione	*for the purpose*
#	**ad libitum**	R3	a piacere	*at will*
#!	**alter ego**	R2–3	(m) sostituto perfetto	*another self*
	cum grano salis	R3	con discernimento	*with a grain of salt*
#!	**deus ex machina**	R2–3	(m) *a person whose intervention resolves an intricate situation*	
	ex abrupto	R3	all'improvviso	*suddenly*
	ex aequo	R2	a pari merito, alla pari, e.g. **secondi ex aequo**	*equals*
#	**ex cathedra**	R3	*said of authoritative statements, esp by the pope in matter of faith, e.g.* **parlare ex cathedra**	
	ex novo	R2–3	da capo	*all over again*
	ex voto	R2–3	(m) *said of objects donated to churches* "per grazia ricevuta," *often in fulfilment of a vow*	
#	**gratis** (**et amore Dei**)		gratuito, gratuitamente	*free of charge*
	grosso modo		all'incirca, più o meno	*roughly, more or less*
!	**in extremis**		all'ultimo momento e.g. **salvarsi in extremis**	*at the last minute* NOTE the difference from the English use (= in an extreme case)
	in nuce	R3	in sostanza	*in substance*
#!	**interim**	R3	(m) *this term describes the period of vacancy of a particular office, as well as the appointment to temporarily fill it* (**accettare l'interim degli Interni** = to accept a temporary appointment as Minister of Internal Affairs)	

	Latin	Register	Italian	English
!	**ipso facto**	R3	subito, immediatamente	*immediately*
	lapis		(m) matita	*pencil*
	lapsus		(m) sbaglio, distrazione	*slip (of the pen/tongue)*
	mea culpa	R2–3	(m) ammissione di colpa; e.g. **fare** (**il**) **mea culpa**	*acknowledgment of one's faults*; "to acknowledge one's faults"
#	**modus vivendi**	R2–3	(m) accomodamento	*arrangement*
	mutatis mutandis	R2–3	fatti i dovuti cambiamenti	*with the necessary changes*
	non plus ultra		(m) (il) massimo; e.g. **è il non plus ultra**	*the top, the best, the "ne plus ultra"*
#	**persona non grata**	R3	(f) persona non gradita	*unwanted person*
	pro bono pacis		per quieto vivere	*for the sake of peace*
!	**quiproquo**	R2–3	(m) equivoco	*misunderstanding* NOTE the difference from **quid pro quo** (not used in Italian)
	rara avis	R3	(f) *said of person (or thing) that's exceptional for some good quality*	
!	**sine qua non**	R2–3	imprescindibile; e.g. **una condizione sine qua non**	*essential* NOTE: used as a noun in English
!	**statu quo** (**ante**)	R2–3	(m) situazione di fatto	status quo
	ultra [ul'tra] (through French)		(n inv) estremista (*usu in politics or sport*)	*extremist (politics); fanatical supporter (sport)*
	Via Crucis		(f) la Via della Croce; (fig) calvario	*Way of the Cross*; *(fig) calvary*
#	**viceversa**		(adv) all'inverso (conj.) e invece	the opposite way and instead

10.2 Latin proverbs and mottoes

A number of Latin sayings are quite common, in Italian, at the higher registers.

beati monoculi in regno/terra caecorum	R3	In the land of the blind, happy those who have one eye
carpe diem		seize the day
de gustibus non disputandum	R2–3	don't argue about tastes
divide et impera	R2–3	divide and rule
errare humanum est (**perseverare diabolicum**)	R2–3	to err is human (to persevere in error is diabolical)
excusatio non petita accusatio manifesta	R3	an unsolicited apology is an obvious self-accusation
gutta cavat lapidem	R3	the droplet hollows out the stone
homo homini lupus	R2–3	man is wolf to his fellow man
in vino veritas		in wine (there is) truth
mens sana in corpore sano	R2–3	a sound mind in a sound body
risus abundat in ore stultorum	R3	laughter abounds in the mouths of fools
(**scripta manent**) **verba volant**	R3	(written words stay,) spoken words fly
summum ius, summa iniuria	R3	the more law, the more injustice
talis pater talis filius	R2–3	like father like son

11 Grammatical terms

11.1 Grammatical terms (termini grammaticali)

The following is a list of common grammatical terms.

Categories shared by adjectives and pronouns (e.g. **possessivo**) have only been listed once, under **aggettivo**.

fonologia	phonology
morfologia	morphology
sintassi	syntax
accento (**tònico**)	stress
accento (**grafico**)	stress mark
tonico (adj)	stressed (syllable)
àtono (adj)	unstressed (syllable)
parola tronca	word stressed on last syllable (e.g. **città**)
parola piana	word stressed on second-last syllable (e.g. **ballétto**)
parola sdrùcciola	word stressed on third-last syllable (e.g. **màcchina**)
parola bisdrùcciola	word stressed on fourth-last syllable (e.g. **telèfonano**)
parola trisdrùcciola	word stressed on fifth-last syllable (e.g. **recàpitamelo**)

The gender of nouns is given only where it is not predictable from the principles given in ch. **14**.

In some words, an accent is used to indicate the main stress but should not be used when writing. See p. 29.

aggettivo	adjective
qualificativo (adj)	qualifying
dimostrativo (adj)	demonstrative
possessivo (adj)	possessive
indefinito (adj)	indefinite
(**grado**) **comparativo**	comparative
(**grado**) **superlativo**	superlative
articolo	article
determinativo (adj)	definite
indeterminativo (adj)	indefinite
avverbio	adverb
congiunzione	conjunction
genere (m)	gender
maschile (adj)	masculine
femminile (adj)	feminine
nome (m)	noun
comune (adj)	common
proprio (adj)	proper
collettivo (adj)	collective
astratto (adj)	abstract
concreto (adj)	concrete
sostantivo	noun (the original form **nome sostantivo** is obsolete)
numero	number
singolare (adj)	singular
plurale (adj)	plural
perìodo	sentence
proposizione	clause
indipendente (adj)	independent
principale (adj)	main
dipendente (adj)	dependent
secondaria (adj)	dependent
subordinata (adj)	dependent/subordinate
frase (f)	sentence; phrase (e.g. **frase preposizionale**)
preposizione	preposition
semplice (adj)	simple (e.g. **di**)
articolata (adj)	articulated (e.g. **della**)
pronome (m)	pronoun
personale (adj)	personal
relativo (adj)	relative

sillaba	syllable
consonante (f)	consonant
vocale (f)	vowel
dittongo	diphthong
soggetto	subject
complemento oggetto	direct object
oggetto diretto	direct object
oggetto indiretto	indirect object
suffisso	suffix
accrescitivo (adj)	augmentative
diminutivo (adj)	diminutive
vezzeggiativo (adj)	of endearment
peggiorativo (adj)	pejorative
verbo	verb
transitivo (adj)	transitive
intransitivo (adj)	intransitive
riflessivo (adj)	reflexive
diàtesi	voice
attivo (adj)	active
passivo (adj)	passive
modo	mood
finito (adj)	finite
indicativo	indicative
congiuntivo	subjunctive
condizionale (m)	conditional
imperativo	imperative
indefinito (adj)	non-finite
infinito	infinitive
participio	participle
gerundio	gerund
tempo	tense
semplice (adj)	simple
presente	present (e.g. **amo** etc.; **ami** etc.)
futuro	future (e.g. **amerò** etc.)
imperfetto	imperfect (e.g. **amavo** etc.; **amassi** etc.)
passato remoto	simple past, past definite (e.g. **amai** etc.)
composto (adj)	compound
passato prossimo	present perfect, usu not translated (e.g. **ho amato** etc.)
futuro anteriore	future perfect (e.g. **avrò amato** etc.)

trapassato prossimo	pluperfect, past perfect (e.g. **avevo amato** etc.)
trapassato remoto	pluperfect, past perfect/anterior (e.g. **ebbi amato** etc.)
congiuntivo passato	past/perfect subjunctive (e.g. **abbia amato** etc.)
congiuntivo trapassato	pluperfect subjunctive (e.g. **avessi amato** etc.)
condizionale passato	past conditional (e.g. **avrei amato** etc.)
persona	person

11.2 Punctuation marks (Segni di punteggiatura)

The symbol @ in e-mail addresses is called **chiòcciola** (lit *snail*).

The symbol # (hash) is called **cancelletto** (lit *little gate*).

The symbol & (ampersand) is not common in Italian, but is called **'e' commerciale**.

NOTE that **punto e virgola** is masculine as a whole: **un/il punto e virgola**.

Italian	mark	English
accento acuto	´	acute accent (on closed **e** [e] and **o** [o])
accento grave	`	grave accent (on **a**, **i**, **u** and on open **e** [ɛ] and **o** [ɔ])
apòstrofo	**'**	apostrophe
asterisco	*	asterisk
due punti	:	colon
lineetta	**—**	dash (also used to separate direct speech)
parentesi (f inv)		bracket
parentesi tonde	( )	round brackets
parentesi quadre	[ ]	square brackets
parentesi graffe	{ }	double brackets, curly brackets
puntini di sospensione **puntini puntini** (R1–2)	**. . .**	suspension marks, dot dot dot
punto	**.**	full stop, period (US); point (numbers); dot (e-mail)

Italian	mark	English
punto e virgola	**;**	semicolon
punto esclamativo	**!**	exclamation mark
punto interrogativo	**?**	question mark
sbarra/barra inversa	\	back slash
sbarretta	/	slash
trattino	**-**	hyphen
vìrgola	**,**	comma
virgolette (**basse**) **virgolette** (**alte**)	≪ ≫ “ ”	quotation marks (used for direct speech) inverted commas (generally used to isolate and/or highlight one or more words; **tra virgolette** = in inverted commas)
virgolette singole	‘ ’	single inverted commas (used as the double inverted commas, but less frequently)

11.3 Other common terms and expressions

Italian	mark	English
(**lettera**) **maiùscola** (**lettera**) **minùscola**		capital letter small letter
in neretto, **in grassetto** **in corsivo** **corsivo**		bold italic italics
paràgrafo **capoverso** **a capo** **andare a capo**	§	paragraph (= subheading) beginning of a paragraph, paragraph (in a text) new paragraph to start a new paragraph

12 Numerals and telephone conventions

12.1 Numerals and mathematical conventions

12.1.1 Decimals

In Italian, as a rule, the **punto** (point) separates thousands, the **vìrgola** (comma) decimals, e.g. 1.000.000 = **un milione**; 23,42 = **ventitré virgola quarantadue/ventitré e quarantadue** (**centesimi**). NOTE that the English reading *twenty-three point four two* has no direct equivalent in Italian (**ventitré virgola quattro due** is not used). However, it should be pointed out that the use of the decimal point, if not practiced, is certainly widely understood in Italy, especially in the scientific world.

For the sake of clarity, the Anglo-American conventions (i.e. decimal point) have been applied throughout this text, even in Italian contexts.

12.1.2 Mathematical operations

When doing operations, the following Italian expressions are worthy of notice:

- in sums (**addizioni**), in everyday casual speech "plus" can be simply **e**, and "equals" is omitted, e.g. 2 + 3 = 5 **due e tre cinque** (R1–2), rather than **due più tre è uguale a** (R2–3)/**fa cinque**. Cf. the idiom **in quattro e quattr'otto** ("in the twinkling of an eye").
- in divisions (**divisioni**), "divided by" becomes **diviso**, e.g. 8 : 2 = 4 **otto diviso due è uguale a** (R2–3)/**fa quattro**
- in ratios (**proporzioni**), English "is to" becomes Italian **sta a**, e.g. 4 : 6 = 6 : 9 **quattro sta a sei come sei sta a nove**
- in raising to a power (**elevazione a potenza**), "squared" is translated **al quadrato**, "cubed" **al cubo**, and, generally, "to the nth power" becomes **all'ennesima** (**potenza**), e.g. 3^3 **tre al cubo/alla terza** (**potenza**)

12.1.3 Ordinal numbers

The usual notation is [Arabic numeral]º, which is acceptable also for the feminine and the plural, where strictly speaking $^{a/i/e}$ should be used. It is nonetheless advisable to use the agreement, esp in the singular, e.g. **Carlo**

fa la 4ª (**classe**) **elementare** ("Carlo is in 4th grade"). As an alternative to the Arabic notation, in some cases Italian can simply use the corresponding Roman numeral (without °/a/i/e and usu after the noun), e.g. **Carlo fa la IV elementare**. This is common practice with kings, queens, popes, emperors, e.g. **Luigi XIV** (*quattordicesimo*), and often centuries; e.g. **il secolo XIV** (or **il 14° secolo**) = the fourteenth century.

Following the French, some of the kings Louis of France are sometimes mentioned (in R3) with a cardinal, rather than ordinal, number, e.g. *Luigi tredici/quattordici/quindici/sedici*.

12.2 Telephone conventions

12.2.1 Telephone numbers

In recent years, area codes have become, in Italy, an integral part of telephone numbers and must always be dialed including the initial zero, even when ringing from abroad. Verbally, the area code is often given digit by digit, whereas the numbers that follow are said in pairs or one by one (with pauses after every three/two digits). One way of reading the number **06 9876543** could therefore be **zero sei; nove otto sette, sessantacinque** (or **sei cinque**), **quarantatré** (or **quattro tre**).

12.2.2 Telephone alphabet

In order to avoid confusion, when spelling names or words, especially but not only on the telephone, a conventional "telephone alphabet" is used. Every Italian letter is assigned the name of a town or city. The non-Italian letters (j, k, w, x, y) have one foreign word each, though in most cases their distinctive names are clear enough.

The 'telephone' alphabet can be used to:

- specify a letter, e.g. **A come Ancona** (cf. English 'A for/as in apple')
- spell a word, e.g. **Padova, Empoli, Roma, Torino, Hotel** spells "**Perth**."

With the exception of **k** (usu m, possibly to avoid confusion with **cappa** (f = cloak; hood [in fireplaces etc.]), the letters of the alphabet are usu considered feminine (see chapter 14 "Gender").

	Italian		**British**	**American**
A	**a**	Ancona	Andrew	Abel
B	**bi**	Bologna	Benjamin	Baker
C	**ci**	Como	Charlie	Charlie
D	**di**	Domodossola	David	Dog
E	**e**	Empoli	Edward	Easy
F	**effe**	Firenze	Frederick	Fox

	Italian		British	American
G	**gi**	Genova	George	George
H	**acca**	Hotel	Harry	How
I	**i**	Imola	Isaac	Item
J	**i lunga**	Jersey	Jack	Jig
K	**cappa**	Kursaal	King	King
L	**elle**	Livorno	Lucy	Love
M	**emme**	Milano	Mary	Mike
N	**enne**	Napoli	Nellie	Nan
O	**o**	Otranto	Oliver	Oboe
P	**pi**	Padova	Peter	Peter
Q	**cu**	Quarto	Queenie	Queen
R	**erre**	Roma	Robert	Roger
S	**esse**	Savona	Sugar	Sugar
T	**ti**	Torino	Tommy	Tare
U	**u**	Udine	Uncle	Uncle
V	**vi/vu**	Venezia	Victor	Victor
W	**vu doppia/doppia vu** (*less common* **vi doppia/doppia vi**) In acronyms, **w** is pron **vu**, e.g. **BMW** [bi ɛmme vu]; **www** [vu vu vu]	Washington	William	William
X	**ics**	xeres	Xmas	X
Y	**i greca** *or* **ipsilon**	yacht *or* York	Yellow	Yoke
Z	**zeta** ['dzɛta]	Zara	Zebra	Zebra

13 Measurement

The metric system is universally used in Italy. With the notable exception of the internationally adopted **miglio marino/nautico** (*nautical mile*) and the **nodo** (*knot* = 1 nautical mile an hour), the existence of Italian translations for most imperial (or American) terms (such as **pòllice** for "inch") does not necessarily entail knowledge of the corresponding value by the native Italian speaker. In order to avoid confusion, it is therefore advisable, when translating imperial or American measurements from English, to turn them into or give an indication of their metric equivalents. The following tables of conversion include both precise and rounded-up values. While the first set might of course be necessary in some circumstances (e.g. in the fields of science and technology), in most everyday situations the approximate equivalences will be quite adequate. A measurement of "4 in." will therefore be translated into (**circa**) **10 centimetri** (rather than *10,156 centimetri*), and so on.

All words ending in **-grammo** are stressed on the second-last syllable (e.g. **centigràmmo**), whereas all the words with **-metro** and **-litro** are stressed on the third-last syllable (e.g. **centìmetro**, **centìlitro**), although it is not uncommon to hear **millilìtro** instead of **millìlitro**. Note that the prefix *kilo-* is often spelt **chilo-** in Italian, even though the letter *k* is regularly used in the abbreviations.

For the sake of simplicity, the numbers have been written according to Anglo-American conventions.

In some words, an accent is used to indicate the main stress but should not be used when writing. See p. 29.

13.1 **Length** (Lunghezza)

Standard conversion table			
1 inch	**un pollice**	= 2.539 cm	
1 foot	**un piede**	= 30.480 cm	1 cm = 0.3937 in
1 yard	**una iarda**	= 91.440 cm	1 m = 3.2808 ft
1 fathom	**un braccio**	= 1.8288 m	1 m = 1.093 yd
1 mile	**un miglio terrestre**	= 1.6093 km	1 km = 0.6214 mi
1 nautical mile	**un miglio marino**	= 1.853 km	
1 league	**una lega**	= 5.559 km	

Approximate equivalences		
10 cm	≈	4 in
50 cm	≈	$1\frac{1}{2}$ ft
1 m	≈	1 yd (3 ft)
100 m	≈	100 yds
10 km	≈	6 miles
100 km	≈	60 miles

Examples

Height **una bambina di/alta novanta centimetri** = a child 3 feet tall
un uomo di/alto un metro e ottanta = a man 6 feet tall
una montagna alta 4000 metri = a mountain 13,000 feet high

Speed **cento chilometri all'ora** = 60 miles an hour

Expressions of length, width, height, depth, thickness

lunghezza **questo ponte ha una lunghezza di tre chilometri** (R2–3)
questo ponte è di tre chilometri (**di lunghezza**); **è un ponte di tre chilometri** (**di lunghezza**)
questo ponte è lungo tre chilometri; **è un ponte lungo tre chilometri**
questo ponte è tre chilometri (R1)

larghezza **questa strada ha una larghezza di dieci metri** (R2–3)
questa strada è di dieci metri di larghezza; è una strada di dieci metri di larghezza
questa strada è larga dieci metri; **è una strada larga dieci metri**

altezza	**quest'albero ha un'altezza di sei metri** (R2–3) **quest'albero è di sei metri** (**di altezza**); **è un albero di sei metri** **quest'albero è alto sei metri**; **è un albero alto sei metri** NOTE: **l'aereo è a mille metri di altezza/altitudine** (R2–3); **l'aereo è a un'altezza** (R1–2)/ **una quota/un'altitudine** (R2–3) **di mille metri**
profondità	**questo lago ha una profondità di venti metri** (R2–3) **questo lago è profondo venti metri**; **è un lago profondo venti metri** NOTE; **qui l'acqua è alta** (R1–2)/**profonda** (R2–3) **tre metri** **qui la neve è alta un metro/qui c'è un metro di neve**
spessore	**questa tavola ha uno spessore di tre centimetri** **questa tavola è di tre centimetri di spessore**; **è una tavola di tre centimetri di spessore** **questa tavola è spessa tre centimetri**; **è una tavola spessa tre centimetri**

NOTE: in all the above expressions, the specifications **di lunghezza**, **di larghezza**, **di altezza**, **di spessore** can be left out when contextually obvious.

13.2 Weight (Peso)

The units **chilogrammo** (kg) and **ettogrammo** (hg) are very common in everyday life and are usually shortened, respectively, to **chilo** and **etto** (pl **chili**, **etti**), e.g. **mi dà due etti e mezzo di prosciutto, per piacere?** ("could you please give me 250g [half a pound] of Parma ham?"). As regards heavier weights, the **quintale** (q = 100 kg) is very popular, even though with a recent ruling the EU has "outlawed" such use in official contexts, in favour of the **tonnellata** (t = 1000 kg)

Standard conversion table (Avoirdupois)			
1 oz	**un'oncia**	= 28.349 g	1 g = 0.03527 oz
1 lb	**una libbra**	= 453.592 g	
1 stone		= 6.3507 kg	1 kg = 2.20462 lbs
1 cwt (UK)		= 50.802 kg	
1 cwt (US)		= 45.359 kg	1 t = 0.9842 tons
1 ton	**una tonnellata inglese**	= 1016.047 kg	1 t = 1.1023 tn.sh
1 short ton	**una tonnellata americana**	= 907.185 kg	(1 metric ton/1 tonne)

Approximate equivalences	
100 g (**un etto**)	≈ 4 oz
$\frac{1}{4}$kg 2 $\frac{1}{2}$ hg (**due etti e mezzo**) 250 g	} ≈ $\frac{1}{2}$ lb
$\frac{1}{2}$kg	≈ 1 1b
1 kg	≈ 2 lb
6 kg	≈ 1 stone
100 kg (**un quintale**)	≈ 16 stones; 220 lb

Examples

un etto di burro = 4 oz of butter
una donna di sessanta chili = a 10-stone woman
un uomo di un quintale = a 16-stone man; a 220-pound man

13.3 **Area** (Area **or** superficie **[f R2–3]**)

Standard conversion table		
1 sq in	**un pollice quadrato** = 6.45159 cm^2	1 cm^2 = 0.1550 sq in
1 sq ft	**un piede quadrato** = 929.028 cm^2	
1 sq yd	**una iarda quadrata** = 0.8361 m^2	1 m^2 = 10.7639 sq ft
1 sq mile	**un miglio quadrato** = 2.59 km^2 259 ha	1 km^2 = 0.3861 sq miles
1 acre	**un acro** = 4046.8 m^2 = 0.40468 ha	10,000 m^2 = 1 ha = 2.4711 acres (**un èttaro**)

Approximate equivalences	
6 cm^2 ≈ 1 sq in	1 ha (**un èttaro**) ≈ 2 $\frac{1}{2}$ acres
1 m^2 ≈ 1 sq yd	50 ha ≈ 125 acres
1,000 m^2 ≈ $\frac{1}{4}$ acre	250 ha (= 2 $\frac{1}{2}$ km^2) ≈ 1 sq mile

Examples

un'azienda agricola di quaranta ettari = a 100-acre farm
100 ettari (= 1 km^2) **di foresta** = 250 acres of forest

13.4 **Volume** (Volume **[m]**)

Standard conversion table		
1 cubic inch	**un pollice cubico/cubo** = 16.387 cm^3	1 m^3 = 35.314 cu ft (**un metro cubo**)
1 cubic foot	**un piede cubico/cubo** = 0.02832 m^3	
1 cubic yard	**una iarda cubica/cuba** = 0.76455 m^3	

13.5 **Capacity (liquid)** (Capacità)

Standard conversion table			
1 gill		(UK) = 0.142051 (US) = 0.11831	1 l = 1.7598 pt (UK) (**un litro**) = 2.1134 pt (US)
1 pint	**una pinta**	(UK) = 0.568231 (US) = 0.47321	
1 quart	**un quarto**	(UK) = 1.136461 (US) = 0.94641	
1 imperial gallon	**un gallone inglese**	(UK) = 4.545961	
1 gallon	**un gallone americano**	(US) = 3.78531	
1 barrel	**un barile**	(UK) = 1.6365 h1 (US) = 1.1922 h1	

Approximate equivalences	
1 litro ≈ 2 pints	24 litri ≈ 5 gallons (UK)
4 litri ≈ 1 gallon	24 litri ≈ 6 gallons (US)

Examples

la mia macchina fa (**più di**) **17 chilometri con un litro** (R1–2)	my car does 50 (miles) to the gallon (UK)/40 (miles) to the gallon (US)
9 chilometri con un litro (R1–2) **mezzo litro di birra**	25 to the gallon (UK)/21 to the gallon (US) a pint of beer

13.6 **Currency** (Valùta **or** moneta corrente)

From the unification of Italy until 2002, the Italian currency was the **lira** (**₤** or **LIT**). The use of **centèsimi** (= *cents*, lit *hundredths*) disappeared after the Second World War with inflation. At the beginning of 2002 the lira and 11 other European currencies were replaced by the **euro** [ɛuro] (m inv). Euros come in coins of (**monete da**) 1, 2, 5, 10, 20, 50 cents (**centesimi**) and 1 and 2 euros (**euro**), as well as notes of (**banconote**/**biglietti da**) 5, 10, 20, 50, 100, 200, 500 euro. Officially, 1 **euro** is worth 1936.27 old **lire**: when switching from the old currency to the new, a factor of 2000 therefore gives a good approximation, e.g.: 5 **centesimi** ≈ 100 **lire;** 10 **euro** ≈ 20 000 **lire**; 500 **euro** ≈ 1 million **lire**.

13.7 **Temperature** (Temperatura)

Conversion formulae and tables (**gradi centìgradi**/**Celsius** (R3) – **gradi Fahreneit**):

$^\circ\mathrm{F} = \frac{9}{5}{}^\circ\mathrm{C} + 32 \quad {}^\circ\mathrm{C} = \frac{5}{9}(^\circ\mathrm{F} - 32)$

General

°F	°C
−4	−20
0	−17.8
5	−15
14	−10
23	−5
32	0
41	5
50	10
59	15
68	20
77	25

°F	°C
86	30
95	35
104	40
113	45
122	50
131	55
140	60
158	70
176	80
194	90
212	100

Body temperature

°F	°C
105.8	41.0
104.9	40.5
104.0	40.0
103.1	39.5
102.2	39.0
101.3	38.5
100.4	38.0
99.5	37.5
98.6	37.0
97.7	36.5
96.8	36.0

13.8 **Time** (Tempo)

The 24-hour system is used for official business (timetables, television programmes etc.). Similarly, the use of **quindici**, **trenta**, **quarantacinque**, **cinquanta**, **cinquantacinque** (implying **minuti**) instead of, respectively, **un quarto**, **mezzo/mezza** (R1–2), **tre quarti/meno un quarto**, **meno dieci**, **meno cinque** smacks of bureaucratic officialdom. In everyday informal speech the twelve-hour system is used, if necessary with the specifications **di/della mattina** or **del mattino** (usu 2am–11am), **di/del pomeriggio** (usu 2pm–6pm), **di/della sera** (usu 5pm–11pm), **di/della notte** (usu 1am–2am). The use of these specifications may vary according to the season: for instance, the **pomeriggio** tends to be longer in the summer. "Midday" (12pm) is **mezzogiorno**, "midnight" (12am) is **mezzanotte**.

THE CLAUSE – combining words

14 Gender

All Italian nouns are either masculine or feminine.

14.1 Gender and sex

14.1.1 Persons

Nouns referring to persons of the male sex tend to be masculine, nouns referring to persons of the female sex tend to be feminine. There are, however, a number of exceptions. It should be remembered that agreement of adjectives and past participles with nouns is generally based on grammatical gender, not natural sex.

Masculine nouns with possible female referents

Most are job titles for which a feminine form is not in use. They are nouns relating to:

- professions, e.g. **medico** *doctor*, **ingegnere** *engineer*, **falegname** *carpenter*
- positions or ranks within an organization or a team, e.g. **consigliere** *board member*, **sergente** *sergeant*, **portiere** *goalkeeper*

NOTE also

- **soprano**, **mezzosoprano**, **contralto**, which in the singular are sometimes used in the feminine (**la soprano** etc.) when referring to actual female singers rather than to voice ranges.

Feminine nouns with possible male referents

Notable among the most common are:

- **guardia** *guard*, **sentinella** *sentry*, **rècluta** *recruit*, **vittima** *victim*, **guida** *guide*, **spia** *spy*, **canaglia** *rascal*

In some words, an accent is used to indicate the main stress but should not be used when writing. See p. 29.

NOTE that in uncertain or (potentially) mixed contexts, masculine is the "default" gender in Italian, e.g.:

- **Quanti figli hai?** *How many children/boys do you have?*
- **Quanti fratelli ha Carlo?** *How many siblings/brothers does Carlo have?*

Ambiguity can be avoided by for example referring to **figli maschi** as opposed to **figlie femmine** in the first instance, to **fratelli e sorelle** in the second.

14.1.2 Animals (see also 'Noises of animals' in chapter 3)

The great majority of animals are commonly referred to by using a "default" term. This applies, in both singular and plural, when the sex of the animal is not an issue or is unknown, especially when there are no obvious differences between the male and the female of the species. These nouns can be masculine, e.g. **gatto**, **cane**, **topo**, **elefante**, **leopardo**, or feminine, e.g. **volpe**, **lepre** (usu f), **balena**, **pecora**, **pantera**.

NOTE the possible differences between Italian and English where, in R1, a cat may be sometimes generically referred to as a "she", and a fox or a hare as a "he."

It is also possible to specify the sex of an animal. Often there are distinct masculine and feminine forms to indicate the male and the female of the species (see section 14.2). If no specific form exists, the generic term denoting the animal may be followed, in R2–3, by "**maschio**" or "**femmina**," which in this case are invariable. The grammatical gender of the whole expression is that of the original term, e.g. **un rinoceronte maschio/femmina**, **molti rinoceronti maschio/femmina**; **una volpe maschio/femmina**, **molte volpi maschio/femmina**. In scientific contexts (R3) it is also possible to refer to 'the male/female of the particular species', e.g. **il maschio/la femmina del rinoceronte**. In some cases a suffix may allow, in R1, to specify the sex of certain animals, e.g. **scoiattolino/scoiattolina**.

14.2 Formation of masculine/feminine pairs

Nouns referring to people or animals often have different forms to distinguish between males and females. Some pairs of nouns are quite unrelated in form, but in most cases the only difference between the masculine and their feminine counterpart is in the ending, with some characteristic patterns of correspondence.

Due to the ever increasing presence of women at all levels in society, including fields that have traditionally been the exclusive domain of men, the issue of gender in language has acquired sociopolitical implications. In linguistic terms, this has led to some confusion in the use of titles related to jobs, professions, positions, ranks, etc. With most professions and

positions, the tendency is to leave the title in the masculine, especially in formal contexts, e.g. **Lia Bo**, **Professore di Fisica Nucleare**, or **l'Ambasciatore d'Italia**, **signora Bo**, etc. A female minister in government may be **la ministra** or **il ministro**, but the latter is much more common. In some cases, beside a grammatically feminine form, an analytic expression has been coined, e.g. **donna poliziotto** (beside **poliziotta**), **donna pilota** (beside **pilota** f). The feminine of some titles can also traditionally mean "wife of the title holder" (cf English "queen"), e.g. **ambasciatrice** or **presidentessa**, and/or might have joking or mocking connotations, e.g. **sindachessa**, **medichessa**.

Adjectives and participles tend to agree with the natural sex of the person if the person is named, regardless of any other words referring to the person (cf. section 16.1), e.g.:

L'avvocato Giulia Bongiorno, uno dei legali di Giulio Andreotti, è crollata sulla sedia.

The lawyer Giulia Bongiorno, one of Giulio Andreotti's legal advisers, collapsed onto her chair.

It is common to use the definite article when referring to prominent women, but not men, by their surname, e.g. **la Maraini**. With men this practice is usually reserved for artistic and cultural figures of recognized fame, e.g. **il Leopardi**. The use of the definite article with given names is common in the North, especially with feminine names, e.g. **la Chiara**. Use of the article with masculine names, e.g. **il Giuseppe**, is R1. The practice of including both genders in generic cases by giving both ending of adjectives etc. (cf. English he/she etc.) is not widely followed, e.g. **Ogni collega che è interessato/a**; **lo/la studente**; **lo/la studente/-essa**.

The title **signore** is used for all adult men, married or single. The form **signorino** is considered old-fashioned and is used jocularly to refer to young boys. The titles **signora** and **signorina** are used for women of all ages. There is no Italian equivalent of *Ms* (cf. section 9.1).

14.2.1 Unrelated m–f nouns

Some rather common pairs belong to this category:

Persons

maschio–femmina; uomo–donna; marito–moglie; padre–madre; papà/babbo–mamma; fratello–sorella; frate–suora; genero–nuora; celibe–nubile (both R2–3), *single man–woman*, and, to a certain extent, **scapolo–zitella** *bachelor–spinster*

Animals (in square brackets the castrated male, when applicable)

fuco/pecchione–ape; montone/ariete/[castrato]–pecora; porco/verro (R3)**–scrofa; toro/[bue/bove]–mucca/vacca**.

14.2.2 Related m–f nouns – anomalous m–f correspondence

Persons

dio–dea; re–regina; eroe–eroina; zar–zarina; stregone–strega *witch-doctor – witch*; **abate–badessa** *abbot–abbess*; **doge–dogaressa**

Animals (in square brackets the castrated male, when applicable)

cane–cagna; gallo/[cappone]–gallina

14.2.3 Related nouns – patterns of m–f correspondence

Endings		Notes	Examples
m	**f**		
-a	**-a**	in most cases (see also section 14.4 and section 15.1 for pl)	**pediatra**; **pianista**; **ipocrita**; **atleta**; **eremita**; **idiota**; **collega**
	-essa	only a handful of notable cases	**duca–duchessa**; **poeta–poetessa**; **profeta–profetessa**; **papa–papessa**
–e	**-a**	most nouns in **-ere**	**cameriere–cameriera**
		NOTE: in some cases the feminine indicates an object most nouns in **-one** very few cases in **-ese**, **-ore** (including **-tore**)	**caffettiere** *café proprietor*–**caffettiera** *coffee-maker* **padrone–padrona**; **pasticcione–pasticciona** *bungler* **marchese–marchesa**; **signore–signora**; **pastore–pastora**; **impostore–impostora**
	-e	most nouns in **-ese**, **-ante**, **-ente**, and others	**milanese**; **comandante**; **cantante**; **insegnante**; **agente**; **dirigente**; **cliente**; **testimone**; **nipote**; **consorte** (R3) *spouse*
	-essa	very few cases in **-ante**	**mercante–mercantessa**
		including one animal	**elefante–elefantessa**
		two notable cases in **-ente**	**studente–studentessa**; **presidente–presidentessa** (OR **presidente**, R2–3)
		few notable case in **-ore**, including two in **-tore**	**professore–professoressa** **dottore–dottoressa**; **fattore–fattoressa** (NOTE: **fattrice** = *brood cow/mare*)

Endings		Notes	Examples
m	**f**		
		a few notable cases in **-one**	**barone–baronessa**
		including some animals	**leone–leonessa**; **pavone–pavonessa** (OR **pavona**) *peacock*
		other notable cases	**principe–principessa**; **generale–generalessa**; **oste–ostessa** *inn-keeper*; **sacerdote–sacerdotessa**
-tore	**-trice**	very common	**attore–attrice**; **senatore–senatrice**; **traditore–traditrice** (OR **traditora**)
-(s)sore	**-ditrice**	usu avoided, very few nouns actually used	**possessore–posseditrice**; **trasgressore–trasgreditrice**; **difensore–difenditrice**
-o	**-a**	very common, also animals	**bambino–bambina**; **gatto–gatta**
	-essa	few nouns	**diacono–diaconessa**; **avvocato–avvocatessa** (**avvocata** for saints); **orco–orchessa** *oger*; **soldato–soldatessa**; **druido–druidessa**
		sometimes mocking in tone	**deputato–deputatessa** (instead of **deputata**) *member of parliament*; **medico–medichessa**; **filosofo–filosofessa** (instead of **filosofa**); **diavolo–diavolessa**

14.3 Gender associated with types of noun

In many cases the noun or name belonging to the categories sampled in the tables below simply reflects the gender of the "generic" noun that identifies the category itself, e.g. masculine in the case of **oceano**, **mare**, **fiume**, **aeroplano**, **colore**, **orologio**, etc., and feminine in the case of **città**, **isola**, **nave**, **lettera**, etc. In fact, many geographic names are usu accompanied by their generic definition, e.g. **il lago Maggiore**, **il Mare del Nord**, **il Monte Bianco**, though this is not the case for the geographic names in the table, which can all be used without the corresponding noun, e.g. **il** (**fiume**) **Tevere**, **il** (**lago di**) **Garda**.

Mostly masculine **Type of noun**	**Examples**	**(Some) exceptions**
Geographic		
oceans, seas	**Atlantico**, **Mediterraneo**	**la Manica** *the Channel*
lakes	**Garda**, **Trasimeno**, **Titicaca**	–
rivers	**Tevere**, **Po**, **Nilo**, **Tamigi** *Thames*, **Danubio**, **Mississipi**	**Dora**, **Senna** *Seine*, **Loira**, **Neva**, **Moldava**, **Vistola**
mountains (not chains); volcanoes	**Cervino** *Matterhorn*, **Everest**; **Vesuvio**, **Etna**	**Maiella**, **Marmolada**
Time		
days; months; years	**lunedì**; **gennaio**; **il 2000**	only **domenica**
Transportation		
lorries, trucks	**un** (**camion**) **Mercedes**	–
aeroplanes	**un jumbo**, **il Concorde**, **lo Spitfire**, **un Boeing 747**	–
Food and drink		
cheeses	**il gorgonzola**, **il pecorino**, **il parmigiano**, **lo stilton**, **il camembert**, **il gruviera** (m inv, but also f)	**mozzarella**, **scamorza**, **caciotta**, **ricotta**, **fontina**, **robiola**, **provola**
wines	**il barolo**, **uno chardonnay**, **il barbera** (usu m, but also f)	**malvasìa**, **vernaccia**, **albana**
Other		
colors	**il rosa**, **il blu**	–
languages, dialects	**l'italiano**, **il milanese**	–
metals; elements	**il bronzo**, **l'acciaio**; **l'idrogeno**	**ghisa** *cast iron*
musical notes	**il do**, **il la**, **un si**	–
numbers, marks	**il sette**, **un trenta**	–
other parts of speech used as nouns	**il tu**, **il sì**, **il perché**, **il bere**, **il nulla**, **i se**, **i ma**, **un non so che**	
trees	**il melo**, **l'olivo**, **l'abete** *fir tree*, **il pino**, **l'eucalipto**	**quercia**, **palma**, **tamerice**, **vite** *grapevine*, **iacaranda**, **sequoia**, **acacia**, **robinia**
watches	**un Rolex**, **uno Swatch**	–

Mostly feminine **Type of noun**	**Examples**	**(Some) exceptions**
Geographic		
cities	**Milano**, **Napoli**, **Londra**, **Berlino**, **New York** (cf. the old-fashioned **Nuova York**)	**il Cairo**, **il Pireo** *Piraeus* NOTE: with some cities, the masculine indicates a local football club, e.g. **il Napoli**
islands	**Sicilia**, **Capri**, **Giava**, **Cipro**	**il Madagascar**, **il Borneo**

Mostly feminine **Type of noun**	**Examples**	**(Some) exceptions**
Transportation		
cars	**una Ferrari**, **una Ford**, **una Mercedes**	some cars may be referred to in the masculine (R1), e.g. **Carlo s'è fatto il Mercedes** *Carlo got himself a Merc*
ships	**la Pinta**, **la Michelangelo**, **la Queen Elizabeth**, **l'Enterprise**	the exceptions possibly imply masculine nouns, such as **transatlantico**, e.g. **il Titanic**, **il Rex**, **il Lusitania**
Other		
abstract qualities	**bellezza**, **bruttezza**, **bontà**, **cattiveria**	qualities ending in **-ore**, e.g. **grigiore** *grayness*, **candore** *whiteness*, *innocence*, **splendore** *radiance*, *beauty*
cameras	**una Polaroid**, **una Nikon**	–
companies (see also chapter 9)	**la Telecom Italia, la Lancia**, **la Ford**, **la IBM**	–
fruit	**mela**, **pera**, **banana**, **pesca**, **susina** *plum*, **nettarina**, **uva**, **mora** *blackberry*	many exceptions: **lampone** *raspberry*, **fico**; many citrus fruits, e.g. **arancio** (more common than **arancia**), **limone**, **pompelmo** *grapefruit*, **mandarino**; many exotic fruits, e.g. **dàttero** *date*, **ananas** *pineapple*, **mango**, **kiwi** (inv)
letters of Roman alphabet (also m, but less common)	**la C**, **una M**	**un K** (usu); ALSO: Greek letters usu masculine, e.g. **pi greco** (π)
school years	**la prima** *first year of (primary) school*, **la terza media** *eighth year*	can be m when accompanied by **ginnasio** or **liceo**, e.g. **il quarto ginnasio**
sciences	**la matematica**, **la fisica**	**il diritto** *law*

14.4 Gender associated with noun ending

The indications given in this section are based on singular endings (for plural formation see section 15.1) and do not necessarily apply to proper names, or to compound (see section 14.5) or suffixed nouns.

Unstressed vowel (including monosyllabic words)

-a generally feminine, with the following notable exceptions (besides those in section 14.3):

- **pianeta**, **colèra**, **gorilla**, **duca**, **papa**, **boia** *executioner*, **dèspota** (R2–3), **pirata** (usu m), **strategа** (also f), **poliglotta** (R2–3 also f), **camerata** *comrade* (usu fascist, also f)
- many nouns ending in **-ma**, mostly of Greek derivation, e.g. **problema**, **tema**, **dramma**, **programma**, **linfoma**, **clima**, **sistema**, **panorama**; among the exceptions: **asma**, **gomma**, **fiamma**, **arma**, **rima, norma**, **forma**, **calma**, **crema**, **somma**, **firma**, **tarma**, **trama**, **lacrima**
- some nouns imported from other languages, e.g. **pigiama**, **mantra** (inv), **lama** (inv) or derived from verbal forms, e.g. **vaglia** (inv) *money order*, or pronouns, e.g. **nulla** (inv), or proper names, e.g. **barabba** (inv) *rogue*
- some (R1/R1*) nouns of dialectal origin, e.g. **pirla** (R1* Milan, inv) *prick*, **ghisa** (R1 Milan, inv) *traffic warden*
- some nouns with the following endings are masculine when referring to males:
  - **-arca** meaning 'leader', e.g. **patriarca** (only m), **monarca** (only m), **oligarca**; such nouns are seldom feminine, with the exception of **matriarca** (only f)
  - **-iatra** meaning "doctor", e.g. **pediatra**, **psichiatra**
  - **-ista** many nouns, e.g. **artista**, **giornalista**, **ottimista**
  - **-asta** e.g. **ginnasta**, **cineasta**, **pederasta** (only m)
  - **-eta** e.g. **atleta**, **analfabeta** *illiterate*, **asceta**, **anacoreta** (R3) *anchorite*; NOTE: **poeta** and **profeta** are only m (see section 14.2.3)
  - **-ita** e.g. **semita**, **eremita**, **vietnamita**, all derived from adjectives and usu indicating belonging or affiliation to peoples, religions, cults, etc.; NOTE: **parassita** is feminine only when referring to women
  - **-ota** e.g. **patriota**, **pilota**, **cipriota**, **idiota**, similar meanings but fewer nouns than the above category
  - **-nauta** very few nouns, e.g. **astronauta**
  - **-euta** very few nouns, e.g. **terapeuta**
  - **-cida** e.g. **omicida** *killer*; chemicals with this ending are only masculine, e.g. **erbicida**, **germicida**

-e masculine or feminine, but the following subcategories are worthy of notice:

- **-ere** masculine, whether persons (usu "doers"), e.g. **cassiere**, or things, e.g. **carcere** *jail*; exceptions are **polvere**, **cenere**
- **-ore** masculine, whether persons (usu "doers"), e.g. **attore**, **scrittore**, **pittore**, or things, e.g. **colore**, **dolore**; exception: **fólgore** (f) *flash of lightning*
- **-trìce** feminine, usu "doers," e.g. **attrice**, **scrittrice**, **pittrice**
- **-sione/-zione** generally feminine, e.g. **confusione**, **emozione** (NOTE that this does not necessarily apply to compound nouns, e.g. **capostazione** [m] *station-master*, or possible "alterati", e.g. **negozione** [m] *big shop*)

-i mostly masculine: many imports, e.g. **samurai**, **sci**, and compounds (see section 14.5), e.g. **saliscendi**, **millepiedi**, **portabagagli**; beside the rather technical **cisti** (f R2–3) *cyst*, **colecisti** (f R3) *cholecyst* and **endiadi** (f R3) *hendyadis*, a most notable exception is the whole category of nouns ending in
-si mostly feminine, e.g. **crisi**, **tesi**, with very few exceptions, e.g. **brindisi**
(m) *toast*

-o mostly masculine, with the following notable exceptions:
- **mano**, **dinamo**, **virago** (R3, pl **viragini**); **eco** (less common m s; only m pl)
- **soprano**, **contralto**, **mezzosoprano** (sometimes f, usu m s, only m pl)
- elliptic expressions, e.g. **squillo** from **ragazza squillo** *call-girl*
- abbreviated forms of feminine nouns, e.g. **radio**, **auto**, **moto**, **foto**
NOTE: the abbreviated form of **videocassetta** (f) is **video** (m), which is also the abbreviation for **videoregistratore** (m) *videorecorder*

-u masculine, very few nouns altogether, many of them monosyllabic, mostly imported from other languages, e.g. **urdu**, **gnu**; exception: **gru** (f) *crane*

Stressed vowel

-à generally feminine, e.g. **onestà**, **città**, with few exceptions, e.g. **scià** *shah*, **baccalà** *stockfish*, **lillà** *lilac*, **papà**, **podestà**, **taffetà**
-è generally masculine; very few nouns (often from French), e.g. **caffè**, **bidè**, **gilè** *waistcoat*, *vest*; some exceptions, e.g. **koinè** (f R3)
-é masculine; besides **perché** used as a noun, a handful of French derived nouns, e.g. **scimpanzé** (often pronounced with **-è**), **varieté** *variety show*; only exception **pansé** (f) *pansy* (also pronounced with **–è**)
-ì mostly masculine; very few nouns, e.g. **supplì** *rice croquette*, **tassì**, **colibrì**; notable exception: **pipì** (f) *wee-wee*
-ò masculine; few nouns (many of which are adaptations from French), e.g. **paltò** *coat*, **comò** *chest of drawers*, **pedalò** *pedal boat*, **rondò**, **falò** *bonfire*
-ó no nouns
-ù mostly masculine (often from other languages), e.g. **bambù**, **cucù**, **caucciù**; important exceptions are the Latin-derived **gioventù**, **schiavitù** *slavery*, **servitù** *servitude*, *servants*, **virtù**, **tribù**, and the modern **tivù**/**tivvù** *TV*

Consonant (including -y)

Generally masculine (mostly nouns from other languages), e.g. **bar**, **camion**, **virus**. Among the common feminine nouns in this group (beside those listed in the tables above) are **e-mail** (usu f), **viacard** *type of motorway credit card*, **glasnost**, (**bottiglia) molotov** *Molotov cocktail*, **vamp**.
NOTE: **Internet** is usu m (and without article).

14.5 Gender of compound nouns

14.5.1 Verb + noun

Most compound nouns belong to this category, their typical (singular) form being a second person singular imperative followed by a noun in the singular or plural. They are mostly masculine, as shown in detail below.

Persons

As with non-compound nouns, the gender of V + N compound nouns referring to persons may reflect the sex of the referent. In the great majority of cases this will only show in a change of article, the actual noun being invariable, e.g.:

un/una perdigiorno *idler*, **un/una voltagabbana** *turncoat*, **un/una rubacuori** *charmer*, **un/una raccattapalle** *ball boy/girl*

In some cases, especially with nouns relating to activities traditionally carried out by men, the feminine is not used in practice, but it is still possible in theory, e.g.:

un/(**una**?) **taglialegna** *woodcutter*, **uno**/(**una**?) **spazzacamino** *chimney-sweeper*, **un**/(**una**?) **guardalinee** *linesman, linesperson*

Animals

Very few V + N nouns refer to animals. They appear to be masculine, without a form for the female. As usual in these cases, their feminine is formed by adding **femmina**, e.g.:

un beccafico/un beccafico femmina *garden warbler*, **un succiacapre/un succiacapre femmina** *nightjar*, *goatsucker*

Objects etc.

For the great majority of the other cases, V + N compound nouns are masculine, e.g.:

il caricabatteria *battery charger*, **il fermacarte** *paper-weight*, **il passatempo** *pastime*, **il battipanni** *carpet-beater*

Notable exceptions are some nouns referring to some domestic appliances, e.g.:

la lavabiancheria (less common than **lavatrice**) *washing machine*, **la lavapiatti/la lavastoviglie** *dishwasher*

- some nouns referring to ships, e.g.

la portaerei *aircraft-carrier*, **la portaelicotteri** *helicopter-carrier*

NOTE: **rompighiaccio** *ice-breaker* is usually masculine

- and a few more where a feminine noun (indicated in brackets) might be implied, e.g.:

la (**macchinetta**) **mangiasoldi** *slot-machine*, lit *money-eater* (m/f when referring to persons), **la** (**pistola**) **scacciacani** (also m) *blank pistol*

14.5.2 Noun + noun

Persons

There is a good number of N + N compound nouns referring to persons, many of them of the kind **capo** + noun. They usually reflect the sex of the person they refer to. The change of gender usually shows only in the article, since the second noun is in most cases gender-invariable, e.g. **il/la capofamiglia** *head of the family*, **il/la capoufficio** *head clerk*. There are a few cases where the second noun, and therefore the compound noun, has a distinct feminine form, e.g.:

il caporedattore/la caporedattrice *editor-in-chief*, **il capocuoco/la capocuoca** *head-cook*, **il sordomuto/la sordomuta** *deaf-mute*,

and a few cases where, as seen elsewhere, the masculine is still the only gender in use, for traditional or historical reasons, e.g.

il capocomico *manager of a theatre company*, **il capomastro** *master builder*.

Animals

There are not many common animal nouns in this category. Their gender tends to reflect the gender of the head noun, which in the majority of the cases appears to be masculine, e.g.:

il pescecane *shark*, **il pescespada** *swordfish*, **il gattopardo** *serval*, *ocelot*, **il toporagno** *shrew*.

Among the very few feminine nouns, **la volpoca** R3, *sheld-fowl*, whereas **grillotalpa** *mole cricket* can be masculine (more common in the singular) or feminine (esp in the more common plural **grillotalpe**). In all cases there seem to be no distinct forms for the opposite sex: "a female shark" will therefore be **un pescecane femmina**.

Objects etc.

In most cases, the gender of all the other N + N compounds tends to reflect the gender of the noun perceived as the "head" of the expression corresponding to the compound noun. While practically irrelevant in the case of compounds formed by nouns of the same gender, e.g.:

autostrada (f) *motorway*, **cassapanca** (f) *box seat*, **cinemateatro** (m) *cinema-theater*, **capolavoro** (m) *masterpiece*,

this becomes important in the case of "m + f" or "f + m" nouns, e.g.:

agopuntura (= **puntura** [f] **con aghi**) feminine *acupuncture*
bagnoschiuma (= **schiuma** [f] **per il bagno**) feminine *bubblebath*
capolinea (= **capo** [m] **della linea**) masculine *terminus*
fondovalle (= **fondo** [m] **della valle**) masculine *bottom of the valley*
pallacanestro (= **palla** [f] **a canestro**) feminine *basket-ball*
pallavolo (= **palla** [f] **a volo**) feminine *volley-ball*
acquascooter (= **scooter** [m] **acquatico**) masculine *jetski*
cartamodello (= **modello** [m] **di carta**) masculine *paper pattern*

There is a number of cases that do not seem to follow this pattern, or whose "head noun" is not easily identifiable, e.g.:

il centrodestra/-sinistra *center-right/left*), **il mappamondo** (*globe*), **il crocevia** *crossroads*.

14.5.3 Noun + adjective/adjective + noun

Only compounds where the noun is the head of the phrase and is therefore modified by the adjective are considered here. Compounds like **terrapieno** *embankment* (lit *full of earth*) are not included, whereas those like **terracotta** (lit *cooked earth*) are.

Persons

There is a tendency to reflect the gender of the person the noun refers to. This can be done through the article, e.g.:

un/una quattrocchi (R1) *four-eyes*, **un/una pellerossa** lit *redskin*

or, in A + N cases, when the noun allows it, morphologically, e.g.:

granduca/graduchessa, gentiluomo/gentildonna

Some compounds are still only used in the masculine, e.g. **un piedipiatti** (R1) *flatfoot*, although nothing, except custom, seems to prevent their use in the feminine. On the other hand, **la buonanima** *the dear departed* is feminine even when referring to males.

Animals

These are not common and usually describe a physical characteristic of the animal in question. The gender of the compound is usually the same as the noun component, e.g. **il pettirosso** *robin*, lit *red breast*, but there are a number of cases where this does not apply, e.g. **la capinera** *blackcap*, lit *black head*. The plural noun compounds **millepiedi** and **centopiedi** are both masculine.

Apart from **il/la purosangue** *thoroughbred*, which distinguishes between male and female, the other N + A/A + N nouns referring to animals must use the **maschio/femmina** addition.

Objects etc.

For the majority of the remaining N + A/A + N compounds the gender tends to be the same as that of the noun component, e.g.:

il granturco *maize, corn*, **la cartapesta** *papier-mâché*, **il mezzogiorno, la mezzanotte**.

14.5.4 Other compounds

These include V + V, A + A, and compounds with adverbs, pronouns, prepositions, more than two components, etc.

Persons

On the whole, the gender of the compound will reflect the sex of the person it refers to, e.g. **il/la fuorilegge** *outlaw*, **il/la nullatenente** *propertyless* (*person*), **il/la senzatetto** *homeless person*, **il/la tuttofare** *jack of all trades/maid of all work*. Whenever the final element of the compound makes it possible, the gender will show in the ending, e.g. **bianconero/-a** *Juventus supporter*, **maleducato/-a** *impolite person*. However, some words maintain the original gender of the head noun regardless of the sex of the referent, e.g. **la controfigura** *double (in acting)*.

Animals

The number of animal denominations in this category is too small to allow the identification of patterns of any kind.

Objects etc.

Compounds that do not have a noun component or that do have a verb component tend to be masculine, e.g.:

il saltimbocca *kind of meat dish*, **il bagnasciuga** *shoreline*, **il toccasana** *cure-all*, **il parapiglia** *hubbub*, **il nontiscordardimé** *forget-me-not*, **il chiaroscuro, il pianoforte, il benservito** *testimonial*; among the exceptions, **la lavasciuga** *washer-dryer*, **la tagliacuce** *cutting-sewing machine*, **il/la sempreverde** *evergreen* (also adj), **la caldarrosta** *roast chestnut*, which implies **castagna**.

In all other compound nouns the gender tends to be the same as that of the noun, if this is the head of the phrase, e.g.:

capodanno (= **capo** [m] **dell'anno**) masculine
manodopera (**mano** [f] **d'opera**) feminine
controcanto (= **canto** [m] **contro**) masculine
controproposta (= **proposta** [f] **contro**) feminine
soprannome (= **nome** [m] **in più**) masculine
soprattassa (= **tassa** [f] **in più**) feminine
sottoprodotto (= **prodotto** [m] **derivato**) masculine
sottoveste (= **veste** [f] **sottostante**) feminine
retrogusto (= **gusto** [m] **che segue**) masculine
retromarcia (**marcia** [f] **indietro**) feminine

When the noun is not the head of the phrase, the gender of the compound tends to be masculine, even if the noun component is feminine, e.g.:

dopobarba (= **dopo la rasatura della barba**) masculine
dopoguerra (= **dopo la guerra**) masculine
doposcuola (= **dopo la scuola**) masculine
entroterra (= **dentro la terra**) masculine
fuoripista (= **fuori dalla pista**) masculine
fuoristrada (= **fuori dalla strada**) masculine
oltretomba (= **oltre la tomba**) masculine
sottobottiglia (= **sotto la bottiglia**) masculine

sottogola (= **sotto la gola**) masculine
sottopancia (= **sotto la pancia**) masculine
sottoscala (= **sotto la scala**) masculine
NOTE the difference between
il retroscena (= **dietro la scena**), masculine, *backstage activity*, and
la retroscena (= **la scena dietro**), feminine, *backstage*.

Among the compound nouns that do not follow this pattern:
retrobottega (backshop) and **retrocucina** (scullery) can be both masculine or feminine, probably because they allow two interpretations.
controluce can be masculine (esp with regard to photos etc. taken **contro la luce**), or feminine (when the stress is on the type of lighting, **luce contro**)
fuoriserie is feminine, probably because it implies **automobile** or **macchina** or **vettura**.

14.6 Homonyms distinguished by gender

The following is a sample of Italian homonyms distinguished, at least in the singular, by their gender.

	Masculine	Feminine
boa	(inv) boa constrictor; feather boa	buoy
caccia	(inv) fighter plane; destroyer	hunt
camerata	male fascist comrade	dormitory; female fascist comrade
capitale	capital (econ.)	capital (city)
cappa	(inv) the letter "k"	cloak, cape, e.g. **cappa e spada** = cloak and dagger; hood (as in fireplaces etc.); ALSO, less common, the letter "k"
finale	end, ending; finale	final (sport, competitions)
fine	end = goal, purpose, outcome; NOTE: **lieto fine** = happy ending; **il fine settimana** = the week-end	end = conclusion
fonte	only in **il fonte battesimale** = the christening font	fountain, source (also fig)
fronte	front (military, political, weather)	forehead, brow
gamma	(inv) third letter of the Greek alphabet	range, spectrum; gamut, scale
genesi (R3)	Genesis (book of the Bible)	genesis
granata	(inv) color garnet; supporter or player of the Torino football team	broom; grenade
morale	morale	morals, morality; moral (of a story etc.)

	Masculine	Feminine
moto	motion; movement; physical exercise, e.g. **fare un po' di moto** = to take some exercise; uprising (R2–3)	(inv) short for **motocicletta** = motorbike
noce	walnut tree, wood	walnut
pianeta	planet	chasuble (R3)
radio	radius (bone) (R3); radium	(inv) radio, wireless
rosa	(inv) color pink	rose
via	(inv) start, starting signal, e.g. **dare il via** = to give the starting signal	road, street, path; way
volante	steering wheel	flying squad

14.7 Nouns with both masculine and feminine plurals

A small number of masculine nouns in **-o** boast two plural forms, a regular form in **-i** and an "exceptional" feminine form in **-a**, a relic of the plural ending of the original Latin neuter noun. Between the two forms there is, at times, a difference in meaning, as shown in the sample below.

Note that in some cases, the **-a** ending indicates a "set" [e.g. **le lenzuola** = top and bottom sheets of a bed] as opposed to a collection of separate items [e.g. **quattro lenzuoli di misura diversa** = four sheets of different sizes]. In these cases, the form in **-i** is more likely to be associated with extended or figurative meanings of the word.

braccio (arm)	
braccia	human arms; units of length
bracci	fig, generally of things, e.g. **i bracci di una croce** = the limbs of a cross; **i bracci di un penitenziario** = the wings of a penitentiary
budello (only fig, dark and narrow passage; hose, pipe)	
budella	intestines (also **budelle** [R1])
budelli	(fig) dark and narrow passages; hoses, pipes
calcagno (heel)	
calcagna	heels (fig): e.g. **avere qu alle calcagna** = to have sb at one's heels
calcagni	heels (lit)
cervello (brain, brains)	
cervella (R3)	brains (= cerebral matter, cf. the idiom **farsi saltare le cervella** = to blow one's brains out)
cervelli	brainy people, geniuses

ciglio (eyelash; edge of a road, a ravine, a ditch and similar)
- **ciglia** — eyelashes; (= **sopracciglia**) eyebrows
- **cigli** — edges (of roads, ravines, ditches, and similar)

corno (horn)
- **corna** — horns (of animals, in sets)
- **corni** — horns (musical instruments, and fig, e.g. **i corni di un dilemma**)

cuoio (leather)
- **cuoia** — only in idioms like **tirare le cuoia** (R1–2) = to kick the bucket
- **cuoi** — leathers, hides (lit)

dito (finger)
- **dita** — fingers (in sets)
- **diti** — (less frequent) fingers (considered separately)

filo (thread)
- **fila** — threads (taken collectively, only in some expressions, e.g. **le fila di una congiura** = the threads of a plot)
- **fili** — threads (lit, e.g. **fili di cotone** = cotton threads; **fili elettrici** = electric wires; **fili d'erba** = blades of grass)

fondamento (foundation)
- **fondamenta** — foundations (lit, e.g. **le fondamenta di una casa**)
- **fondamenti** — foundations (fig = fundamental principles, e.g. **i fondamenti di una teoria**)

fuso (spindle; time zone)
- **fusa** — only in **fare le fusa** = to purr (like a cat)
- **fusi** — spindles; time zones

gesto (gesture)
- **gesta** — exploits, feats, glorious deeds
- **gesti** — gestures

ginocchio (knee)
- **ginocchia** — knees, esp in sets, e.g. **sedersi sulle ginocchia** [less common **sui ginocchi**] **di qu** = to sit on sb's knees
- **ginocchi** — knees, esp not as a set, e.g. **mi fanno male i ginocchi**

grido/urlo (cry, scream)
- **grida/urla** — cries, screams (of people)
- **gridi/urli** — cries, screams (esp of animals)

labbro (lip)
- **labbra** — lips (lit)

labbri	lips (fig, e.g. **i labbri di una ferita** = the lips of a wound)
lenzuolo (bed sheet)	
lenzuola	sheets (gen, esp in sets)
lenzuoli	sheets (considered separately)
membro (limb; member)	
membra (R2–3)	limbs (e.g. **le membra superiori** = the upper limbs, the arms)
membri	members (e.g. **i membri del Parlamento**)
muro (wall)	
mura	walls (as a set, esp the fortified walls of a city or a fortress)
muri	walls (considered separately, the walls of a house)
osso (bone)	
ossa	bones (in sets, e.g. **le ossa della mano** = the bones of the hand, and also in some idioms, e.g. **essere pelle e ossa** = to be skin and bone)
ossi	bones (considered separately, esp of butchered animals)

Though obviously not belonging to the same category, we include here

rèni (m)	kidneys, the regular plural form of **rène** (m) (*kidney*) (often pronounced **réne**, **réni**)
réni (f)	loins, (lower) back, from Lat. *renes*, plural of *ren* (*kidney*)

15 Number

15.1 Formation of plurals

The following description covers the most productive categories of nouns (and adjectives) in Italian. However, there are many exceptions and the student should check with a good dictionary if in doubt.

Regular plurals

Singular	***Plural***	
-a (f)	**-e**	la casa > **le case**
-a (m)	**-i**	il problema > **i problemi**
-e (m/f)	**-i**	l'insegnante > **gli/le insegnanti**
-o (m)	**-i**	il libro > **i libri**
-o (f)	**-i**	la mano > **le mani**, l'eco > **gli echi**

*Nouns with **c** or **g** in the final syllable*

The stress is often a guide to forming the plural, though there are many exceptions.

In some words, an accent is used to indicate the main stress but should not be used when writing. See p. 29.

Singular	*Plural*	
-ca, **-ga** (f)	**-che**, **-ghe**	la bottega > **le botteghe**
-ca, **-ga** (m)	**-chi**, **-ghi**	il patriarca > **i patriarchi**
-co, **-go** (m)	**-chi**, **-ghi**	when stress on penultimate syllable: il cuoco > **i cuochi** BUT **amici**, **nemici**, **greci**, **porci**, etc.
	-ci, **-gi**	when stress on third-to-last syllable: il medico > **i medici** BUT **incarichi**, **vàlichi**, **pròfughi**, etc.
-logo, -fago	**-logi, -fagi**	names of persons: il politologo > **i politòlogi**, l'antropofago > **gli antropòfagi**
	-loghi, -faghi	names of things: il dialogo > **i diàloghi** il sarcofago > **i sarcòfaghi**
-cia, -gia	**-cie, -gie**	when stress on the **i**: la bugia > **le bugie**
	-cie, -gie	when stress on the preceding syllable and a vowel comes before the **c** or **g**: la camicia > **le camicie**
	-ce, -ge (less common **-cie**, **-gie**)	when stress on the preceding syllable and a consonant comes before the **c** or **g**: la provincia > **le province**

*Nouns in **-io***

When the stress is on the **i**, the plural is **-ii**. When the stress is on the preceding syllable, the plural is **-i**, e.g.:

lo zio > **gli zii**; il bacio > **i baci**
BUT il tempio > **i templi**

*Nouns in **-ista**, **-cida**, and **-iatra***

These have one singular form and two plural forms, e.g.:

il giornalista > **i giornalisti**, la giornalista > **le giornaliste**
il suicida > **i suicidi**, la suicida > **le suicide**
lo psichiatra > **gli psichiatri**, la psichiatra > **le psichiatre**

Invariable nouns and adjectives

- those ending in an accented vowel, e.g.:
  la città > **le città**, il caffé > **i caffè**, la virtù > **le virtù**
- monosyllables:
  il re > **i re**

- foreign words (adding **s** is now rather old-fashioned or used for effect):
  il film > **i film**, la star > **le star**
- words which are abbreviations of other words or acronyms (cf. chapter 9), e.g.:
  il cinema > **i cinema**; la lampo (= la chiusura lampo) > **le lampo;** l'ufo > **gli ufo**
- nouns ending in **i** or **ie**:
  la crisi > **le crisi**, il brindisi > **i brindisi**, la serie > **le serie**
  (BUT la moglie > **le mogli**, la superficie > **le superfici** OR **superficie**)
- certain masculine nouns ending in **a**:
  il gorilla > **i gorilla**, il sosia > **i sosia**
- proper names are usually invariable:
  i Conversano the Conversano family, OR Mr and Mrs Conversano;
  i signori Conversano Mr and Mrs Conversano
  NOTE: in R3 a given name may be used in the plural to refer to paintings produced by that person, e.g.:
  due splendidi Tiziani two splendid paintings by Titian
  AND **Le tre Marie** is the name of restaurants and bakeries in several Italian cities
- letters of alphabet:
  una emme > **due emme**

Common exceptions

l'ala > **le ali**; l'arma > **le armi**; il bue > **i buoi**; il dio > **gli dei**
See section 14.7 for nouns that change gender in the plural.

15.2 Plural of compound nouns

The plural of compound nouns formed from other nouns and/or adjectives generally follows the above rules, when the compound is felt to be a word in its own right, e.g.:
l'autostrada > **le autostrade**
il pescecane > **i pescecani**
l'altoparlante > **gli altoparlanti**
BUT il purosangue > **i purosangue**, la mezzaluna > **le mezzelune**
In higher registers, both elements may sometimes be pluralized, e.g.:
il pomodoro > **i pomodori**, **pomidoro** or **pomidori** (R3); la cassaforte > **le cassaforti**, **casseforti** (R3).
Nouns beginning with **capo-** follow the normal rules, except when **capo-** means "person in charge of something." In this case, masculine nouns pluralize only the **capo** part of the word, and feminine nouns are invariable, e.g.:
il capolavoro > **i capolavori** (ALSO **capoluoghi**, **capoversi**, etc.)
il capopartito > **i capipartito** (ALSO **capistazione**, **capigruppo**, **capiscuola**, etc.)
la capopartito > **le capopartito**, **le caposquadra**, etc.

When one noun follows another, acting as an adjective, it does not change in the plural, e.g.:

la conferenza stampa > **le conferenze stampa**

cf. la (chiusura) lampo > **le lampo**

Compound nouns formed with a verb as first element (they are usually masculine) form their plural according to what the second element is. Those formed with a masculine singular noun or with **-mano** form a regular plural, and others are invariable:

Masculine singular	il passaporto > **i passaporti**
	il parafulmine > **i parafulmini**
"Mano"	l'asciugamano > **gli asciugamani**
Feminine singular	lo scioglilingua > **gli scioglilingua**
	il portacenere > **i portacenere**
Plural	il cavatappi > **i cavatappi**
	il guastafeste > **i guastafeste**
Verb	il dormiveglia > **i dormiveglia**

15.3 Italian plurals which correspond to English singulars

i bagagli	luggage, baggage
dare un sacco di botte a qu	to give sb a hiding
i capelli	hair
i compiti	homework
essere in buone condizioni	to be in good condition
in contanti	in cash
le conoscenze (also in sg)	knowledge
i dati	data (used both as sing and pl in English)
(**il dato**	datum (in science))
dare le dimissioni	to tender one's resignation
Buone Feste	Merry Christmas (and Happy New Year)
le mie forze	my strength
le forze dell'ordine	the police force
i funerali (R3) ALSO **il funerale**	funeral
le informazioni	information
(**una informazione**	an item of information)
le intemperie (R3)	bad weather
con gli interessi	with interest (financial), abundantly (gen)
le mie letture	my reading

i mezzi pubblici	public transport
le munizioni	ammunition
le nozze (R2–3)	wedding, nuptials
le posate	cutlery
le Poste (R1–2)	Post Office, postal service
fare dei progressi	to make progress
i reumatismi (R3)	rheumatism
le ricerche	research
(**una ricerca**	a research project)
i rifiuti	rubbish
le sciocchezze	nonsense
(**una sciocchezza**	a silly thing, piece of nonsense)
i soldi	money
gli spaghetti sono pronti	the spaghetti is ready
a mie spese, a spese di	at my expense, at the expense of
gli spiccioli	loose change
le stoviglie (R3)	crockery
le tenebre (R3)	darkness
i vestiti	clothing, clothes
nelle vicinanze di	in the vicinity of
i viveri	food, provisions

15.4 Italian singulars which correspond to English plurals

l'archivio	archives
l'avena	oats
la bilancia	(weighing) scales
il formicolío	pins and needles
la gente	people
la merce	goods
il morbillo	measles
il pantalone (R3, fashion)	trousers
il pigiama	pyjamas
la pinza, ALSO pl	pincers
la scala	stairs
la statistica	set of statistics; statistics as a subject
la tattica	tactics
l'uva	grapes
un chicco d'uva = a grape	

NOTE **la fisica** (*physics*), **la linguistica** (*linguistics*), **la politica** (*politics*) etc., whose English forms appear to be plural but are grammatically singular.

15.5 Number concord

Collective nouns

More formal usage requires agreement with the singular collective noun, but in informal usage the plural noun causes the verb to go into the plural, e.g.:

Una folla di uomini, donne e bambini era (R2–3) / **erano** (R1–2) **sulla strada**.

All'interno c'era (R2–3) / **c'erano** (R1–2) **una decina di persone**.

La maggior parte dei deputati era (R2–3) / **erano** (R1–2) **d'accordo con la proposta**.

However, if the noun following the collective noun is in the singular, the verb is in the singular, e.g.:

La maggior parte della popolazione era d'accordo con la proposta.

Some words, when used in a collective way, have lost their literal meaning and usually take a plural verb (the singular is R2–3), e.g.:

C'erano un sacco di tifosi alla stazione.

Per fare ciò sono necessari un mucchio di soldi.

Some singular nouns that refer to groups of people may take a singular or plural verb in English, but always take a singular verb in Italian, e.g. **comitato**, **famiglia**, **polizia**, **squadra**:

Il comitato era contrario alla proposta.

The committee was/were opposed to the proposal.

Essere

Essere is used in the plural if there is a plural noun on either side of it, and it also agrees with a first or second person element if there is one, e.g.:

Il problema sono gli studenti.

I rappresentanti siete voi.

La presidente sei tu.

Chi è stato? - Sono stato/stata io.

Either/or, neither/nor

o . . . o takes a verb in the singular (less commonly in the plural) if the two items mentioned are singular, otherwise in the plural, e.g.:

O l'uno o l'altro mi va bene.

Secondo me, vinceranno o gli italiani o i tedeschi.

né . . . né takes a verb in the plural (but may be in the singular if the subject follows), e.g.:

Né Matteo né Chiara vanno alla festa.

Non siamo andati né io né mia moglie.

Non è arrivato né il capo né il suo vice.

16 Pronouns

There are two forms of personal pronouns in Italian: unstressed (or "conjunctive" or "clitic") and stressed (or "disjunctive" or "free"). Subject pronouns are stressed only; object pronouns have two forms: stressed and unstressed.

Stressed pronouns are used for emphasis or contrast, or to remove ambiguity. Thus subject pronouns, which are always stressed, are usually not used except for these reasons. They are much more common in informal conversation than in writing. Stressed object pronouns are used like nouns, e.g. they follow verbs and are always separate from them.

16.1 First- and second-person pronouns

Note these combinations of subject pronouns:

tu ed io; **io e te** (R1–2)

The following forms are dialectal in origin and are found in R1:

subject pronouns: **te** (Center)

subject and object pronouns: **mi**, **ti**, **noialtri**, **voialtri** (Northern)

When **mi**, **ti**, **ci**, **vi** are direct objects, a following past participle tends not to agree except in more formal usage, e.g.:

Ciao Maria! Non ti ho visto alla festa! (**Non ti ho vista**, R2–3)

With **Lei**, when used as a second-person pronoun, participles and adjectives tend to agree with the sex of the person in question (cf. section 14.2), but in formal registers participles (but less so adjectives) may agree with the gender of the pronoun, e.g.:

R1* vulgar or indecent
R1 informal, colloquial
R2 neutral, unmarked
R3 formal, written
Italian words and expressions are R2 unless otherwise indicated. See also p. 5.

Ah, dottor Rossi, non L'ho visto ieri sera alla riunione! (**L'ho vista**, R3)

16.2 Third-person pronouns

Stressed forms

The most commonly used stressed forms are **lui**, **lei**, **loro**. Other forms are still used in more formal registers, especially written: **egli** (R2–3)/ **ella** (R3) refer to persons; **essa**, **essi** and **esse** (R2–3) refer to persons, animals, or things; **esso** (R3) refers only to animals or things. All of these pronouns can be used as stressed object forms, except **egli** and **esso**. However, there is some uncertainty about the appropriate use of these forms, and in informal speech it is common to use a demonstrative (**quello** etc.) to refer to things.

Direct object (unstressed)

The unstressed direct object forms are **lo**, **la**, **li**, **le**. **Lo** also functions as a kind of neutral pronoun in referring to an entire clause and is often not translated in English, e.g.:

La nostra squadra vincerà sicuramente. – Chi lo dice? – Non lo so.

Our team will win for sure. – Says who? – I don't know.

With the verb **essere** and similar verbs, **lo** replaces a complement of the verb (noun, adjective – of either gender or number – or phrase), e.g.:

Lei è una persona interessante, lo è sempre stata.

She is an interesting person, she always has been.

Alcune di queste persone sono nate povere, altre lo sono diventate per qualche disgrazia.

Some of these people were born poor, others became (poor) through some misfortune.

Per dire no alla guerra siamo in piazza oggi come lo siamo stati l'anno scorso.

To say no to war we are in the streets today like we were last year.

La is used in many idioms: see section 4.5.1.

Indirect object (unstressed)

The indirect object forms are **gli** and **le** (singular) and **gli** (plural) as well as **ci** and **ne**. **Gli** is preferred to stressed **loro** in informal usage and, increasingly, in more formal registers as well. **Gli** is also used in place of feminine singular **le** in informal usage, especially in Central Italy, but this is considered ungrammatical.

Ci

Ci is traditionally used for reference to animals or things (as well as being first person plural). It is often used in R1 in place of **gli** or **le** for reference

to people, as a way of simplifying the range of pronouns in use and also because most dialects use one form for all indirect object reference to persons, animals, and things. This usage is considered incorrect in Italian, with the exception of certain uses where **ci** does not correspond to a phrase with **a** but to some other preposition, e.g.:

Non ci puoi contare [**ci = su di lui**]
You can't rely on him.

On the other hand, **gli** and **le** are being used more and more for reference to animals and also things, and it may be that **ci** is being restricted to its adverbial uses (e.g. **non ci sono mai stato**, where **ci = in quel luogo**).

Non ci capisco niente [**ci = di ciò**].
I can't understand anything (of it).
Non ci faccio niente [**ci = con ciò**].
I can't do anything with it.

Ci is universally used in the expressions **ce l'ho, non ce l'ho**, etc., and in R1–2 is often used with **avere** meaning "to possess," e.g.:

C'ho una fame! (R1–2)
I'm so hungry!

It also combines with a number of common verbs to change the meaning, sometimes considerably (cf. section 4.5.3), e.g.:

volerci	to be necessary
metterci	to take (a period of time)
entrarci	to be relevant
vederci	to be able to see
sentirci	to be able to hear

Ne

Ne is used for reference to persons, animals, things, and also to a previous sentence. It corresponds to a phrase introduced by **di** or **da** (see also section 4.5.2), e.g.:

Chiara è partita l'anno scorso e non ne ho avuto più notizie.
Chiara left last year and I have not had any news of her.
Siamo arrivati a Roma la mattina e ne siamo partiti la sera.
We arrived in Rome in the morning and left (from there) in the evening.
Mi assicurava che parlava con il direttore domani, ma ne dubito.
He assured me he would talk to the manager tomorrow, but I doubt it (lit of it).

Ne is also used with a partitive meaning and is often untranslated in English. In this case it may require agreement with a past participle in a compound tense. Usage varies widely, though in general agreement occurs when there is no object following the verb, e.g.:

Hai comprato delle banane? – Sì, ne ho comprate.
Did you buy any bananas? – Yes, I bought some.

and when the verb is followed by a numeral or indefinite pronoun of quantity, e.g.:

Hai comprato dei limoni? – Sì, ne ho comprati tre.
Did you buy any lemons? – Yes, I bought three.
Hai comprato delle mele? – Sì, ne ho comprate molte / ne ho comprata una.
Did you buy any apples? – Yes, I bought many / I bought one.

When the verb is followed by a noun, the participle usually agrees with the noun or, less commonly, with **ne**, e.g.:

Hai comprato delle arance? – Sì, ne ho comprato un chilo.
Did you buy any oranges? – Yes, I bought a kilo.
Hai comprato delle pesche? – Sì, ne ho comprati (OR **comprate**) **due chili.**
Did you buy any peaches? – Yes, I bought two kilos.

Similarly, when the verb is reflexive, the participle agrees with the following noun or, less commonly, with **ne** or, even less commonly, the subject, e.g.:

Elena ha comprato delle pere? Sì, se ne è comprati (OR **comprate** OR **comprata**) **due chili.**
Did Elena buy any pears? – Yes, she bought herself two chilos (of them).

16.3 Order of object pronouns

The order of unstressed pronouns relative to each other is governed by this table:

mi	**gli** **le** (dative)	**vi** **ti**	**ci**	**si** (reflexive)	**lo** **la** **li** **le**	**si** (impersonal)	**ne**

A second principle is:

indirect object	**direct object**

While many combinations of unstressed pronouns are possible in theory, only certain types tend to occur in practice. These are:

- an indirect object followed by **lo**, **la**, **li**, **le** or **ne**. The following changes occur: **mi**, **ti**, **si** (reflexive only), **ci**, **vi** become **me**, **te**, **se**, **ce**, **ve**; and **gli** and **le** both become **glie-** and attach to the following pronoun, e.g.:

  te lo chiedo
  I'm asking you (for it) / I'm requesting it of you
  ce ne parlava
  she was speaking about it to us
  glielo chiedo
  I'll ask him (for it) / I'll ask her (for it) / I'll ask them (for it)
  gliene parlava
  she was speaking about it to us

- **ci** (or **vi** R2–3) with a direct object pronoun or **ne**. Note the varying position of **ci**:
  mi ci porti?
  will you take me there?
  non ti ci vedo
  I can't see you there / in that situation
  ce lo troverai domani
  you will find him there tomorrow
  ce ne sono tanti / **ve ne sono tanti** (R2–3)
  there are lots of them
- reflexive **si** with a direct object (following) or indirect object (preceding), e.g.:
  se lo mangia tutto lui
  he eats it all himself
  gli si avvicina
  she goes up to him
- impersonal **si** with a direct or indirect object or **ne**. Note the position of impersonal **si** compared to reflexive **si**:
  La pasta? La si prepara in cinque minuti.
  The pasta? It is / can be prepared in five minutes.
  La pasta? Se la prepara in cinque minuti.
  The pasta? He prepares it for himself in five minutes.
  se ne parla
  one talks about it OR he talks to himself about it
  mi si dice che . . .
  I am told that . . .
- groups of more than two pronouns are possible in theory, but in practice the only such groups usually include a pair of indirect + object pronouns plus impersonal **si**, e.g.:
  glielo si dice
  it is said to him/her/them
  gli se ne parla (less common, **gliene si parla**)
  one talks to him/her/them about it

16.4 Pronouns and verb

Before finite verbs:
Ti parlo per il tuo bene.
I'm speaking to you for your good.

After and attached to non-finite forms – gerund, infinitive, and participle used alone – and **ecco**:
vedendoti in quello stato / avendoti visto in quello stato
on seeing you / having seen you in that state
per finirla / per averla finita
to finish it / through having finished it
vistolo / arrivatoci / una lettera riferentesi al caso (R3)
having seen it / having arrived there / a letter referring to the case

eccomi / eccotelo
here I am / here it is for you (here you are).

Note that **loro** follows all verbs forms and is never attached, e.g.:

vedo loro / parlo loro / per capir(e) loro

NOTE the following crystallized forms which now only appear in notices and formal communications:

Vendesi, **Affittasi**, **Cercasi; Vendonsi** (OR Vendesi) appartamenti
For sale, For rent, Wanted; Apartments for sale

With first and second person imperatives, the pronouns are attached to the verb in the affirmative, e.g.:

Parlami / Ditemi cosa volete / Diciamoglielo!

In the negative, the pronoun usually follows the verb but in R1–2 may precede it, e.g.:

Non preoccuparti OR **Non ti preoccupare**
Non parlatene OR **Non ne parlate**
Non scoraggiamoci OR **Non ci scoraggiamo!**

With third person imperatives, since these are subjunctives, the pronouns always precede the verb, e.g.:

Si accomodi / Non si disturbi / Mi dica!

In a verb + gerund construction, the pronouns usually precede the finite verb, but may follow and attach to the gerund, e.g.:

Lo sto finendo in questo momento OR **Sto finendolo in questo momento**.

In a modal verb (**dovere**, **potere**, **sapere**, **volere**) + infinitive construction, the pronouns may either precede the finite verb or follow and attach to the infinitive (they may not come between finite verb and infinitive). In formal registers the pronouns tend to attach to the infinitive, but in informal conversation the choice is free. Note that if the modal is emphasized, the pronouns attach to the infinitive. If there are two pronouns, they must not be split, except with impersonal **sì**, e.g.:

Ci dobbiamo alzare presto OR **Dobbiamo alzarci presto**
Te ne voglio parlare OR **Voglio parlartene**
Lo devo poter fare OR **Devo poterlo fare** OR **Devo poter farlo**
Si può farlo OR **Lo si può fare**.

With other verbs that take a following infinitive, the pronoun follows the infinitive, but with some verbs it may precede the finite verb in informal registers, e.g.:

Non riesco a leggerlo
Vado a prendertelo OR **Te lo vado a prendere**
Stiamo cercando di orientarci OR **Ci stiamo cercando di orientare**.

When the infinitive is a reflexive verb, the position of the pronoun affects the choice of auxiliary: **essere** if it precedes the verb, **avere** if it follows the infinitive (cf section 22.6), e.g.:

Ci siamo dovuti alzare presto OR **Abbiamo dovuto alzarci presto**
Si è cominciata a preoccupare OR **Ha cominciato a preoccuparsi**.

With verbs of perception, the pronoun always goes with the main verb if it is the subject of the infinitive, but can be in either position if it is the object, e.g.:

L'ho sentito cantare.
I heard him singing OR I heard it being sung.
Ho sentito cantarlo.
I heard it being sung.
Non voglio sentirlo cantare OR **Non lo voglio sentir cantare**.
I can't hear him singing OR I can't hear it being sung.

Therefore with verbs of perception two pronouns may be split, e.g.:

Ti ho sentito cantarlo.
I heard you singing it.
Ho sentito cantartelo.
I heard it being sung to you.
Te l'ho sentito cantare.
I heard you singing it OR I heard it being sung to you.

With certain verbs only one position is possible. With causative **fare** and **lasciare**, the pronoun precedes the main verb, e.g.:

Li hai fatti cadere?
Did you let them fall / drop them?
Gli hai fatto perdere l'entusiasmo.
You made them lose enthusiasm.

and with **sembrare** and **parere**, the pronoun is attached to the infinitive, e.g.:

Sembra capirlo.
Pareva svegliarsi.

16.5 Pronouns of address

In modern Italian, the following pronouns are used for addressing another person or persons:

Singular:	**tu**, **Lei**, **voi, Ella** (R3) (**Lei** and its derived forms **La**, **Le** are often written today without the capital letter; **Ella** always has the capital; **voi** is sometimes written with a capital, especially in commercial Italian where it refers to the organization being addressed rather than a specific individual.)
Plural:	**voi**, **Loro** (**Loro** is always written with the capital letter, **voi** never.)

The Italian expression for *to use tu/voi/Lei* is **dare del tu/voi/Lei**. The most important distinction is between **tu** and **Lei** when speaking to one person. Usage is changing rapidly and varies according to personal background and taste, but some general rules can be given. The use of **tu** in place of **Lei** is spreading.

Tu is used universally in the following situations:

- speaking to children, animals, God, and saints (though some traditional prayers to Mary use **voi**);
- to express intimate or familiar relationships, e.g. between relatives of the same generation, to younger relatives, between friends;
- to express solidarity or some common bond between individuals, either age, social class, occupation, activity, etc. Thus **tu** is very widely used among young people, in all situations; between workmates and colleagues; to priests;
- talkback radio, magazine columns which answer letters from readers;
- instructions and questions from computers and other machines to humans (the infinitive is also used).

Lei is used:

- to express courtesy to strangers in formal situations, e.g. those serving the public in shops and offices;
- to students at university (while **tu** is used throughout school);
- to express respect to older persons and those in positions of authority or respect, e.g. university professors (nowadays this often depends on the personality of the professor), priests;
- people with whom one has a relationship which, however cordial and long-standing, is not intimately personal or familiar.

Voi, used to one person, is disappearing but still survives especially in the Center and the mainland South. It is used as a mark of respect to persons with whom one is, nevertheless, on familiar or intimate terms, e.g. older relatives, priests, shopkeepers in one's village or suburb.

Ella is used only on extremely formal, public occasions. Adjectives and participles tend to be in the feminine.

Pronoun usage in most cases is reciprocal, i.e. both interlocutors use the same pronoun. The only usual exceptions to this involve a clear difference in social status and age.

Tu is usually associated with the use of a person's given name, and **Lei** with use of a person's title and/or last name. However there are many possible combinations of **tu**/**Lei** with first name/last name/title, expressing multiple dimensions of social relationships, e.g.:

- colleagues who do not know each other particularly well may use **tu** but call each other by their surname;
- a woman who employs a cleaning lady may call the cleaning lady by her first name while the cleaning lady calls her **Signora** + first name, and they may both use **Lei**;
- journalists and politicians may be on first-name terms and use **tu** privately, but when in the media they may use **Lei** to each other while the politician may use the journalist's last name and the journalist may use the politician's title or last name or both.

In the plural, **voi** is used in almost all situations today, even when the persons being addressed would receive **Lei** individually. **Loro** has a somewhat antiquated feel.

17 Comparison

17.1 Comparison of inequality (*more/less/fewer than*)

Usage varies somewhat in the use of **di** and **che**.

17.1.1 Nouns and pronouns

If two nouns or pronouns are compared and one of them comes before the verb, **di** is used. This usually means that both items are subjects of a verb, expressed or implied, e.g.:

Le riviste sono più/meno care dei giornali.
Magazines are more/less expensive than newspapers.
Mio fratello ha due anni più/meno di me.
My brother is two years older/younger than I/me.
Le nuove banconote sono più/meno belle di quelle vecchie.
The new banknotes are more/less beautiful than the old ones.

If the two nouns or pronouns being compared both come after the verb, **che** is used (though **di** may also be found in this position). This usually means that both items are objects of a verb. Compare the following pairs of sentences:

Mangio più pasta che riso.
La pasta la mangio più del riso.
I eat more pasta than rice.

R1* vulgar or indecent
R1 informal, colloquial
R2 neutral, unmarked
R3 formal, written
Italian words and expressions are R2 unless otherwise indicated. See also p. 5.

Il vino mi piace più della birra.
Mi piace più il vino che la birra.
I like wine more than beer.

Il tiramisù è stato più apprezzato della torta.
E' stato più apprezzato il tiramisù che la torta.
The tiramisù was appreciated more than the cake.

When **più** goes with the second item being compared, **di** is more usual than **che**, e.g.:

Mangio la pasta più del riso.
Mi piace il vino più della birra.
Più della torta è stato apprezzato il tiramisù.

Note the following two sentences. The first compares one item with another in terms of some characteristic they have in common (both items are "subjects"). The second compares two characteristics of one item (both characteristics are "objects"):

La biblioteca ha più libri della libreria.
The library has more books than the bookshop.
La biblioteca ha più libri che riviste.
The library has more books than magazines.

Note also the use of **di** and **che** in the following pair of sentences (in the first sentence, the two items being compared are subjects and in the second they are objects):

Matteo li conosce meglio di Chiara.
(= **Matteo li conosce meglio di quanto non li conosca Chiara**.)
Matteo knows them better than Chiara (does).
Matteo li conosce meglio che Chiara.
(= **Matteo li conosce meglio di quanto lui non conosca Chiara**.)
Matteo knows them better than (he knows) Chiara.

When the nouns are preceded by a preposition, **che** is always used, e.g.:

In Italia ho visto più chiese che in Spagna.
Ho passato più tempo in Italia che in Francia.

17.1.2 Other parts of speech

When the comparison involves any other part of speech but nouns and pronouns, **che** is used, e.g.:

Lui è meno arrabbiato che dispiaciuto.
He is less angry than hurt.
Meglio nudi che in pelliccia.
Better naked than wearing fur.
Meglio tardi che mai.
Better late than never.
C'è più gioia nel dare che nel ricevere.
It is more blessed to give than to receive.
Fumare è più dannoso che bere.
Smoking is more harmful than drinking.

NOTE if infinitives are preceded by articles and are thus treated as nouns, they behave as nouns, e.g.:

Il fumare è più dannoso del bere.

Note the use of **più che** at the beginning of a clause in the following:

Più che un semplice documentario, il film si presenta come un racconto fantastico.

Rather than just a documentary, the film comes across as a tale of fantasy.

In R3 **non** may be used after **che**, e.g.:

Parlò più per necessità che non per disposizione naturale.

He spoke more out of necessity than because of natural disposition.

Note these expressions:

L'ho visto più di tre volte.
I've seen it more than three times.
Più chiaro di così non si può.
It couldn't be clearer that that.
Più che altro non voglio fare brutta figura.
More than anything I don't want to look silly.
Oggi ho lavorato meno di ieri.
Today I have worked less than yesterday.
Ti amo più che mai.
I love you more than ever.

17.1.3 Alternatives to **di/che**

Both **di** and **che** can sometimes be replaced by **rispetto a**, **nei confronti di**, etc.:

Rispetto al fratello, è molto più indipendente.
Compared to her brother, she is much more independent.

17.2 Comparison of equality

Comparing nouns: **tanto/altrettanto** (R2–3) . . . **quanto** . . .

Questo paese non ha tante case quante l'altro.
This village doesn't have as many houses as the other.
Questo paese ha tanti palazzi quante chiese.
This village has as many palaces as churches.
I palazzi sono tanti quante sono le chiese.
There are as many palaces as there are churches.

Note the use of partitive **ne** in the following:

Ci sono tanti tipi di pizza quanti ce ne sono di formaggio.
There are as many types of pizza as there are of cheese.

Comparing adjectives: **tanto** . . . **quanto** (**che**, R1–2) . . .; **così** . . . **come** . . .; **altrettanto** . . . **quanto** (**che**, R1–2) . . .; the first element is often not used.

Questo ragazzo mi sembra (tanto) intelligente quanto suo fratello.
Questo ragazzo mi sembra (così) intelligente come suo fratello.
This boy seems to me as intelligent as his brother.
Questo stile è altrettanto conosciuto in Italia quanto (**che**, R1–2) **all'estero**.
This style is as well-known in Italy as abroad.
(E') bianco come la neve.
(It's) as white as snow.

17.3 Comparison involving a clause

When the second element of a comparison is a clause, the following constructions are used:

di quello che / di come + indicative (subjunctive less common)
di quanto non + subjunctive (R2–3)
di quanto + indicative (less common)
che non + subjunctive (R3)

E' più alto di quello che pensavo.
E' più alto di quanto non pensassi (R2–3)/**di quanto pensavo**.
E' più alto che non pensassi (R3).
He's taller than I thought.

Note the use of partitive **ne** in the following:

Ha perso più azioni di quante ne ha acquisite.
He lost more shares than he acquired.

When two clauses are directly correlated: **più** . . . (**e**) **più** . . .; **meno** . . . (**e**) **meno** . . .

Più la sento parlare (e) più sono convinto che ha ragione.
The more I hear her talk, the more I am convinced she is right.
Più siamo, meglio è.
The more the merrier.
Quanto più le vicende sono gravi, tanto più c'è bisogno di soluzioni originali (R2–3).
The more serious the events, the greater the need for original solutions.

17.4 Superlatives

"Relative" superlatives are identical in form to comparatives. When they are used with a noun, the definite article is not used with the adjective in modern Italian. However, when the noun is understood, or when the superlative is an adverb (and thus no noun is involved), the article is used, e.g.:

Ha comprato il gelato più grande possibile.
She bought the biggest possible ice-cream.

Un uomo, il più anziano di tutti, ci venne incontro.
A man, the oldest of them all, came towards us.
Risponderò il più presto possibile.
I will answer as soon as possible.

After a superlative, the preposition **di** is used, but if the noun is plural **tra/fra** may also be used, e.g.:

E' il più grande del mondo.
It's the biggest in the world.
Lei era la più preparata di/fra tutti.
She was the best prepared of them all / among them all.

The following construction is R2–3 and does not strictly express the idea of superlative but simply emphasizes the quality of the item in question. In the negative it is decidedly ironic:

Abbiamo assistito a uno spettacolo dei più strani.
We witnessed a most strange show.
Non è stata un'idea delle più brillanti.
It wasn't one of the most brilliant ideas (= It was not a good idea at all).

"Absolute" superlatives are formed by adding **-issimo** to adjectives, adverbs or, in a few cases, nouns, e.g.: **caldissimo**, **amatissimo**; **prestissimo**, **sicurissimamente**; **ingambissimo** (R1–2, = **molto in gamba**); **il campionissimo**, **augurissimi**. Such adjectives are used as normal adjectives, usually after the noun, e.g.:

Ha comprato un gelato grandissimo.
She bought a very big ice-cream.

17.5 Irregular comparatives and superlatives

A number of adjectives form their absolute superlative in irregular ways which derive from Latin, e.g. celebre – **celeberrimo**. Such forms are characteristic of R3.

A number of common adjectives have both regular and irregular forms of the comparative and superlative:

più buono OR **migliore**; **buonissimo** OR **ottimo**
più cattivo OR **peggiore**; **cattivissimo** OR **pessimo**
più grande OR **maggiore**; **il più grande** OR **il maggiore** OR **il massimo**
più piccolo OR **minore**; **il più piccolo** OR **il minore** OR **il minimo**

The pairs of forms are generally interchangeable, except for the following:

- figurative meanings occur more often with the irregular forms
  un fratello maggiore, **un fratello più grande**
  an older brother, an older/taller brother
- **più buono**: of persons means "good-natured," of things it means good to eat or drink, e.g.:
  Questo ragazzo è il più buono della classe.
  This boy is the best-natured in the class.
  E' il più buon prosciutto crudo che abbia mai mangiato in vita mia.

It's the best Parma ham I have ever eaten in my life.

In R1–2 **meglio** is often used instead of **migliore**. This usage should not be imitated, e.g.:

Per le notizie economiche, questo giornale è meglio di quello.

For economic news, this newspaper is better than that one.

Other irregular comparatives, of Latin origin, are often used with a generic, "independent" meaning and retain their comparative meaning only in R3. They are **anteriore**, **esteriore**, **inferiore**, **interiore**, **posteriore**, **superiore**, **ulteriore**, e.g.:

Dormiva sul sedile posteriore della macchina.

He was asleep in the back seat of the car.

La data sull'assegno è posteriore a quella effettiva (R3).

The date on the cheque is after/later than the actual one.

Some of these irregular comparatives also have irregular superlative forms, some of which retain a superlative meaning, e.g. **estremo**, **infimo**, **sommo/supremo**, **ultimo**, while others have lost it, e.g. **intimo**. But these and many other words which, strictly speaking, cannot be modified can acquire the superlative ending, especially in informal registers (cf. colloquial English expressions like "very unique"), e.g.: **ultimissimo** "absolutely last"; **finalissima** "grand final."

18 Word order

Word order is flexible in Italian, more flexible in many ways than in English. Changes in word order are not random but reflect differences in meaning or emphasis. These may at times be subtle, but are important to the message being communicated.

In general, Italian uses word order for stylistic effects, where English often relies on effects of the voice (in writing, these are shown by italics and other conventions). One important principle is that new or important information is normally placed at the *end* of the sentence in Italian, and other elements will be arranged accordingly.

18.1 Subject and verb

The subject usually comes before the verb:

Il mio computer ha un guasto.

My computer has a fault.

There is often nothing in front of the verb in Italian. With transitive verbs and other verbs that take **avere**, this is because the subject can be omitted if it is clear from the verb ending or the context:

***Ho* visto Luigi ieri. *Sta* meglio dell'ultima volta che *l'ho* visto**.

I saw Luigi yesterday. He is better than the last time I saw him.

Subjects often come after the verb. This is common in the following cases:

(i) if the subject is emphasized:

Rispondo io!

I'll get it (i.e. the telephone)!

R1* vulgar or indecent
R1 informal, colloquial
R2 neutral, unmarked
R3 formal, written
Italian words and expressions are R2 unless otherwise indicated. See also p. 5.

Qui comando io.
I'm the boss around here.
Hanno vinto i candidati alternativi.
The alternative candidates have won.

(ii) if the subject is long, especially if the verb is short and/or generic in meaning:
E' stata una nottata movimentata, come sa chi ci ha seguito (from a TV news broadcast).
It has been a busy night, as those who have been watching us know.

(iii) with verbs that take **essere**, if the verb presents a new fact or state of affairs:
E' successo qualcosa.
Something has happened.
Sono aumentate le tasse su tutti i beni di consumo.
Taxes on all consumer goods have gone up.
Sono state identificate le persone responsabili.
The people responsible have been identified.
Si sono verificati incidenti preoccupanti.
Worrying incidents have occurred.

(iv) with verbs such as **piacere, mancare, bastare**, etc., without a direct object (cf. section 4.4):
Mi piacciono tutte le opere di Verdi.
I like all Verdi's operas.
Ci manca la tua voce.
We miss the sound of your voice.
Mi fanno male i piedi.
My feet hurt.

(v) with non-finite verbal constructions:
stando così le cose
things being as they are/were
arrivati gli ultimi ospiti
once the last guests had arrived
visti i documenti
after the documents have/had been viewed

Note that several set expressions with non-finite verbs place the subject first, e.g.:
tempo permettendo
weather permitting
tutto sommato
all things considered.

18.2 Subject, verb, and object

With verbs that take an object, various word orders are possible.

(i) *Moving the object to the left (i.e. the beginning of sentence or clause)*
Object and subject can be inverted. This has the double effect of introducing the object as the "topic" of the sentence, and giving special

prominence to whatever is put at the end of the sentence (usually the subject). This inversion is very common in speech, since it allows speakers to emphasize whichever elements of the sentence they wish.

In R3, the inversion can be done without any other changes to the sentence.

Preoccupazioni puristiche – nel senso ottocentesco del termine – la Crusca non ebbe (M. Cortelazzo).

The Crusca Academy did not have puristic concerns in the nineteenth-century sense of the term.

In R1 and R2, objects that are moved "to the left" are usually recapitulated by a pronoun, e.g.:

Gli spaghetti li ha fatti mia nonna.

My grandmother made the spaghetti.

This is very much like saying

Gli spaghetti sono stati fatti da mia nonna.

OR

E' mia nonna che ha fatto gli spaghetti.

Consider also these examples:

La legge non l'ho fatta io (Manzoni).

It wasn't me that made the law.

Don Fabrizio quella sensazione la conosceva da sempre (Tomasi di Lampedusa).

Don Fabrizio had *always* known that sensation.

A me non mi piace (R1–2).

I don't like it.

In R1 an indirect object is sometimes moved to the left without its preposition. The repeating pronoun makes the meaning clear. This is usually considered ungrammatical, e.g.:

Quel signore, Dio gli ha toccato il cuore (Manzoni, direct speech in *I Promessi Sposi*) = **A quel signore, Dio (gli) ha toccato il cuore**.

That man, God has touched his heart/God has touched that man's heart.

Chi ha, gli sarà dato (C. Pavese) = **A chi ha, (gli) sarà dato**.

To him that has, shall be given.

Chiara, non le ho mica detto niente (R1).

I didn't say anything to Chiara.

The following construction is R1 and usually considered ungrammatical:

Mangiare, mangio poco.

As for eating, I don't eat much.

(ii) *Moving the object to the right (i.e. to the end of the sentence or clause)*

An object can also be "moved to the right." The "repeating" pronoun actually comes first, which has the effect of isolating the object at the end of the sentence. Often a pause before the object makes it seem almost an afterthought to remind the listener of the topic at hand (which the speaker assumes was common knowledge to start with). The emphasis is on what precedes this moved object, often the verb. This construction has a feeling

of informality about it and conveys some familiarity between speaker and listener. It is confined to speech and should be used with care.

Lo vuole un caffé?
Do you want a coffee?
Lo porto domani, il dolce.
As for the sweet, I'll bring it tomorrow.
Non bisogna farla chiacchierare la gente (G. Verga).
You mustn't make people gossip.

(iii) *Cleft sentences*

The English equivalent is *It is x who is doing y*. The Italian construction is very widely used in speech and there are important differences between the English and Italian constructions.

E' Matteo che ha tirato la coda al gatto.
E' stato Matteo a tirare la coda al gatto.
It was Matteo who pulled the cat's tail.
Sono io che te lo dico = Sono io a dirtelo.
It's me telling you/I'm the one who's telling you.
Sei tu che devi chiedere scusa.
You're the one/It's you who has to apologise.
E' lì che voglio arrivare.
That's where I want to get to.
E' per questo che non mi piace.
That's why I don't like it.
Quand'è che parti per il Canada?
When is it that you are leaving for Canada?

18.3 Verbs, objects, and adverbs

As a rule the adverb immediately follows the verb in Italian. To give it particular prominence it may be moved to other positions in the sentence, especially before the verb. Note the shift in emphasis between the two clauses in the following sentence:

Lei gli prese innocentemente la mano, Candide innocentemente baciò la mano di lei (Sciascia).

Long, modified or 'heavy' adverbs may, as in English, follow the object, e.g.:

Lei parla bene l'italiano.
She speaks Italian well.
Lei parla molto bene l'italiano (normal order) OR
Lei parla l'italiano molto bene (greater emphasis).
She speaks Italian very well.
Lei parla l'italiano con grande sicurezza.
She speaks Italian with great confidence.

The adverb **anche** comes immediately before the item it refers to. Note the effect of the change of position in the following:

Anche Eugenio scrive poesie in italiano (as well as some other person).
Eugenio anche scrive poesie in italiano (as well as reading them).
Eugenio scrive anche poesie in italiano (as well as novels).
Eugenio scrive poesie anche in italiano (as well as English poems).

18.4 Noun and adjective

All adjectives in Italian can, in theory, come before or after a noun. However, the difference in position always carries a difference in meaning. In many cases this is a subtle nuance of emphasis or style associated with a particular register, but in others the difference is between distinct concepts and would require different words in English.

The basic position for adjectives is after the noun. Here they perform their essential function – to describe something and restrict the meaning of the noun. When adjectives come before nouns, they acquire a more rhetorical flavour and may express metaphorical meanings.

One adjective

An adjective after a noun adds information that helps to identify the noun in question, often by contrasting it with other possible or potential nouns. An adjective before a noun gives additional information of a subjective nature about the noun: it tells us something about the noun that the speaker wants us to know but which is not crucial for identifying the noun in question, e.g.:

un racconto triste
a story whose most salient characteristic (for the speaker) is that it is sad
un triste racconto
a story that happens to be sad (among other possible attributes).

All adjectives follow the noun if they have some other element depending on them, e.g.:

un racconto triste da ricordare
a story [that is] sad to recall

Connotations of a following position

Some adjectives are almost always distinctive. They express nationality, color, religious or political affiliation etc., e.g.:

un cittadino canadese, il vino rosso, un paese musulmano, il deputato radicale

These adjectives sometimes lose any "distinctive" force and precede the noun. **Il Manzoni cattolico** refers to Alessandro Manzoni *after* his conversion to Catholicism, as opposed to his earlier, anticlerical period. To say **il cattolico Manzoni** is to assume the reader knows that Manzoni was a Catholic and alludes to this fact as part of a particular interpretation.

Connotations of a preceding position

(i) When the adjective is an "expected" attribute, e.g.:

con enormi difficoltà
with enormous difficulty

This is often used for stylistic effect, e.g.:

Capo Vaticano: suggestivo promontorio da dove si gode la magnifica vista dell'intero panorama della costa tirrenica calabrese (travel brochure)

(ii) When adjective and noun make a familiar or set phrase, e.g.:

cari saluti
kind regards (at the end of a letter)

un leggero aumento nel costo della vita
a slight increase in the cost of living

(iii) Certain adjectives usually come before the noun. These adjectives are very common and express generic value judgments:

bello, brutto, buono, cattivo

They may come before the noun even when superlative, but must follow the noun when modified by an adverb, e.g.:

una bella festa
una bellissima festa OR **una festa bellissima**
una festa molto bella
una festa piuttosto bella

(iv) Adjectives usually precede infinitives used as nouns, e.g.:

il suo lento spostarsi
its slow movement

un continuo sentirsi debole
a continual feeling of weakness

Change of meaning with change of position

A certain number of adjectives have different meanings before and after nouns. In line with what has been said above, when these adjectives come after a noun they express their more usual, literal and simpler meaning. When they come before a noun, they express metaphorical and more nuanced meanings.

alto	pressione alta	*high pressure (of blood)*
	alta pressione	*high pressure (of atmosphere or gas)*
barbaro	i soldati barbari	*the Barbarian soldiers*
	i barbari soldati (R3)	*the barbaric soldiers*
buono	un uomo buono	*a good-natured man*
	un buon uomo	*a decent chap, a good guy*
caro	un ristorante caro	*an expensive restaurant*
	una cara trattoria	*a lovely trattoria*
certo	una notizia certa	*a reliable piece of news*
	una certa notizia	*a certain piece of news*

distinto	persone distinte	*distinguished persons*
	distinte persone	*various persons*
	idee distinte	*distinct ideas*
	distinte idee	*various ideas*
diverso	colori diversi	*different colors*
	diversi colori	*several colors*
dolce	l'acqua dolce del lago	*fresh water (not salty)*
	la dolce acqua del lago (R.3)	*the sweet water of the lake*
grande	un uomo grande	*a large man*
	un grande uomo	*a great man*
numeroso	famiglie numerose	*large families*
	numerose famiglie	*many families*
nuovo	Mi sono comprato una macchina nuova	(*the car is brand new*)
	Mi sono comprato una nuova macchina	(*the car may be old but it replaces my previous one*)
povero	un ragazzo povero	*a poor child*
	povero ragazzo!	*poor (= unfortunate) child!*
	il mio povero nonno	*my late grandfather*
proprio	un nome proprio	*a proper noun*
	il proprio nome	*one's own name*
puro	il vino puro	*unadulterated wine*
	la pura verità	*only the truth*
santo	quella donna santa	*that holy woman*
	quella santa donna!	*that blessed woman!*
semplice	Non preoccuparti: è una domanda semplice	(*a simple question*)
	Non preoccuparti: è una semplice domanda	(*just a question*)
solo	per donne sole	*for single or unaccompanied women*
	per sole donne	*for women only*
stesso	il ragazzo stesso	*the boy himself*
	lo stesso ragazzo	*the same boy*
unico	un unico volume	*one single volume*
	è un libro unico	*it's a unique book*
vario	ragioni molto varie	*very varied reasons*
	varie persone	*various/several persons*
vecchio	un amico vecchio	*a friend who is old*
	un vecchio amico	*a friend of long standing*
vero	Questa è una commedia vera.	*This is a factual play.*
	Questa è una vera commedia!	*This is a real comedy!*

More than one adjective

A noun can be modified by a number of adjectives in two ways. If each adjective adds separate information, they are separated by commas and the word **e**. If the adjectives are descriptive or subjective as mentioned above, they may come before the noun, e.g.:

un programma lungo, noioso e scemo
a stupid, boring, long program
una rapida e positiva soluzione
a quick, positive solution

If each new adjective adds further restriction by modifying what comes before it, they are added without punctuation, e.g.:

la sfera mobile celeste
the celestial mobile sphere
la Comunità economica europea (= CEE)
the European Economic Community (= EEC)
un impatto emotivo terribile
a terrible emotional impact

Adjectives are added to the right. (In English they are added to the left.) However, if the series gets long, a new adjective, that would have gone at the end of the list, can be added *before* the noun, e.g.:

un'università pubblica italiana
an Italian public university
un'università pubblica italiana famosa OR
una famosa università pubblica italiana
a famous Italian public university

18.5 Numerals and altro

i primi due anni, gli ultimi due anni
the first two years, the last two years
i due primi anni, i due ultimi anni
the two initial years, the two final years
molti altri ragazzi, pochi altri ragazzi
many other young people, a few other young people
altri due ragazzi
two more young people
Dammi un altro dieci-venti minuti! (R1)
Give me another ten or twenty minutes!

19 Negation

19.1 No

No is used to answer questions, both alone and in certain phrases:

Avrai il tempo per uscire stasera?
-**No, non credo.**
-**Credo di no / Temo di no / Spero di no / Mi sembra di no / Direi di no**
I don't think so / I am afraid not / I hope not / I don't think so / I would say not
Perché no?
Why not?

No is also used in sentences to sum up a negative alternative:

Ma vuoi venire o no?
But do you want to come or not?
Dimmi se ti piace o no (Note the R1–2 alternative: **Dimmi se ti piace o meno**).
Tell me if you like it or not.

If **no** applies to one particular word, it usually follows that word, e.g.:

Tommaso è d'accordo, ma Elena no.
Tommaso agrees, but Elena doesn't.
Andrei volentieri al Luna Park, ma con te no (cf. **ma non con te**)
I would gladly go to the Amusement Park, but not with you.

R1* vulgar or indecent
R1 informal, colloquial
R2 neutral, unmarked
R3 formal, written
Italian words and expressions are R2 unless otherwise indicated. See also p. 5.

Avete tutti ricevuto l'invito? Io no.
Have you all received the invitation? – *I* haven't.
Sono tutti eligibili, studenti e no.
All are eligible, students and non-students.

A common, but less correct, alternative is to use **non**:

Sono tutti d'accordo, politici e non.
All are in agreement, politicians and non-politicians (OR politicians and others).

19.2 Non

An Italian sentence is negated by placing **non** before a verb or auxiliary (and any associated pronouns), e.g.:

Non l'ho fatto io.
I didn't do it.
Non te lo voglio dire / Non voglio dirtelo.
I don't want to tell you.

The "scope" of negation can be limited by placing **non** in front of individual elements, e.g.:

Non tutti sono d'accordo.
Not everyone is in agreement.

Consider these pairs:

Non sono disposto a farlo (= I won't do it)
Sono disposto a non farlo (= I may do it, but may not)

Non posso farlo (= I am not able to do it)
Posso non farlo (= I can avoid doing it)

Non posso crederti.
I cannot believe you
Non posso non crederti.
I cannot but believe you.

With verbs of opinion and intention, moving the **non** does not significantly change the basic meaning, e.g.:

Non vorrei che tu ti preoccupassi.
Vorrei che tu non ti preoccupassi.
I wouldn't want you to worry.

A whole sentence may be negated by **non è che** or **non che** (R2–3). These expressions usually negate an idea which has been referred to, explicitly or implicitly, in the context, and usually lead to a different or opposing idea being put forward, e.g.:

Non che lui sia cattivo, ma è molto nervoso.
It's not that he's nasty, but he is very touchy.
-**Mi hanno detto che Matteo lavora in un ristorante.**
-**No, non è che lavora in un ristorante, fa il barista nel centro.**
-They told me Matteo works in a restaurant.
-No, it's not that he works in a restaurant, he is a barman in the city.

In informal usage, **non è che** is sometimes used simply to negate a whole sentence in a somewhat softer way than **non**, with the subjunctive (R2–3) or the indicative (R1–2). Compare:

Non è molto bello.
He's not very handsome.
Non è che lui sia/è molto bello.
He's not really very handsome.

19.3 Negative pronouns, adjectives, and adverbs

These are **nessuno, niente/nulla, alcuno** (R3), **mai, più, affatto, mica, manco, punto, neanche/neppure/nemmeno, né, né . . . né . . . , non . . . che**.

A negative sentence in Italian must always have one negative item before the verb, even if there are one or more negative words after it. Usually the negative words listed above follow the verb, e.g.:

Non vedo nessuno.
I can't see anyone/I see no one.
Non capisco niente/nulla.
I don't understand anything/I understand nothing.
Non vi è alcuna ragione per crederlo (R3).
There is no reason to believe it.
Non sono mai stato né a Forlì né a Cefalù.
In R1 this would be **Non sono mai stato a Forlì e neanche a Cefalù**.
I have never been either to Forlì or to Cefalù.
Non abito più in quella casa.
I no longer live in that house/I don't live in that house any more.
Non c'era più vino.
There was no more wine.
Non ci tornerò mai più.
I'll never go back there again.
Non è affatto vero.
Non è mica vero (R1).
It's not true at all.
Non ho manco capito (R1).
Non ho punto capito.
I haven't understood at all.
Non ho parlato con lei: non l'ho neanche vista/neppure vista/nemmeno vista.
I haven't spoken to her: I haven't even seen her.
Non l'ho visto né desidero vederlo (R3) (= **e non desidero vederlo)**.
I have not seen him nor do I wish to see him.
Non desidero che partire (R3).
(In R1–2 this would be **Voglio solo partire**).
I desire nothing but to depart/I only want to depart.

These negative words may also precede the verb. With **nessuno**, **niente** and **né . . . né. . . .** , they may come first if they are subject of the verb but come after the verb for emphasis, e.g.:

Nessuno ha parlato (= **Non ha parlato nessuno**).
No one spoke.
Niente è successo (= **Non è successo niente**).
Nothing happened.
Né io né mia moglie ci siamo andati (= **Non ci siamo andati né io né mia moglie**).
Neither my wife nor I went there.

Mai may precede the verb for emphasis in R2–3, e.g.:

Mai avrei creduto che fosse possibile una tale crudeltà
Never would I have believed that such cruelty was possible.
Mai che abbia un pensiero gentile (cf. section 30.2.8).
He never has a kind thought.

It normally comes first in R1 in Sicily:

Lui disse che mai aveva pensato che . . . (Sciascia)
= **Lui disse che non aveva mai pensato che . . .**

Non . . . punto is Tuscan:

Non ho punto (OR **punta**) **voglia di uscire**.
I have no desire to go out.

Manco is most common is the South, **mica** in the North. In R1 they may be used without a preceding **non:**

E' manco vero (OR **Manco vero**).
E' mica vero (OR **Mica vero**).
It's not true OR Not true.

There are many other reinforcing negatives, usually confined to speech, e.g.:

non ci capisco un'acca, un fico secco (R2), **un cavolo** (R1), **un cazzo** (R1*)
I can't understand a thing, fuck all

Certain negative words can be used elliptically in conversation, e.g.:

Che cosa hai fatto ieri sera? – Niente di particolare.
What did you do last night? – Nothing special.
Mille grazie! – (Di) niente.
Many thanks – It was nothing.
Dammi le chiavi! – Mai (stronger is **Mai e poi mai**).
Give me the keys! – Never.
Ora o mai più.
It's now or never.
La conosci la sorella di Mario? – Mai vista.
Do you know Mario's sister? – Never seen her.

Certain negative words can be used without **non** to have a positive meaning (this is in fact their historically older meaning), e.g.:

Ha chiamato nessuno?
Has anyone called?
Vado a fare la spesa, hai bisogno di niente?
I'm going shopping, do you need anything?

Hai mai sentito parlare delle Arpie?
Have you ever heard of the Harpies?
Se ti ricorderai mai di me, scrivimi.
If you ever remember me, write to me.
Hai più incontrato mia cugina?
Did you meet my cousin again?

Note these R1 uses of **niente**:

Non è vero niente (= **non è affatto vero**).
It's not true at all.
Non ho niente voglia di uscire.
I have no desire to go out.
Oggi niente ravioli.
No ravioli today.

Senza counts as a negative word in that it can be followed by one or more negative items, e.g.:

Se ne è andato senza dire niente a nessuno.
He left without saying anything to anyone.

19.4 Apparent negatives

Some exclamations and certain types of subordinate clause require **non** although their meaning is positive. The "pleonastic" **non** may be omitted in more informal speech.

Che cosa non hanno fatto gli amici per aiutarlo!
What didn't his friends do to help him!
Chissà che non sia finalmente guarito!
Let's hope he is cured at last!
Io rimango qui finché non mi dirai la verità.
I am staying here until you tell me the truth.
Farò come ho detto, a meno che non ci siano buone ragioni per cambiare progetto.
I will do as I said, unless there are good reasons for changing plans.
E' più alta di quanto non pensassi.
She's taller than I thought.
Il Presidente intervenne per timore che la situazione non peggiorasse (R3).
The President intervened for fear that the situation might deteriorate.

19.5 Negation of single words

Many words can be negated by adding a prefix. Here is a list illustrating the most common prefixes. It is difficult to predict which prefix will be used with a particular word – use a dictionary!

comodo/scomodo, **abile/disabile**, **felice/infelice**, **logico/illogico**, **morale/immorale**, **reale/irreale**, **normale/anormale**, **alcolico/analcolico**, **nobile/ignobile**

Non is used with nouns in R3, especially in bureaucratic language:

non appartenenza; **patto di non aggressione**
non-belonging; non-aggression pact

Adjectives can be negated with varying degrees of intensity by using **non**, **poco**, **niente** (R1):

un cuore non corrotto
an uncorrupted heart
un'idea poco originale
an unoriginal idea (a not very original idea)
un lavoro niente redditizio (R1, esp North)
a not at all well-paid job.

19.6 Other negative expressions

Italian has a number of set expressions which include **non**:

Non ha detto parola.
She did not say a word.
Non ha aperto bocca.
He did not open his mouth (did not say a word).
Non ha chiuso occhio.
She did not sleep a wink.

20 Periphrases

Italian has a number of verbal constructions with infinitive or gerund, where the main verb has lost its original meaning and has become a marker of the aspect of the verb in the infinitive or gerund.

20.1 Stare + **gerund**

Usually only present and imperfect (less common with future and conditional). It is known as the "progressive" periphrasis because it emphasizes the ongoing nature of an action in a particular moment of time. However, it is much more limited in its uses than the English progressive tenses. In many situations where English uses a progressive present or imperfect, it is just as common in Italian to use a simple tense. Thus, although this Italian construction is becoming more widely used in Italy, it should not be overused by the learner, since it is only used to make the action more vivid, actual, or relevant to the situation at hand. Compare:

Che fa Elena? Parla al telefono.
What is Elena doing? She is talking on the telephone.

Non interrompermi: non vedi che sto parlando al telefono?
Don't interrupt me; can't you see I am talking on the phone?

These uses of the English progressive can *not* be translated by **stare** + gerund:

(i) verbs expressing a state of affairs (**sta essendo** is ungrammatical):
Rosaria abita/vive a Napoli.
Rosaria is living in Naples.

R1* vulgar or indecent
R1 informal, colloquial
R2 neutral, unmarked
R3 formal, written
Italian words and expressions are R2 unless otherwise indicated. See also p. 5.

If used with a different meaning, the periphrasis may be possible, e.g.:
Chiara sta vivendo un brutto momento.
Chiara is going through a hard time.

(ii) continuous actions with "for" or "since":
Studio il pianoforte da dieci anni/da quando avevo otto anni.
I've been studying the piano for ten years/ since I was eight.
Aspettava da un'ora quando finalmente sono arrivati.
He had been waiting for an hour when they finally showed up.

(iii) the future:
Parto domani.
I'm leaving tomorrow.

(iv) the passive:
La bandiera viene abbassata in questo momento.
The flag is being lowered at this moment.

Stare + gerund may be used to express gradual processes of change:
Il tuo italiano sta migliorando giorno per giorno.
Your Italian is improving day by day.

Stare + gerund may be used to express actions continuing or repeated over a period of time. This usage is colloquial and is most common in parts of the South:
In questi tempi sto lavorando molto.
I'm working a lot these days.

20.2 Stare a + **infinitive,** essere dietro a + **infinitive**

All tenses. These constructions are very similar in meaning to **stare** + gerund. **Stare a** is R1–2 and is most common in the South, while **essere dietro a** is R1 and is most common in the North. They may be used to render the English progressive in tenses not allowed by **stare** + gerund. They are not normally used with verbs of motion.
Tommaso ha lavorato a casa per due ore.
Tommaso è stato (dietro) a lavorare a casa per due ore.
BUT NOT **Tommaso è stato lavorando a casa per due ore**.
Tommaso was working at home for two hours.

NOTE this idiomatic variation:
Non stare lì a preoccuparti/disturbarti/alzarti.
Don't bother worrying/disturbing yourself/getting up.

20.3 Andare + **gerund**

All tenses. Only higher registers. This expresses a continuing action or series of actions during a period of time, especially where the action has a cumulative effect, e.g.:
Il governo va raccogliendo consensi per il progetto di legge.
The government is gathering support for the bill.

La sala si andava riempiendo di gente.
The room was filling with people.
Negli anni 60 il partito è andato rafforzando i legami con i sindacati.
In the 1960s the party (gradually) strengthened its links with the unions.

Sometimes **andare** expresses actual movement and the gerund should be thought of as performing its normal function. Compare:

Va chiedendo le stesse cose a tutti.
He keeps asking everyone the same things.
Va chiedendo soldi in tutte le case del paese.
He is going to all the houses in the village asking for money.

20.4 Venire + gerund

All tenses. This is very similar to **andare** + gerund, but even more elevated in style. Often **venire** preserves some notion of movement, either physically towards the speaker or figuratively towards some end point or person benefiting from the action, e.g.:

La barca si veniva avvicinando alla riva.
The boat was coming towards the shore (implies the speaker is on the shore).
Cf. **La barca si andava avvicinando alla riva**.
The boat was approaching the shore (moving either towards or away from the speaker).
In quei mesi, si veniva creando una situazione di instabilità generale (R3).
In those months, a situation of general instability was coming into being.

21 Verbs of movement

English and Italian express manner and direction of movement in different ways. English tends to use a verb to express *manner* and a preposition to express *direction*. In Italian, the verb normally expresses *direction*, while *manner* is expressed by an adverbial phrase or a gerund. For example:

She RAN *out of the room*
MANNER *direction*

E' uscita dalla stanza DI CORSA/CORRENDO
direction MANNER

Italian: Verb: direction Phrase: manner	**English:** Verb: manner Preposition or phrase: direction
E' tornata in bicicletta.	She cycled/biked back.
E' tornato, zoppicando, in cucina.	He hobbled back to the kitchen.
Ha attraversato il fiume nuotando/a nuoto.	She swam across the river.
Ha attraversato la campagna a piedi.	He walked through the countryside.
Ha salito le scale di corsa.	She ran up the stairs.
Ha sceso le scale in punta di piedi.	He tiptoed down the stairs.
E' entrata di colpo/in fretta.	She burst in.
Si è portato al muro strisciando (per terra).	He crawled to the wall.

Common direction verbs in Italian (cf. chapter 22) are:
entrare, **uscire**, **salire**, **scendere**, **andare**, **venire**, **arrivare**, **partire**, **tornare**
Italian has a number of *manner* verbs which can indicate only the movement itself. Such movement, towards a destination, is expressed by a

generic *direction* verb plus an adverbial phrase or a gerund. English often uses one and the same verb in both cases, e.g.:

Ha camminato in centro per un'ora.
He walked in the city center for an hour.
E' andato in centro a piedi in un'ora.
He walked to the city center in an hour.
Sei venuto/andato/etc. **a piedi o in macchina?**
Did you walk or drive?

The following table contains common *manner* verbs, with some adverbial phrases typically used to express the same movement when a destination is specified. These *manner* verbs, though intransitive, imply deliberate action by the subject and therefore all take the auxiliary **avere** (cf. section 22.1).

	Manner verbs	*Manner phrases*
to crawl	**strisciare**	**strisciando, carponi**
to cycle	**andare** etc. **in bicicletta**	
to drive	**guidare**	**in macchina** etc.
to hop/skip	**saltellare** (cf. **saltare**, section 22.4)	**saltellando**
to go on horseback	**cavalcare**	**a cavallo**
to limp	**zoppicare**	**zoppicando**
to march	**marciare**	**marciando**
to sail	**navigare, veleggiare**	**in barca/nave**
to ski	**sciare**	**con gli sci**
to stroll	**passeggiare**	**passeggiando**
to swim	**nuotare**	**a nuoto**
to travel	**viaggiare**	**(andare)**
to walk	**camminare**	**a piedi**

These manner verbs may be used with certain prepositions, such as **attraverso**, **fino a**, **lungo**, which express the general direction of the movement rather than a deliberate destination, e.g.:

Hanno passeggiato attraverso i campi.
They strolled through the fields (i.e. not strictly from one side to the other).
Ho camminato fino al centro.
I went for a walk as far as the city center.
Abbiamo guidato lungo la costa.
We drove along the coast.

22 Auxiliary verbs in compound tenses

The choice between **avere** and **essere** is not straightforward in Italian. All transitive verbs take **avere**. All reflexive verbs (cf section 24), and verbs in the passive (cf. section 23), take **essere**. The problem lies with intransitive verbs. Some take **avere**, some take **essere**, and some can take either. In general, **avere** is used with verbs whose subject is involved in performing an act more or less deliberately, whereas **essere** is used where the subject of the verb is seen not so much as performing an action as undergoing an event or being affected by the event.

22.1 Verbs that always take avere

Verbs of "manner of motion" (see chapter 21) take **avere**, e.g.:

camminare	to walk	**passeggiare**	to stroll
galleggiare	to float	**sciare**	to ski
marciare	to march	**vagare**	to wander
navigare	to navigate	**viaggiare**	to travel
nuotare	to swim		

These include verbs formed by adding a suffix (cf. section 5.3) to verbs which (may) take **essere**, e.g.:

gironzolare	to stroll about
saltellare	to hop, skip
vivacchiare	to get by

R1* vulgar or indecent
R1 informal, colloquial
R2 neutral, unmarked
R3 formal, written
Italian words and expressions are R2 unless otherwise indicated. See also p. 5.

22.2 Verbs that always take essere

Note that where a verb takes **essere**, verbs derived from it will usually also take **essere**, even where the meaning is quite different, e.g. **venire** – **avvenire**, to happen; **intervenire**, to intervene or speak in a debate; **svenire**, to faint; etc. All verbs in this section take **essere** if the prefix **ri-** is added to them.

A number of verbs in this list are often used today with **avere** instead of **essere**, especially in informal registers. They are marked with an asterisk (*).

Verbs expressing change of location

affiorare	to surface
andare	to go
approdare (*)	to dock (by boat)
arrivare	to arrive
balzare	to jump
cadere	to fall
ALSO	
decadere,	to decay,
scadere	to expire (i.e. fall due)
cascare	to fall
circolare (*)	to circulate
crollare	to collapse
defluire	to flow down
deragliare (*)	to derail
entrare	to enter
espatriare (R2–3)	to expatriate
fuoriuscire (R3)	to come out
giungere	to reach
immigrare	to immigrate
inciampare (*)	to trip over
indietreggiare (*)	to move backwards
insorgere (R2–3)	to rise up
migrare	to migrate
partire	to depart
rimbalzare (*)	to bounce
sbucare	to pop out
scappare	to escape
sdrucciolare (*)	to slide
sgorgare	to pour forth
slittare (*)	to slip
sopraggiungere	to arrive, turn up
sorgere	to rise
tramontare	to set (of the sun)
trapelare	to leak (lit and fig)
tornare	to return
uscire	to go out
ALSO	
riuscire	to succeed
venire	to come
ALSO	
avvenire	to happen
intervenire	to intervene
pervenire	to arrive
provenire	to originate
svenire	to faint

Verbs expressing change of condition

ammuffire	to grow mouldy
appassire	to wilt
arrossire	to blush
avvampare (R2–3)	to flare up
crepare (R1–2)	to die
decrescere	to diminish
degenerare (*)	to degenerate
deperire (R2–3)	to waste away
divampare (R2–3)	to flare up
diventare	to become
divenire (R2–3)	to become
emergere	to emerge
esondare (*) R(2–3)	to overflow (river etc.)
evolvere	to evolve
fiorire	to flower, flourish
franare	to crumble
impallidire	to grow pale

impazzire	to go mad	**scaturire** (R2–3)	to gush, (fig) to ensue
imputridire (R2–3)	to go rotten	**schiattare** (R1–2)	to die
marcire	to rot	**scoppiare**	to explode
morire	to die	**sfiorire**	to wither
nascere	to be born	**sfociare** (*)(R2–3)	to flow out
perire (R3)	to perish	**smottare**	to slide (e.g. landslide)
sbocciare	to blossom	**straripare** (*)	to overflow (river etc.)
sbottare	to burst out	**subentrare (a qu)**	to succeed (sb)

Verbs expressing continuation of a condition

permanere (R3)	to remain	**rimanere**	to remain
persistere	to persist	**sopravvivere**	to survive
restare	to remain		

Verbs expressing happening

accadere	to happen	**decorrere** (R3)	to pass (of time)
avvenire	to happen	**risultare**	to turn out
capitare	to happen by chance	**succedere**	to happen

Verbs expressing being, existing, and various states of being

campare (R1–2)	to live	**giacere**	to lie
consistere	to consist	**luccicare** (*)	to glitter
costare	to cost	**prevalere** (*)	to prevail
dipendere	to depend	**rassomigliare** (*)	to resemble
eccellere (*)	to excel	**sedere**	to sit
equivalere (*)	to be equivalent	**stare**	to be
esistere	to exist	**sussistere**	to subsist
essere	to be		

Verbs expressing attributes of persons or things, often having "to be" in their English translation (cf. section 4.4)

abbisognare (R3)	to be necessary	**premere**	to be urgent
bastare	to be enough	**rincrescere**	to regret
bisognare	to be necessary	**spiacere**	not to please
dispiacere	not to please	**spettare**	to be up to sb
dolere (R3)	to cause sorrow	**toccare**	to befall
giovare (*)	to be of use	**valere**	to be worth
importare	to be important	**volerci**	to be required
piacere	to please		

Verbs expressing seeming, appearing, disappearing

apparire	to appear	**sparire**	to disappear
comparire	to appear	**scomparire**	to disappear
parere	to appear	**svanire**	to vanish
sembrare	to seem		

Verbs expressing the emission of sound

These verbs, all R2–3 except **squillare**, take both auxiliaries with no perceptible difference of meaning or register. For **suonare**, see section 22.4.

echeggiare (*)	to echo	**rintronare** (*)	to boom out
rimbombare (*)	to boom out	**squillare** (*)	to ring (e.g. telephone)
risuonare (*)	to resound		

Verbs of weather and atmospheric phenomena

Although official usage indicates **essere**, **avere** is very widely used today with these verbs. **Essere** is often considered to be high register or typical of central Italian usage.

abbuiare (R3)	to turn dark	**piovere** (*)	to rain
annottare (R3)	to become night	**nevicare** (*)	to snow
balenare (R3)	to lighten (of sky)	**sgelare** (see also section 22.4)	to thaw
fioccare (*)	to snow		
gelare (see also section 22.4)	to freeze	**spiovere** (see also section 22.4)	to stop raining
grandinare (*)	to hail	**tuonare** (*)	to thunder
lampeggiare (*)	to flash (of lightning)		

When used to refer to things other than the weather:

piovere (R2–3) takes **essere**, e.g.:

Gli sono piovute addosso disgrazie a non finire.

No end of bad luck poured down on him.

But **lampeggiare** and **tuonare** take **avere**, e.g.:

Il semaforo dev'essere rotto: ha lampeggiato tutta la notte.

The traffic light must be broken: it flashed all night.

Il predicatore ha tuonato contro il malcostume generale (R3).

The preacher railed against the widespread immorality.

22.3 Verbs that take either according to grammatical construction

While the basic meaning of these verbs remains the same, they take **avere** when used transitively, and **essere** when used intransitively.

(i) *Verbs expressing motion*

discendere, montare, salire, scendere, e.g.:

Abbiamo salito/sceso le scale.

We climbed up/down the stairs.

Siamo saliti/scesi per le scale.

We came up/down by the stairs.

(ii) *Verbs expressing beginning, continuing, ceasing*

cessare, **cominciare**, **continuare**, **finire**, **incominciare**, **iniziare**, **proseguire** (BUT see section 22.4), **seguire**, **seguitare**, **terminare**, e.g.:

Il direttore ha iniziato il concerto con un discorso.
The conductor began the concert with a speech.
Il concerto è iniziato alle otto in punto.
The concert began at eight on the dot.

They take **avere** when followed by an infinitive (even one that would take **essere**), e.g.:

Gli ospiti hanno continuato ad arrivare per tutto il pomeriggio.
The guests kept arriving all afternoon.

However, **cominciare** may take **essere** (in R2–3) when used with a verb that takes **essere**, especially if the subject comes after the verb, e.g.:

Sono cominciati a volare insulti.
Insults began to fly.

(iii) *Verbs expressing living*

vivere: **avere** when transitive; **essere** when intransitive (also **avere** in R1–2), e.g.:

La nonna ha vissuto una vita coraggiosa.
The grandmother lived a courageous life.
La nonna è vissuta (**ha vissuto**) **in modo coraggioso**.
The grandmother lived courageously.

NOTE **convivere** *to cohabit* usually takes **avere**.

(iv) *Verbs which form transitive/intransitive pairs*

In many cases the object of the transitive verb is the same as the subject of the corresponding intransitive verb (in English, these pairs may be expressed by the same verb, or by two different verbs; in these cases the transitive meaning is given first), e.g.:

L'esperienza ha invecchiato mio padre di dieci anni.
The experience aged my father by ten years.
In quel momento mio padre è invecchiato di dieci anni.
At that moment my father aged by ten years.
Il viaggio in Italia ha migliorato il tuo italiano.
The trip to Italy has improved your Italian.
Il tuo italiano è migliorato grazie al viaggio in Italia.
Your Italian has improved thanks to your trip to Italy.

affogare	to drown
affondare	to sink
annegare	to drown
appoggiare	to lean
ALSO reflexive, esp for persons;	
arrostire	to roast
assordare	to deafen/go deaf
atterrare	to land
aumentare	to increase
avanzare	to advance; have/be in excess
bruciare	to burn
calare	to drop

cambiare	to change
colare a picco (see also section 22.4)	to sink (of a ship)
crescere	to grow
derivare	to derive
dimagrire	to make thin/become thin (lose weight)
diminuire	to diminish
esplodere	to explode
filtrare	to filter
girare (*)	to turn
guarire	to cure/get better
imbiancare	to whiten
imbianchire	to whiten
ingrandire	to make large/become large
ingrassare	to fatten/become fat
ingrossare	to make large/become large
insospettire	to make suspicious/become suspicious
intimidire	to make timid/become timid
invecchiare	to age
lievitare (*)	to leaven/rise
maturare	to mature
migliorare (see also section 22.4)	to improve
mutare (R2–3)	to change
passare (see also section 22.4)	to pass (of time)
peggiorare (see also section 22.4)	to worsen
pesare (*)	to weigh
precipitare (R2–3)	to precipitate
raddoppiare	to double
retrocedere (R2–3)	to push back/move back
ribassare	to lower
NOTE **abbassare** is only transitive	
rincarare	to increase, heighten
ringiovanire	to make/get young (again)
risuscitare	to revive
rotolare	to roll
salpare	to weigh (anchor)
sbarcare	to disembark
sbiadire	to fade
sbiancare	to make white/turn white
schizzare	to spray
scorrere	to read quickly/flow
scurire	to make dark/grow dark

ALSO reflexive	
sfogare	to give vent to/pour forth
ALSO reflexive, esp for persons	
sfumare	to tone down/disappear
soffriggere	to fry lightly
sporgere	to protrude
sprizzare	to spray
sprofondare	to throw down/fall
stillare (R2–3)	to ooze, exude
trascorrere	to pass (of time)
variare (see also section 22.4)	to vary

There are many verbs that used to have this transitive/intransitive usage but nowadays tend to be used in the reflexive to express the intransitive meaning (cf. section 24.5). The past participle with **essere** is usually felt more as an adjective, e.g.:

Abbiamo cotto la pasta.
We *cooked* the pasta.
La pasta si è cotta per otto minuti precisi.
The pasta *cooked* for eight minutes exactly.
La pasta è cotta: tutti a tavola!
The pasta *is cooked*: everyone to the table!

This trend seems to be spreading. For the following verbs it is well established:

accorciare	to shorten
accrescere	to increase
aggravare	to make/become more serious
ammalare	to make/fall ill
arricchire	to make/become rich
arrugginire	to rust
asciugare	to dry
calare	to drop
chiarire	to clarify
cuocere	to cook
fondere	to melt, to fuse
gelare	to freeze (as a weather verb, see section 22.2)
gonfiare	to enlarge
imbrunire	to make/become dark
impaurire	to frighten
inasprire	to make/become harsh
indebolire	to weaken
ingelosire	to make/become jealous
muovere	to move
prosciugare	to dry up

rinfrescare	to refresh
rinforzare	to reinforce
ringiovanire	to rejuvenate
riscaldare	to warm
sbigottire	to dismay
schiarire	to clear up
scottare	to burn
sgelare	to thaw (as a weather verb, see section 22.2)
sgonfiare	to deflate
soffocare	to suffocate
spianare	to level
stupire	to amaze
susseguire (R3)	to follow on

One verb with three distinct usages is **sfollare**. As a transitive verb, it means *to clear (a place of people)*; as intransitive with **essere**, it means *to disperse*; as a reflexive, it means *to (become) empty*.

La polizia ha sfollato il teatro.
The police cleared the theatre.
La gente è sfollata senza panico.
The people dispersed without panic.
Il teatro si è sfollato rapidamente.
The theater emptied quickly.

22.4 Verbs that take either according to meaning

These verbs are intransitive, except in certain special uses. They take **avere** or **essere** in accordance with changes of meaning.

(i) *Certain verbs of movement*

correre, **emigrare**, **saltare**, **volare**: **avere** when manner of motion verbs (cf. chapter 21); **essere** when change of location verbs; **essere** in figurative usage, e.g.:

Il maratoneta ha corso a Roma / È corso a Roma.
The marathon runner ran (a race) in Rome / He ran to Rome.
Ha emigrato negli anni 50 / È emigrata in Australia.
She emigrated in the 1950s / She emigrated to Australia.
Ha saltato per la gioia / È saltata dalla finestra.
She jumped for joy / She jumped out the window.
Non ho mai volato con l'Alitalia / Sono volato in banca prima che chiudesse.
I've never flown Alitalia / I rushed to the bank before it closed.
Sono corso/volato a prendere il treno.
(implies I caught the train by running).
Ho corso/volato per prendere il treno.

(implies I ran, in order to catch the train, but the outcome is ambiguous; cf. section 27.5.1).

NOTE: **correre** and **saltare** take **avere** when transitive, e.g.:

Abbiamo corso molti rischi nel venire qua.
We have run many risks in coming here.

Ho saltato il pranzo perché avevo da fare.
I skipped lunch because I was busy.

NOTE: *verbs derived from* ***correre***:

accorrere, decorrere, incorrere, intercorrere, occorrere, ricorrere always take **essere;**

concorrere, discorrere are intransitive and always take **avere**;

percorrere, precorrere, rincorrere, **ripercorrere, soccorrere** are transitive;

scorrere and **trascorrere** (cf. section 22.3) take both, e.g.:

Ho scorso rapidamente il giornale.
I skimmed the newspaper.

Il traffico è scorso bene per l'intero periodo festivo.
Traffic flowed well for the entire holiday period.

(ii) *Human vs non-human subject*

Some verbs tend to take **avere** when the subject is a human person (or sometimes an animal), and **essere** when the subject is an inanimate object, e.g.:

Il paziente ha (OR **è**) **peggiorato da ieri sera**.
The patient has worsened since last night.

La situazione economica è peggiorata.
The economic situation has worsened.

abortire	to abort/have a miscarriage
appartenere	to belong
fallire	to fail/go bankrupt
migliorare (see also section 22.3)	to improve
peggiorare (see also section 22.3)	to worsen
procedere (see also below)	to proceed
progredire	to progress
proseguire (see also section 22.3)	to continue
variare (see also section 22.3)	to vary

(iii) *Verbs of emission of liquid or smell*:

A number of verbs may take **avere** when the subject is the container or source of the emission, and **essere** when the subject is the thing being emitted, e.g.:

Il lago ha evaporato quest'estate.
The lake evaporated this summer.

L'alcol è evaporato durante la cottura.
The alcohol evaporated during the cooking.

colare	to drip, ooze
NOTE for **colare a picco**, see section 22.3.	
emanare	to emanate
evaporare	to evaporate
gocciolare	to drip
profumare	to perfume
scolare	to drain
sgocciolare	to drain, drip
traboccare	to overflow
tracimare	to overflow

NOTE **spiovere** takes only **essere** when meaning *to pour down* (cf. section 22.2).

A similar verb is **abbondare**, which often takes **avere** when the subject is the person or thing which has something in abundance, **essere** when the subject is the thing in abundance, e.g.:

Abbiamo abbondato (**la dispensa ha abbondato) di provviste**.
We had (the pantry had) plenty of provisions.
I viveri sono abbondati durante il viaggio.
The food was plentiful during the trip.

(iv) *Various other verbs*

convenire: **avere** meaning *agree*; **essere** meaning *to behove/suit*, or *to congregate* (R3), e.g.:

Abbiamo convenuto sul prezzo.
We agreed on the price.
Il prezzo mi è convenuto.
The price suited me.

durare: **avere** for durability of an object; **essere** of an event, e.g.:

Queste scarpe hanno durato molto a lungo.
These shoes have lasted a long time.
Il film è durato due ore.
The film lasted two hours.
ALSO **Ho durato fatica a risolvere il problema** (R3).
I labored hard to solve the problem.

evadere, **fuggire**, **sfuggire**: **avere** meaning *to avoid or evade*; **essere** meaning *to escape*, e.g.:

È diventato un orso: ha (**s**)**fuggito anche gli amici più cari**.
He has become unsociable (lit. "a bear"): he has avoided even his dearest friends.
Secondo i giornali, avrebbe evaso le tasse per anni.
According to the papers, he is alleged to have evaded his tax for years.
L'abbiamo visto in piazza, ma è (**s**)**fuggito senza salutarci**.
We saw him in the piazza, but he fled without saying hello.

incrudelire (R3): **avere** meaning *to act cruelly*, **essere** meaning *to become cruel*, e.g.:

Il tiranno ha incrudelito contro la popolazione intera.
the tyrant was cruel to the whole population.

Il tiranno è incrudelito in seguito alla rivolta popolare.
The tyrant grew cruel following the popular uprising.

interessare: **avere** meaning *to concern, affect*; **essere** meaning *to be of interest*, e.g.:

Il problema ha interessato tutta una generazione di giovani.
The issue affected a whole generation of young people.

Gli sono interessate tutte le questioni ambientali.
All the environmental issues interested them.

mancare: **avere** meaning *to miss*, or *to fail in an obligation* (cf. section 27.7); **essere** meaning *to be missing*, *to lack*, e.g.:

Ho mancato la porta di poco.
I just missed the goal.

Mi sei mancata.
I missed you.

Lei è mancata a scuola per tre giorni.
She was not at school for three days.

passare: **avere/essere** for meanings to do with time (see section 22.3); **essere** meaning *to go past*, e.g.:

Sono passato davanti a casa tua.
I passed in front of your house.

ALSO **ripassare**: **avere** meaning *to review*; **essere** meaning *to pass by again*

procedere: **avere** meaning *to progress*; **essere** meaning *to behave*, e.g.:

Ha proceduto da persona onesta.
He behaved like an honest person.

È proceduto notevolmente.
He has progressed considerably.

scampare: **avere** meaning *to avoid* or *to save*; **essere** meaning *to survive*, e.g.:

Ha scampato il pericolo per fortuna.
She avoided the danger through good luck.

È scampata al massacro in cui è perita tutta la sua famiglia.
She survived the massacre in which her whole family perished.

scattare: **avere** meaning *to take (a photograph)*; **essere** meaning *to jump or leap into action*, e.g.:

Abbiamo scattato tante foto del Foro.
We took lots of photos of the Forum.

Siamo scattati in piedi quando è entrato il Presidente.
We jumped to our feet when the President came in.

schiantare: **avere** meaning *to break*; **essere** meaning *to die* (R1–2), e.g.:

Il vento ha schiantato le cime degli alberi.
The wind snapped off the tops of the trees.

Siamo schiantati dalle risate.
We died laughing.

scivolare: **avere** or **essere** when referring to physical movement; **essere** with the figurative meaning of *slipping away/through one's fingers etc.*, e.g.:

Ho scivolato sul ghiaccio.
I slipped on the ice.
Sei scivolato via e non si è accorto nessuno.
You slipped away and no one noticed.
Il bicchiere mi è scivolato tra le mani.
The glass slipped through my hands.

servire: **avere** meaning *to provide service*; **essere** meaning *to be useful*, e.g.:

Ha servito a tavola in casa di nobili.
He served at table in a noble house.
Il suo consiglio non è servito proprio a niente.
His advice was no use at all.

sfilare: **avere** meaning *to take by stealth*; **essere** meaning *to file past*, e.g.:

Ti hanno sfilato il portafoglio dalla tasca.
They sneaked your wallet from your pocket.
Sono sfilati in corteo.
They filed past in a procession.

suonare: **avere** when subject is person or thing making sound, or resounding (also **essere**, R3); **essere** when subject is a fact announced by a sound, e.g.:

Ha suonato il telefono.
The phone rang.
Le sue parole hanno suonato (ALSO **sono suonate**) **nell'aula vuota**.
His words resounded in the empty hall.
È appena suonato mezzogiorno.
Midday has just rung.
avere when transitive, meaning *to play an instrument etc.*, e.g.:
Io ho suonato il violino quando ero a scuola.
I played the violin when I was at school.

22.5 Modal verbs

The modal verbs **dovere**, **potere**, **volere** take **avere** if the following infinitive is a verb that takes **avere**. If the verb that follows takes **essere**, the modals may take **essere** (R2–3) or **avere** (R1–2). This may also occur with **sapere** but only in higher registers, e.g.:

Abbiamo dovuto/potuto/voluto dormire all'aperto.
We had to/could/wanted to sleep in the open.
Siamo dovuti/potuti/voluti partire presto (R2–3).
Abbiamo dovuto/potuto/voluto partire presto (R1–2).
We had to/could/wanted to leave early.

If the infinitive is **essere** or in the passive, the auxiliary is **avere**, e.g.:

Avrebbe dovuto essere qui a quest'ora.
She should have been here by now.

If the modal verb is emphasized or used without a following infinitive, **avere** is used, e.g.:

Nonostante tutto, ha dovuto partire.
Despite everything, she *had to* (was obliged to) leave.
Non voleva partire, ma ha dovuto.
She didn't want to leave, but she had to.

22.6 Pronouns and auxiliaries

With modal verbs the position of a pronoun determines choice of auxiliary in two ways:

(i) **ci**, **ne** (cf. section 16.4)

Non ci sono potuto andare (NOT **Non ci ho potuto andare**)
Non ho potuto andarci (ALSO **Non sono potuto andarci**)
I wasn't able to go there

Non ne sono potuto uscire (NOT **Non ne ho potuto uscire**)
Non ho potuto uscirne (ALSO **Non sono potuto uscirne**)
I wasn't able to get out of there

(ii) With reflexives

Mi sono dovuto svegliare (NOT **Mi ho dovuto svegliare**)
Ho dovuto svegliarmi (NOT **Sono dovuto svegliarmi**)
I had to wake up

NOTE: this is similar to the way that pronoun position affects normal auxiliary choice with reflexive verbs (see section 24.1):

Ho vestito me stesso (**e poi i bambini**) *vs* **Mi sono vestito**
I dressed myself (and then the children) *vs* I got dressed

NOTE: **cominciare** can act in the same way as modal verbs with reflexives:

Si è cominciato a spostare OR **Ha cominciato a spostarsi**
It started to move.

23 The passive

The Italian passive, like the English passive, is a construction which focusses attention on the object of an action (for the passive with **si**, see section 24.6). The direct object of a transitive verb becomes the subject of the passive. The passive with **essere** may be used in all tenses and moods, and with modals:

Le innovazioni caravaggesche furono adottate da artisti di molti paesi.
Caravaggio's innovations were adopted by artists in many countries.

Credo che le prenotazioni siano già state chiuse.
I think bookings have already been closed.

Questa proposta potrebbe essere riformulata per la prossima riunione.
This proposal could be reworked for the next meeting.

23.1 Passive with venire

The passive may be formed with **venire** instead of **essere** to express an action rather than a state. This often avoids the ambiguity of **essere** + past participle, which may express a passive event, or may describe a state with the participle acting as adjective. **Venire** may be used as auxiliary only in the simple tenses, indicative and subjunctive, i.e. present, imperfect, *passato remoto*, future, and conditional, and is most often used with the third person. It is characteristic of R2–3, e.g.:

La mostra viene aperta alle 4.
The exhibition is being/gets opened at 4 o'clock.

R1* vulgar or indecent
R1 informal, colloquial
R2 neutral, unmarked
R3 formal, written
Italian words and expressions are R2 unless otherwise indicated. See also p. 5.

La mostra è aperta alle 4.
The exhibition is open (OR is being opened) at 4 o'clock.

23.2 Passive with andare

The passive formed with **andare** expresses obligation or opportuneness. This only occurs with the simple tenses, i.e. present, imperfect, future, and conditional, but not *passato remoto*. It is only found in the third person, in all registers:

Il modulo va riempito in ogni sua parte.
The form must be completed in all sections.
La pasta andava tolta prima.
The pasta should have been taken off (the heat) sooner.

The agent is not usually expressed with the **andare** passive. If an agent is to be expressed with a passive involving obligation, **dovere** is used, e.g.:

Il modulo deve essere riempito dal genitore o chi ne fa le veci.
The form must be completed by the parent or guardian.

Andare is also used as an alternative to **essere**, and without any notion of obligation, with a few verbs expressing a negative result such as loss or damage, e.g. **perdere**, **disperdere**, **smarrire**, **distruggere**, **dimenticare**, **deludere**, **bruciare**, **spendere**, etc. This occurs in all tenses, e.g.:

Il manoscritto andò perduto nel Cinquecento.
The manuscript was lost in the sixteenth century.
Molti quadri sono andati distrutti durante la guerra.
Many paintings were destroyed during the war.

23.3 Passive with rimanere and restare

The passive may be formed with **rimanere** or **restare** with a small number of verbs expressing surprise, e.g.:

Nel sentire la notizia, siamo rimasti sorpresi/delusi/interdetti.
On hearing the news, we were surprised/disappointed/dumbfounded.

23.4 Expression of the agent

The agent is preceded by **da** (although in the majority of passive sentences, no agent is indicated). If the passive action is expressed by a noun or adjective, the agent is preceded by **da parte di**, e.g.:

La prospettiva fu usata da Brunelleschi.
Perspective was used by Brunelleschi.
L'uso della prospettiva da parte di Brunelleschi fu l'inizio dell'arte rinascimentale.
The use of perspective by Brunelleschi was the beginning of Renaissance art.

Queste condizioni non sono accettabili da parte dei (OR **dai**) **sindacati**.
These conditions are not acceptable by/to the unions.

23.5 Indirect objects

Unlike in English, an indirect object in Italian cannot become the subject of a passive verb, but must remain indirect, e.g.:

A Giuseppe sono stati mandati i risultati sbagliati.
Giuseppe was sent the wrong results.

Le è stato chiesto di parlare delle sue esperienze in Italia.
She has been asked to speak about her experiences in Italy.

23.6 Other ways of expressing the passive

The passive is found more often in higher registers. In informal speech, other ways of placing the emphasis on the object are preferred. These include using a "marked" word order, such as moving the object to the left, i.e. to the normal position of the subject, or using a cleft sentence (see section 18.2). Compare:

Gli spaghetti sono stati fatti da mia zia.
Gli spaghetti li ha fatti mia zia.
E' mia zia che ha fatto gli spaghetti.

An impersonal subject may be used (see section 24.9). Compare:

A Giuseppe sono stati mandati i risultati sbagliati.
A Giuseppe hanno mandato i risultati sbagliati.

24 Reflexives and impersonals

The Italian reflexive has many different functions, some of which are not paralleled in English. Reflexive verbs always take the auxiliary **essere**, except in the case mentioned in section 24.1. The reflexive pronoun is omitted when the reflexive verb is an infinitive depending on **fare** or **lasciare**, e.g.:

Lo hanno fatto pentire (not **pentirsi) delle sue parole**.
They made him regret his words.

24.1 Direct reflexives

Most transitive verbs can be used reflexively when subject and object coincide. Direct reflexives are usually defined as taking unstressed reflexive pronouns (before the verb) and **essere** in compound tenses. However, they may also take stressed pronouns (cf. chapter 16): these follow the verb, and **avere** is used (cf. section 22.6), e.g.:

Mi sono vestito / Ho vestito i bambini (e poi me stesso).
I (got) dressed / I dressed the children (and then myself).

24.2 Indirect reflexives

The reflexive pronoun is an indirect object and expresses greater involvement in the action by the subject. This is increasingly common in R1–2. In compound tenses, the past participle agrees with the subject (or with the object, R3):

R1* vulgar or indecent
R1 informal, colloquial
R2 neutral, unmarked
R3 formal, written
Italian words and expressions are R2 unless otherwise indicated. See also p. 5.

Chiara si è mangiata (or **mangiato,** R3) **un bel piatto di spaghetti**.
Chiara had (herself) a lovely plate of spaghetti.

The participle agrees with a direct object if it is a preceding pronoun, e.g.:

I biscotti, se li è mangiati Emilia.
The biscuits, it was Emilia who ate them up.

An indirect reflexive is the usual way of expressing possession of parts of body or items of clothing, e.g.:

Elena si è rotta un braccio/si è messa il cappotto.
Elena broke her arm/put on her coat.

Some verbs have an indirect reflexive form which carries a subtle but perceptible change of meaning, in terms of greater involvement by the subject. This usage seems to be increasing in R1–2.

approfittare (**di**)	to take advantage (of)	**approfittarsi** (**di**)	to take advantage (of), esp in negative sense
incontrare	to meet	**incontrarsi** (**con**)	to have a meeting with
sbagliare	to make a mistake	**sbagliarsi**	to err, be in the wrong
sedere	to be seated	**sedersi**	to sit down

Several verbs of motion and state can be similarly "intensified" through the addition of **se** + **ne**; cf. section 4.5.2.

24.3 Reciprocal reflexives

In the plural, the reflexive can express reciprocal actions. Ambiguity between direct and reciprocal reflexives can be removed through expressions such as **reciprocamente**, **a vicenda**, **scambievolmente**, **l'un l'altro**, **gli uni con gli altri**, etc.:

I prigionieri si accusavano del delitto.
This could mean "The prisoners accused each other of the crime" OR "The prisoners accused themselves of the crime."
I prigionieri si accusavano a vicenda del delitto.
The prisoners accused each other of the crime.

24.4 Inherent reflexives

A number of verbs exist only in the reflexive form and in most cases there is nothing particularly reflexive about their meaning. They are all intransitive, e.g.:

accorgersi (di)	to notice
arrendersi	to surrender, give oneself up
avvalersi (di) (R2–3)	to make use (of)
congratularsi (con qu)	to congratulate (sb)
imbattersi (in)	to come across, run into

impadronirsi (di)	to take possession of, master (sth)
lagnarsi (di)	to complain (of/about)
pentirsi (di)	to repent, regret
ribellarsi (a)	to rebel (against)
suicidarsi	to take one's own life
vergognarsi (di)	to be ashamed (at/of)

24.5 The reflexive as marker of the intransitive

The reflexive form is used simply as the intransitive counterpart of many transitives. This usage appears to be growing (cf. section 22.3), e.g.:

abbattere	to knock down	**abbattersi**	to lose heart
accostare	to put near	**accostarsi**	to approach
addormentare	to put to sleep	**addormentarsi**	to fall asleep
allontanare	to push away	**allontanarsi**	to move away
alzare	to raise	**alzarsi**	to get up
annoiare	to bore	**annoiarsi**	to get bored
arrabbiare	to enrage	**arrabbiarsi**	to get angry
avviare	to set in motion	**avviarsi**	to set out
avvicinare	to move near (tr)	**avvicinarsi (a)**	to approach
deprimere	to depress	**deprimersi**	to get depressed
destare (R2–3)	to waken	**destarsi** (R2–3)	to wake up
fermare	to stop (tr)	**fermarsi**	to stop (intr)
gonfiare	to inflate	**gonfiarsi**	to swell up
guastare	to damage	**guastarsi**	to break down
imbarcare	to take on board	**imbarcarsi**	to go on board
infiammare	to inflame	**infiammarsi**	to catch fire (fig)
invogliare	to attract	**invogliarsi (di)** (R3)	to take a fancy (to)
irritare	to irritate	**irritarsi**	to become irritated
meravigliare	to surprise	**meravigliarsi**	to wonder
muovere	to move (tr)	**muoversi**	to move (intr)
offendere	to offend	**offendersi**	to get offended
rasserenare	to calm (tr)	**rasserenarsi**	to become calm (again)
rattristare	to sadden	**rattristarsi**	to become sad
rendere conto (di)	to give an account of	**rendersi conto (di)**	to realize
ritirare	to withdraw (tr)	**ritirarsi**	to withdraw (intr)
rivolgere	to turn (tr)	**rivolgersi**	to turn to (intr)
scoraggiare	to discourage	**scoraggiarsi**	to become discouraged
spaventare	to frighten	**spaventarsi**	to become frightened
stancare	to tire (tr)	**stancarsi**	to get tired
stupire	to amaze	**stupirsi**	to be amazed
svegliare	to waken	**svegliarsi**	to wake up
trattenere	to hold back	**trattenersi**	to hold oneself back
voltare	to turn (tr)	**voltarsi**	to turn (intr)

Some verbs have three possible constructions, e.g. **dimenticare**, **ricordare**, **scordare**, **sposare**. The reflexive as intransitive requires a preposition. The meaning of these groups of sentences is essentially the same, e.g.:

Ha sposato un'italiana (transitive).
Si è sposato un'italiana (R1–2) (indirect reflexive).
Si è sposato con un'italiana (reflexive as intransitive).

24.6 The passive reflexive

In the third person, the reflexive may be used to express the passive. With the **si** passive, the agent is not usually expressed: the **essere** passive is used for that, cf. chapter 23. The verb agrees with the grammatical subject and the auxiliary in compound tenses is always **essere**, e.g.:

Qui si parla italiano.
Italian (is) spoken here.
In Italia si parlano molti dialetti.
Many dialects are spoken in Italy.
Si sono vendute mille copie del suo primo cd.
1000 copies of her first CD were sold.

The rules for verb agreement and auxiliary choice also apply with modal verbs, e.g.:

Si sono dovuti ristampare tutti i biglietti.
All the tickets had to be reprinted.

24.7 The impersonal reflexive with transitive verbs

The passive use of the reflexive often merges with an impersonal meaning. As before, verb agreement is compulsory and the auxiliary is **essere**, e.g.:

Non si possono accettare lettere anonime.
One cannot accept anonymous letters
(OR Anonymous letters cannot be accepted).
Non si è mai vista una cosa simile.
One has never seen anything like this
(OR Nothing like this has ever been seen).
I risultati si sono visti subito.
One saw the results immediately.

The position of **si** may suggest either a passive or an impersonal meaning, e.g.:

Questo si può capire facilmente.
One can understand this easily.
Questo può capirsi facilmente.
This can be understood easily.

The fact that the impersonal **si** looks like the subject of the verb means that the verb could agree with **si** in older Italian, but today only in R1, e.g.:

Si vede tante cose strane in questi giorni.
You see many strange things these days.

When the subject of an impersonal reflexive is a pronoun, it takes the form of an *object* pronoun and precedes the **si**. The verb is always in the singular, but a past participle agrees with the object pronoun, e.g.:

Non ti si vede in giro in questi giorni.
One doesn't see you around these days.

Le albicocche? Le si compra in primavera.
Apricots? One buys them in spring.

Le albicocche? L'anno scorso le si è comprate tutta la primavera.
Apricots? Last year one bought them all spring.

An impersonal reflexive may combine with any other reflexive (direct, indirect, reciprocal or inherent). To avoid **si si**, the first **si** becomes **ci**, e.g.:

ci si alza; **ci si fa un bel caffè**; **ci si saluta**; **non ci si accorge di niente**
one gets up; one makes oneself a nice coffee; everyone greets each other; one notices nothing.

24.8 The impersonal reflexive with intransitive verbs

The use of **si** with intransitive verbs can only be interpreted as impersonal, since there can be no passive meaning. The verb is always singular, e.g.:

Si viaggia bene in prima classe.
One travels well in first class.

Any adjective or noun referring to the **si** is in the masculine plural (or feminine plural if reference is exclusively to females). This is most common with **essere**, **stare**, **diventare**, but it applies with any intransitive verb, e.g.:

si è giovani; si dorme tranquilli; **si vive contenti**
one is young; one sleeps peacefully; one lives happy (OR happily)

si è donne; si è vedove; si è incinte
one is (a) woman; one is a widow; one is pregnant

In fact, adjectives and nouns referring to any impersonal expression are in the masculine plural, e.g.:

La città è bella d'agosto: basta non essere soli.
The city is beautiful in August: just make sure you're not alone.

Bisognerebbe essere sognatori più spesso.
One should be a dreamer more often.

E' impossibile non essere attratti dalla sua forte personalità.
It is impossible not to be attracted by his strong personality.

In compound tenses, the ending of the participle depends on the type of verb:

(i) The participle ends in **-o** if the verb normally takes **avere**, e.g.:
Si è lavorato per tre giorni su questo problema.
One worked on this problem for three days.

The participle ends in **-i**, or **-e**, as with adjectives and nouns above, if the verb normally takes **essere**. This includes:

(ii) intransitive verbs which take **essere** (cf. section 22.2)
si è usciti presto; **si è stati in casa**
one got out early; one remained in the house

(iii) passive of transitive verbs
si è ammirati; **si è ammirate**
one is admired; a woman is admired

(iv) reflexives
ci si è vergognati; **ci si sente stanchi**
one felt ashamed; one feels tired

The impersonal reflexive is used in place of the first person plural in Central Italy, especially Tuscany, and occasionally elsewhere (R1–2):
Si va? Ci si vede domani!
Andiamo? Ci vediamo domani!

24.9 Other impersonal subjects

Other ways of expressing a general, impersonal subject are: **uno**, **tu** (which may even be used – with care – when using the **Lei** form of address), or use of the third person plural, e.g.:
Quando uno è fatto così, non c'è niente da fare.
When someone is like that, there is nothing to be done.
Quando ti trovi in quella situazione lì, non capisci niente.
When you find yourself in that situation, you don't understand a thing.
Hanno licenziato il Presidente.
They have sacked the President OR The President has been sacked.

24.10 Impersonal objects

Impersonal **si** can never be used as an object. It may be replaced by **ci** (R2–3) or **ti** (R1–2), e.g.:
Si è felici se ci scrivono (R3).
One is happy if they write to one.
Se ti beccano senza documento, sei fregato (R1).
If they catch you without ID, you're in trouble.

In more elevated styles, an impersonal object may be omitted altogether. Usually an English translation must include an object, e.g.:

Questo esperimento permette di verificare le ultime ipotesi.
This experiment allows one/us to test the latest hypotheses
OR This experiment allows the latest hypotheses to be tested.

With "impersonal verbs," which usually use an indirect object pronoun to indicate the logical subject (cf. section 27.2.1), impersonal reference is achieved by omitting a pronoun altogether, e.g.:

Sembra di mangiare cartone.
It's like eating cardboard (lit It seems [to one] to eat cardboard).

THE SENTENCE – combining clauses

25 Italian prepositions

Italian grammars traditionally divide prepositions into two groups. The "preposizioni proprie" are, in order of frequency of use, **di**, **a**, **da**, **in**, **con**, **su**, **per**, **tra/fra**. Of these, **a, da, di, in, su** are always articulated when used with the definite article (i.e. combine with it to produce *alla*, *della*, etc.). In modern Italian, **per** and **tra/fra** are no longer articulated. **Con** is only usually articulated in speech, and usually R1–2. The "preposizioni improprie" were originally adverbs and in modern Italian can be used as prepositions or adverbs: e.g. **contro**, **davanti**, **dietro**, **sotto**, **sopra**. They are never articulated.

25.1 a

In modern Italian **a** becomes **ad** usually only before another word beginning with a, but higher registers continue the tradition of using **ad** before words beginning with any vowel.

ad alta voce, ad (or **a) Ancona** (all registers)
ad Empoli, ad Imola, ad Otranto, ad Udine (R2–3)

25.1.1 Basic meanings

(a) *destination, direction; generally corresponds to English* to
vado al ristorante, vado a Roma
I'm going to the restaurant, I'm going to Rome

(b) *location; corresponds to English* at *or* in
sono a casa, abitano a Milano
They are at home, they live in Milan

(c) *point in time*
alle due; a mezzogiorno
at two o'clock; at midday

R1* vulgar or indecent
R1 informal, colloquial
R2 neutral, unmarked
R3 formal, written
Italian words and expressions are R2 unless otherwise indicated. See also p. 5.

25.1.2 Expressing time

alle due del mattino	at two in the morning
all'alba	at dawn
a mezzogiorno/mezzanotte	at midday/midnight
all'inizio del mese/dell'anno	at the beginning of the month/year
alla fine del mese/anno	at the end of the month/year
a vent'anni/all'età di vent'anni (R3)	at twenty years of age
allo/nello stesso tempo	at the same time
ai nostri tempi	nowadays
ai tempi dei comuni	in the time of the communes
a prima vista	at first sight
a domani/presto/dopo	see you tomorrow/soon/later
al cessare della musica	when the music ended

25.1.3 Expressing rate (= distribution, price, and measure)

a uno a uno	one by one
a decine/dozzine/centinaia	by the ten/dozen/hundred
uno alla volta	one at a time
due volte alla settimana (cf. **per**)	twice a week
a giorni alterni	on alternate days
lo vende a un euro all'etto	she sells it at one euro per 100 grams
lo vende a buon mercato	she sells it cheaply
vendere al dettaglio/all'ingrosso	to sell retail/wholesale
a (una velocità di) cento chilometri all'ora	at 100 km an hour (60 mph)
pagare a rate	to pay in instalments

25.1.4 Expressing manner

a bocca aperta	open-mouthed
alla bolognese/milanese/napoletana	in the style of Bologna/Milan/Naples
all'italiana	in the Italian style
fare alla romana	to go Dutch, pay one's own way
spaghetti al sugo/ragù	spaghetti with tomato sauce/ragout
gelato al cioccolato	chocolate ice-cream
gelato alla frutta	fruit ice-cream
cuocere a fuoco lento	to cook over a slow heat
a ogni costo/a tutti i costi	at any cost
giocare a carte	to play cards
prendere qc alla leggera	to take sth lightly
a lungo	for a long time

a modo mio	in my own way
alla maniera di Caravaggio	in Caravaggio's style
BUT: **in modo/maniera elegante**	in an elegant manner
alla moda	in fashion
è alla moda	it/he/she conforms to current fashion
BUT: **è di moda**	it is in fashion/in vogue
a memoria	by heart
a passo d'uomo	at a walking pace
a mio parere/avviso	in my opinion
a mio modo di vedere	the way I see things . . .
al contrario/all'inverso	on the contrary, the opposite way, vice versa
alla rovescia/al rovescio/ a rovescio	upside-down, back to front, inside out, the wrong way
conto alla rovescia	count-down
a ritroso/all'indietro	backwards
a spese mie	at my expense
a bassa voce/ad alta voce	in a low/loud voice
a quattro zampe	on all fours
a tutta velocità	at full speed
a tutto gas, a tutta birra (R1)	flat out, at full speed
a tu per tu/a quattr'occhi	face to face

25.1.5 Expressing place

all'equatore	at/on the equator
ai Tropici	in/to the Tropics
al polo nord	at/to the north pole
all'orizzonte	on/to the horizon
a casa/a casa di Maria	(at) home/at /to Maria's place
al telefono	on the telephone
al sole	in the sun
all'aperto	in the open air
al fresco	open-air (R1 = in jail)
al fresco della sera	in the cool evening air
all'ombra	in the shade
alla radio/televisione	on the radio/TV
a bordo di	on board
a metà strada	half-way there
a/in contatto con	in contact with
al collo	around one's neck
a destra/sinistra	on/to the right/left
alle spalle (di qu)	behind sb's back
ferito a una mano/gamba	wounded in one hand/leg
si guardò allo specchio	he looked at himself in the mirror

alla luce di	in the light of (lit and fig)
a tavola	at the table
a livello letterario	on the literary level
alla/sulla riva del mare	at the seashore
suonare una canzone al pianoforte	play a song on the piano
a letto	in bed
a teatro/scuola	at/to the theater/school

NOTE ALSO the general expression of distance from something:

essere a (due chilometri) da (casa mia)
to be (two kilometres) from (my place)

25.1.6 Expressing kind

un sacco a pelo	a sleeping-bag
una bomba a mano	a hand grenade
un dipinto a mano	a hand-drawn design
una villa a due piani	a two-storey villa
una barca a remi/vela	a row/sail boat
pantaloni a zampa d'elefante	flared trousers
una nave a vapore	a steamship
rapina a mano armata	armed hold-up

25.1.7 Expressing instrument

andare a piedi	to go on foot, to walk
chiudere a chiave	to lock
fatto a mano/macchina	made by hand/machine
scrivere a macchina	to type
a cavallo/cavalluccio	on horseback/piggy-back

25.1.8 Adverbial idioms with **a**

stare a proprio agio	to be at one's ease
a bruciapelo	point-blank
alla cheticella	stealthily
alla cieca	blindly
piove a dirotto/a catinelle	it's raining cats and dogs
alla grande (R1)	big-time
vivere alla grande	to live like a king
alla mano	easy-going
alla meglio/alla bell'e meglio	one way or another
agli occhi di qu	in sb's eyes
al potere	in power
a rigore	strictly speaking
a vista d'occhio	in the blink of an eye
a volo d'uccello	with a bird's-eye view, as the crow flies

e' stato il primo/ etc./**ultimo a farlo**	he was the first/ etc./last to do it
al verde	in the red, broke
a casaccio	random
a che serve?	what is it for?
agli arresti domiciliari	under house arrest

25.1.9 "Personal" **a** (**a** with direct object)

In R1–2 speech, **a** is often used before a pronoun direct object which is moved to the beginning of a sentence for emphasis, e.g.:

A noi chi ci paga? (= **Chi paga noi**?)
Who will pay *us*?

A is also used before a direct object which is an animate being, especially human. This usage is confined to the South and is R1, e.g.:

Tommaso chiama a Chiara (= **Tommaso chiama Chiara**)

25.1.10 Complex prepositional expressions with **a**

all'altezza di	on a level with, abreast of (fig)
essere all'altezza del compito (fig)	to be equal to the task
a causa di	because of
a cura di	prepared by, (of books) edited by
a differenza di	unlike
a/in favore di	in favor of
a fianco di	alongside
a furia di	by dint of
a guisa di	by way of
a lato di	by the side of
a livello di	at the level of
a nome di	on behalf of
a partire da	starting from (a point in time)
a proposito di	à propos of, regarding
a scapito di	at the expense of
a titolo di	by way of (e.g. excuse)
al di sopra di	over, above
al di sotto di	beneath
al di là di	on the other side of, beyond
al di là del bene e del male	beyond good and evil
al di qua di	on this side of
al di fuori di	outside, apart from (not usu physical)
un cittadino al di sopra di ogni sospetto	a citizen above all suspicion
al di fuori di questi indizi, non c'era altro	apart from these clues there was nothing

Many prepositions expressing movement or position use **a**, e.g. **accanto a**, **davanti a, dietro a, sopra a**, **sotto a**, **vicino a**.

25.2 attraverso

25.2.1 Movement

Expresses movement through or across space or time, or by means of.

attraverso la strada	across the street
guardare attraverso un buco	to look through a hole
attraverso i secoli	through the centuries
attraverso lunghe indagini	through long inquiries

25.2.2 Used as adverb

un albero si era messo attraverso la strada	a tree was blocking the road
una nocciolina mi è andata attraverso/per traverso	a peanut has got stuck in my throat/went down sideways

25.3 con

25.3.1 Basic meanings

(a) *association; corresponds to English* with

caffé col latte
coffee with milk
un panino con il salame
a salame roll
viaggio insieme con altri
I'll travel together with others

(b) *instrument, or means of transport; corresponds to English* with *or* by

ho aperto la lattina con un cacciavite
I opened the can with a screwdriver
viaggiare con l'aereo/la macchina/il tram/l'autobus/i mezzi pubblici
to travel by plane/car/tram/bus/public transport (cf. section 25.11.2)
arriva con l'aereo delle tre
she's arriving on the 3 o'clock plane

(c) *description (alternates with* **da**)
una ragazza con i/dai (R2–3) **capelli biondi**
a girl with blonde hair
una camicia con le maniche corte
a short-sleeved shirt

(d) *with adjectives that describe behavior that affects another person*
gentile con/verso (R2–3) **tutti**
polite with everybody
sei troppo buono con tutti
you're too nice to everyone

25.3.2 In adverbial phrases

con mia grande sorpresa/gioia	to my great surprise/delight
con voce rauca/ferma	in a hoarse/firm voice
con questo caldo è difficile lavorare	it's hard to work with/in this heat
vuoi uscire con questa pioggia?	do you want to go out in this rain?

con combines with many abstract nouns to create adverbial expressions of manner, e.g.:

con chiarezza	clearly
con pazienza	patiently
con freddezza	coldly

25.3.3 Idiomatic expressions with **con**

con tutti i suoi difetti lo trovo simpatico	for/despite all his faults I like him
con tutto il rispetto	with all due respect
come va con il nuovo lavoro?	how's the new job going?
e con questo? (R1)	so what?
col cavolo (R1)**/col cazzo** (R1*)	like hell/no way!

25.4 contro

25.4.1 Before nouns and pronouns

Contro before nouns, **contro di** before personal pronouns

ha messo la sedia contro la parete	she put the chair against the wall
la lotta contro la mafia	the struggle against the mafia
uno contro tutti	one against all
ha puntato il fucile contro di loro	he aimed the rifle at them

25.4.2 Used as adverb

voterò contro	I'm voting against
sei pro o contro?	are you for it or against it?
ho tutti contro	I've got everyone against me

25.5 da

25.5.1 Basic meanings

(a) *origin*; *corresponds to English* from, out of
da Roma a Napoli
from Rome to Naples
dalle Alpi alle Piramidi
from the Alps to the Pyramids
dalle due alle tre
from 2 o'clock to 3 o'clock
l'espresso delle 14 e 30 proveniente da Venezia è in arrivo sul primo binario
the 2:30 express from Venice is arriving at platform one
togliere i vestiti dalla valigia
to take the clothes out of the suitcase

(b) *cause or agent in passive constructions (an extension of [a]); see also section 23.4*
la lettera è stata scritta dal suo amante
the letter was written by her lover
When the action is expressed by a noun rather than a verb, the agent is introduced by **da parte di**, e.g.
l'approvazione da parte del Parlamento di queste leggi è una soluzione disperata
the approval of these laws by the Parliament is a desperate solution
tremare dalla paura (cf. **tremare di paura**, section 25.7.1)
to tremble with fear
non ci vedo dalla fame (R1)
I am starving (lit can't see for hunger)

(c) *location, with the name of a person; corresponds to English* to, at
andiamo da Maria
let's go to Maria's
ti aspetto dall'avvocato
I'll wait for you at the lawyer's
facciamo la festa dai miei
we're having the party at my parents' place

(d) *purpose*
una tazza da té (cf **una tazza di té**, section 25.7.1)
a teacup

(e) *description*
la ragazzina dai capelli rossi
the little red-haired girl
si comporta sempre da gentiluomo
he always behaves like a gentleman

25.5.2 Expressing time

studio l'italiano da tre anni, dal 1999	I've been studying Italian for three years, since 1999
ALSO **e' da tre anni che studio l'italiano**	
cf. **sono tre anni che studio l'italiano**	
parlavamo da un'ora quando è arrivato il capo	we had been talking for an hour when the boss arrived
abitiamo in questa casa da quando ci siamo sposati	we've been living in this house since we married
e' così da sempre	it's always been like that
non la vedo da una vita	I haven't seen her for ages
ho finito di lavorare da più di un'ora	it's over an hour since I finished work
erano partiti da qualche giorno	it was some days since they had left
d'ora in poi	from now on
dall'oggi al domani	from one day to the next
da un momento all'altro	from one moment to the next

25.5.3 Expressing purpose

una macchina da scrivere	a typewriter
un costume da bagno	a swimming costume
gli occhiali da sole	sunglasses
le scarpe da tennis	tennis shoes

25.5.4 Expressing characteristics or description

lo trattano da imbecille	they treat him like an idiot
da giovane	as a youngster
da persona onesta, ha restituito i soldi	being an honest person, he handed the money back

un biglietto da 10 euro	a 10-euro note
un francobollo da 50 centesimi	a 50-cent stamp
abito da sera	evening gown
sordo dall'orecchio sinistro	deaf in his left ear
io gli ho fatto da padre	I acted as a father towards him
questa stanza serve da ufficio	this room serves as an office
ho una fame da lupo!	I'm starving!
non è da lui parlare così	it's not like him to speak like that

25.5.5 **da** used with **parte**

da una parte . . . dall'altra	on the one hand . . . on the other
dall'altra parte della strada/del mondo	on/to/from the other side of the street/world
da tutte le parti	everywhere
da nessuna parte	nowhere
d'altra parte, d'altro canto	on the other hand
da parte di	on behalf of
da parte mia e dei miei genitori	on behalf of my parents and myself
salutali da parte mia	say hello to them from me
mio nonno dalla parte di mia madre	my grandfather on my mother's side
abita dalle parti del Colosseo	she lives in the area around the Colosseum
dalle mie parti si mangiano i funghi crudi	where I am from we eat mushrooms raw
io sono dalla tua parte	I'm on your side

25.5.6 With a verb in the infinitive (cf. section 27.4)

qualcosa da mangiare/bere	sth to eat/drink
che cosa vuoi da bere?	what would you like to drink?
niente da dichiarare	nothing to declare
fa un caldo da morire	It's very hot
pazzo da legare	stark raving mad
noioso da morire	deadly boring
mi è piaciuto da morire	I liked it a lot
non è da credere	you can't really believe it
c'è da diventare matti	it's enough to drive you crazy
c'è poco da ridere	there's nothing to laugh about
è un'occasione da non perdere	it's an opportunity not be missed

25.5.7 Adverbial expressions with **da**

dal mio punto di vista	from my point of view
da cima a fondo	from top to bottom
da capo	from the beginning, from the top
da lontano/vicino	from a distance/close up
lo faccio da me	I'll do it myself
il faidaté	D.I.Y. (do it yourself)
da solo	alone
dappertutto	everywhere
riconoscere qu dalla voce	recognise sb by their voice
sono passato dalla/per la piazza	I passed by/through the piazza
trasmissione dal vivo (ALSO **in diretta)**	live broadcast

25.6 davanti a, prima di, avanti, di fronte a

25.6.1 Basic meanings

These prepositions all express *before* or *in front of*. **Prima di** refers to time, space, and objects in a series; **davanti a** and **di fronte a** refer principally to space but may also refer to time.

Innanzi, **dinanzi**, and **dinnanzi** cover most of the same uses as **prima** and **davanti** but are R2–3. They usually require **a**, except with certain expressions of time. **Avanti** is only used as an adverb in modern Italian (e.g. **andiamo avanti!**) except for certain set phrases.

prima delle quattro	before four o'clock
prima del tempo/innanzi tempo (R3)	prematurely
prima di partire	before leaving
l'ha fatto prima di me	he did it before me (= before I did)
l'ultima traversa prima del semaforo	the last side road before the traffic lights
Lei era prima di me nella fila	you were ahead of me in the queue
avanti Cristo = a.C.	before Christ = BC
prima di tutto/innanzi tutto	first of all
è comparso davanti al giudice (innanzi al giudice)	he appeared before the judge
mi stava davanti/ stava davanti a me	he was in front of me
mi stava davanti agli occhi	he was before my eyes
davanti alla casa/innanzi alla casa (R3)	in front of the house; opposite the house
di fronte alla casa/dirimpetto alla casa (R3)	opposite the house
di fronte a questa situazione	in the face of this situation

25.6.2 Used as adverbs

bisognava pensarci prima	we (you, one, etc.) should have thought of it sooner/earlier
prima o poi	sooner or later
le autorità erano sedute davanti	the authorities were sitting at the front
hai ancora molto tempo davanti (a te)	you still have lots of time ahead of you
abita qui di fronte	she lives opposite
avevo innanzi/dinanzi le prove che cercavo (R3)	I had the evidence I was looking for in front of me
tiriamo innanzi!	let's keep going!
avanti!	come in!

25.7 di

25.7.1 Basic meanings

(a) *possession, corresponds to English genitive* ('s, s') *or* of

questa macchina è di mia sorella
this car is my sister's
una strada di Napoli
a Naples street

(b) *origin (associated with [a]); corresponds to English* from

è di Bologna
she's from Bologna

NOTE **Viene da Bologna** may mean the same thing, or may imply that she is coming from Bologna now or that she has just arrived from there

(c) *material from which something is made (fig associated with* [b])

la statua di marmo
the marble statue
un sacchetto di plastica
a plastic bag

(d) *cause, when a physical or emotional condition*

morì di dolore	he died of grief
ha pianto di gioia	she wept for/with joy
tremare di paura	to tremble with fear
cf. **tremare dalla paura** (section 25.5.1)	
soffre di asma	he suffers from asthma

(e) *concern or subject matter*

questo libro tratta dell'industrializzazione del dopoguerra
this book deals with post-war industrialization
non so niente di questo
I know nothing about this
Dei delitti e delle pene (treatise by G. L. Beccaria)
On crime and punishment

(f) *introducing a descriptive or specifying phrase*

italiano di nascita	Italian by birth
parruchiere di professione	hairdresser by trade
una tazza di té	a cup of tea

(cf. **una tazza da té**, section 25.5.1)

(g) *linking nouns in apposition*

la città di Firenze	the city of Florence
quel matto di Giorgio	that madman Giorgio
il mese di maggio	the month of May

25.7.2 In expressions of description or origin

rosso di capelli	red-haired
sano di mente	of sound mind
una commedia di Goldoni	a play by Goldoni

di is used with adjectives when the following noun refers to a general substance (or color) rather than a single object, e.g.:

era coperto di polvere	it was covered in/with dust
BUT **coperto da una tela**	BUT covered by/with a cloth
macchiato di sangue	spattered in/with blood
la stanza era piena di fumo	the room was full of smoke
vestito di nero	dressed in black

25.7.3 Expressing time (see also **in**, section 25.11.1)

di giorno/notte	by day/night
di mattina/sera	in the morning/evening
di prima mattina	early in the morning
di buon mattino/di buon'ora	early (usu in the morning)
d'estate/inverno (less commonly **d'autunno/primavera**)	in summer/winter (in autumn/spring)
di questi tempi/giorni	these days
cento di questi giorni!	many happy returns!

25.7.4 In expressions of price and measurement

il prezzo della macchina è 5000 euro	the price of the car is 5000 euro
l'aumento è del dieci per cento	the increase is 10%

25.7.5 Idiomatic expressions

esco di casa/scuola presto	I leave the house/school early
vado via di qua	I'm going away from here
dare del cretino a qu	call sb a cretin
dare del tu/Lei/voi a qu	use the tu/Lei/voi form of address with sb, be on first/last name terms with sb
diamoci del tu!	let's use first names
dire di sì o di no	to say yes or no
l'ho visto di spalle/profilo/faccia	I saw him from behind/from the side (in profile)/from the front
di nascosto	covertly
di conseguenza	consequently
di seguito	in a row, continuously
di tutto cuore	willingly, with pleasure
vivere di espedienti	to live by one's wits
di qua/là	over here/there; this way/that way
ho speso tanti di quei soldi (R1)	I spent so much money
ci vuole tanta di quella pazienza (R1)	you need so much patience
ha preteso tanto di firma sul documento	he even demanded a signature on the document

di . . . in . . . is used in certain expressions corresponding to from . . . to . . .

di anno in anno	from year to year
di ora in ora	gradually, from one moment to the next
di tanto di tanto/di volta in volta	every now and again
(girare) di città in città	(to wander) from town to town
di male in peggio	from bad to worse

25.7.6 "Grammatical" uses of **di**

(a) in comparisons (see chapter 17):
sei più furbo di me
you're smarter than me

(b) in superlative constructions:
il paese più bello del mondo
the most beautiful country in the world

(c) joining an indefinite pronoun and an adjective (always masculine singular):
niente di nuovo/particolare
nothing new/special
un che di misterioso
a certain mysterious quality

25.8 dietro, dopo

Dopo expresses *after* and **dietro** expresses *behind*. Both also express the idea of one thing occurring after another. **Indietro** is an adverb and expresses *backwards*, *behind*.

	dopo	dietro
time	**dopo le sei** after six o'clock	–
place	**dopo l'incrocio** past the intersection	**dietro la porta** behind the door
successive events	**uno dopo l'altro** one after the other	**uno dietro l'altro** one after the other

25.8.1 dietro

dietro a me/te	behind me/you (in general)
dietro di me/te	right behind me/you
andare dietro a qu	to follow sb's example
dietro richiesta	on request
dietro consiglio di	on the recommendation of
dietro versamento di (R3)	on payment of
dietro le quinte	behind the scenes, in the wings

25.8.2 dopo

dopo due mesi di assenza	after two months' absence
l'ho fatto dopo di lui (R2–3)/**dopo lui** (R1)	I did it after him
dice una stupidaggine dopo/dietro l'altra	he says one stupid thing after another
leggeva libro dopo/dietro libro	he read book after book
dopo tutto	after all, in conclusion
il dopo Vietnam	the post-Vietnam period
dopo Cristo = d.C.	Anno Domini = AD
dopo di Lei, prego	please, after you

25.8.3 dopo, dietro, and indietro used as adverbs

poco dopo	shortly after/afterwards
il giorno dopo	the day after, the next day
ci vediamo dopo	see you later
guardare indietro	to look back
è rimasto indietro	he stayed behind OR he got left behind
avanti e indietro	backwards and forwards, to and fro

25.9 fino a, sino a, verso

Verso expresses movement *towards* and **fino a** expresses the end-point. Both can refer to space, time or objects. **Sino a** is an R3 equivalent of **fino a**.

verso Napoli	towards Naples
verso casa	towards home/homeward(s)
abita verso il centro	she lives near the city center
verso l'alto/il basso	upwards/downwards
verso le cinque	towards/around five o'clock
verso ottobre	around October
i suoi sentimenti verso suo padre/verso di lui	her feelings towards her father/towards him
fino a qui/fin qui	here (= up to here, as far as here)
ti accompagno fino all'angolo	I'll walk with you as far as the corner
ho dormito fino alle tre	I slept until three o'clock
fino alle tre non ho dormito	I didn't sleep until three o'clock
fino alla fine del mondo	until the end of the world
fino a quando ti fermi qui?	how long are you staying here?
posso spendere fino a cinquanta euro	I can spend up to 50 euro
schiaccia la pasta fino a ridurla in una sfoglia	press the pasta until you reduce it to a sheet

Note that **fino/sino** can combine with other prepositions to emphasize their meaning. It is usually abbreviated to **fin/sin**, e.g.:

è arrivata gente fin dall'Australia	people came even from Australia
l'acqua è arrivata fin dentro la stanza	the water reached right into the room
ne ho fin sopra i capelli	I've had it up to here (fig)
ho aspettato fin troppo	I've really waited too long

25.10 fuori

25.10.1 Used as preposition

Fuori may be used with **di** or **da**, but is often used without either.

fuori Milano, fuori della Lombardia	outside Milan, outside Lombardy
oggi la signora è fuori sede	she is out of the office/out of town today
questa frutta è fuori stagione	this fruit is out of season
fuori servizio	out of order

fuori luogo	out of place, uncalled for (fig)
è fuori dubbio	it is beyond doubt
giocare fuori casa	to play away

25.10.2 Used as adverb

fa freddo fuori	it's cold outside
l'hanno buttato fuori	they threw him out
stasera mangiamo fuori	tonight we're eating out
fuori da casa (mia)!	get out of my house!

25.11 in

25.11.1 Basic meanings

(a) *location; corresponds to English* in
abitano in Sicilia, negli Stati Uniti, nelle Marche
they live in Sicily, in the USA, in the Marche

(b) *destination, direction; corresponds to English* to *or* into
vado in Italia, nella Calabria meridionale
I'm going to Italy, southern Calabria
il treno è entrato nella galleria
the train went into the tunnel
andare in orbita
to go into orbit

(c) *a moment within a period of time; corresponds to English* in
in giugno; nel 1989; nel passato
in June; in 1989; in the past

25.11.2 Expressing location or movement

nella/dentro la scatola	in the box
in centro	in/to the centre of town/downtown
in periferia	in/to the suburbs
in via Garibaldi	in/to via Garibaldi
in piazza	in/at/to the piazza
in carcere/prigione/galera	in prison
in casa cf. **a casa**	in the house, inside (at) home
avvocato in Milano (R3)	lawyer in Milan
in aereo/macchina/tram/autobus/pullman/treno/nave/bicicletta (cf. section 25.3.1)	by plane/car/tram/bus/coach/train/ship/bicycle

in crisi	in trouble/in a spot of bother
in biblioteca/libreria/farmacia/ ufficio/banca/chiesa	in/at/to the library/bookshop/ pharmacy/office/bank/church
in tavola	on the table (of food)
in Serie A	in the first division

25.11.3 Expressing change

andare in fumo	to go up in smoke (fig)
andare in pensione	to retire (from work)
si è trasformato in bestia	he turned into a beast
BUT **è andato in bestia**	BUT he flew into a rage
Maria Rossi in Brambilla	Maria Brambilla née Rossi
tradurre dall'italiano in inglese	to translate from Italian (in)to English
convertire in html	to convert to HTML
cambiare dollari in euro	to change dollars into euro

25.11.4 Expressing time

in quel momento	at that moment
in/nel futuro	in the future
in/a quel tempo	at that time
in tempo di guerra	in time of war
in tutta la mia vita	in my (whole) life
in (nell') inverno/estate/ primavera	in winter/summer/spring
nell'estate dell'88	in the summer of '88
il giorno in cui	the day when/on which
nel mese di maggio	in the month of May
nello stesso tempo	at the same time
nell'arco di un anno	in the course of a year
l'ho fatto in dieci giorni	I did it in ten days
lo farò in dieci giorni	I'll do it in ten days/it will take me ten days to do it
lo farò in settimana	I'll do it this week
lo farò in giornata	I'll do it today
in ritardo/anticipo	late/early (for an appointment; **tardi**/**presto** = late/early in general)

25.11.5 Expressing manner, means, or material

essere in lutto	to be in mourning
essere in divisa	to be in uniform
essere in piedi/ginocchio	to be standing/kneeling
essere in pigiama	to be in one's pyjamas
in maniche di camicia	in shirt sleeves

un testo (scritto) in dialetto/latino/codice	a text (written) in dialect/Latin/code
trasmissione in differita	delayed broadcast
trasmissione in diretta (ALSO **dal vivo)**	live broadcast
pagare in contanti	to pay cash
mangiare in bianco	to eat simply (esp during illness)
una notte in bianco	a sleepless night
la statua è in marmo	the statue is made from/out of marble

in focuses attention on the material, while **di** is more of a simple description: **una statua in marmo** = a statue made out of marble, **una statua di marmo** = a marble statue

25.11.6 Common idioms and expressions involving **in**

in breve	in short, to put it briefly
in ogni caso	in any case
in linea d'aria	as the crow flies
in qualche modo	in one way or another
in parte	in part
in seguito	subsequently, next, in the future
in fretta e furia	in a great hurry
in poche parole	in a few words
in parole povere	to put it bluntly
laurea in lettere	bachelor of arts
eravamo in dieci/pochi/tanti	there were ten/only a few/lots of us
in alto/basso	up/down (there)
si è messo in testa che . . .	he has got it into his head that . . .
più in là	further on
essere in vita/in fin di vita	to be alive/to be on the point of death
in prima pagina	on the first page (of a newspaper)
in bocca al lupo!	good luck!
in un batter d'occhio	in the blink of an eye

25.11.7 In complex prepositional expressions

in base a	on the basis of
in cerca di	in search of
in cima a	on top of
in conformità a	conforming to
in confronto a	in comparison with
nei confronti di	with respect to
in fondo a	at the bottom/end of
in forza di	by force of/because of
in funzione di	in terms of

in luogo di	in place of
in mezzo a	in the middle of
in nome della legge	in the name of the law
BUT **nel nome del Padre del Figlio e dello Spirito Santo**	in the name of the Father, Son, and Holy Spirit
in occasione di	on the occasion of
in onore di	in honor of
in presenza di qu	in the presence of sb
nei pressi di	nearby
in quanto a (qc/fare qc)	as regards (sth/doing sth)
in riguardo a/nei riguardi di	with respect to
in seguito a	following
in vista di	in view of

25.12 per

25.12.1 Basic meanings

(a) *movement* towards *or* through *(both space and time)*
parte per Mantova
she is leaving for Mantua
sono passato per Pisa
I passed through/by Pisa
ci siamo rimasti per tre ore
we stayed there for three hours

(b) *purpose; corresponds to English* for, to, in order to
sono venuto in biblioteca per studiare
I have come to the library to study

25.12.2 Expressing movement

il treno per Lecce è in partenza sul primo binario	the train to Lecce is departing from platform one
sono passato per la piazza	I came via the piazza
camminava per la strada	she was walking along the street

25.12.3 Expressing time

va via per una settimana	he is going away for a week
torno per ferragosto	I'll be back for/by/in time for 15 August
viene per tre giorni	he is coming for three days
lo rimandiamo per/di un mese	we'll put it off for a month
va per i diciotto anni	she is turning eighteen
per il momento	for the moment

per un attimo/momento/istante/secondo	for a second/moment/instant
per la prima/l'ultima volta	for the first/last time
è tutto per ora	that's all for now
è arrivato per primo/ultimo	he was first/last to arrive

25.12.4 Expressing purpose

l'ho comprato per te	I bought it for you
un box per due macchine	a garage for two cars
l'ho fatto per te	I did it for you (= for your sake)
firma per sua moglie	he signs for (= on behalf of) his wife
l'hanno cambiata per una macchina nuova	they exchanged it for a new car
siamo qui per quello	that's what we are here for
non ho abbastanza soldi per comprarlo	I don't have enough money to buy it

25.12.5 Expressing reason or cause

l'hanno arrestato per non aver pagato le tasse	they arrested him for not paying his taxes
l'hanno licenziato per incompetenza	they've dismissed him for incompetence
per colpa tua ho perso il treno	it's your fault I missed the train
per questo, . . .	because of this/that's why
la risposta esiste per ciò stesso che esiste la domanda	the answer exists by the very fact that the question exists

25.12.6 In expressions of quantity

due per volta	two at a time
due per due	two by two
giorno per giorno	day by day
cinquanta per cento	50%

25.12.7 Common idioms and expressions involving **per**

è troppo per me	it's too much for me
per me, . . .	in my opinion, . . .
per me va bene	it's OK by me
passa per intelligente	he is considered intelligent
l'ho scambiata per tua sorella	I mistook her for your sister
per quanto mi riguarda/per quel che mi riguarda/per ciò che mi riguarda (R.2–3)	as far as I am concerned
per caso	by chance
per fortuna	luckily

per disgrazia	unfortunately
per certo	certainly
per nessun motivo	on no account
per iscritto	in writing
per cui	therefore
per favore/piacere/cortesia	please
per mezzo di	by means of
per via di	because of

25.13 sotto

25.13.1 Basic meanings

Sotto expresses the notion of *under*, *underneath*, *below*. It also appears in a number of expressions with a more figurative meaning. As a preposition, **sotto** is the usual opposite of **sopra** and **su**; as an adverb, **sotto** often, but not always, alternates with **giù**.

due gradi sotto zero	two degrees below zero
sotto la pioggia	in the rain
sotto pena di morte	on pain of death
essere sotto le armi/la naia (R1)	to be on military service
sotto processo	on trial
sotto ogni punto di vista	from all points of view
sotto casa	downstairs, down below
sotto Natale/le feste	before Christmas/the festive season
sotto banco	under the table, illegal(ly)
finire sotto una macchina	to be run over by a car

25.13.2 Idiomatic expressions with parts of the body

sotto braccio	arm in arm
prendere qc sotto gamba	to take sth (too) lightly
sotto mano	nearby, at hand
avere qc sottocchio/sott'occhio	to have sth under one's gaze

25.13.3 Used as an adverb

il bosco si estende sotto per 1800 metri	the forest extends for 1800 meters (downhill)
un albero con un cartello sotto	a tree with a sign under it
mettersi sotto	to start working hard/to take the initiative
mettere sotto qu (con la macchina)	to run sb over (with a car)

sotto!	down to it!/get to work!
sotto sotto	secretly/deep down (fig)

25.14 su, sopra

25.14.1 Basic meanings

Sopra and **su** both express *on*, *over*, *above*, *on top of*. They are interchangeable in most expressions, but not all. **Su** has a wider range of uses than **sopra**. The following examples contain one or both prepositions according to what occurs in current usage.

Su is always articulated with the definite article, **sopra** never is. In higher registers, **su** is often followed by **di** before a personal pronoun or a noun beginning with the letter **u-**, e.g. **su di me, su di noi, su di una collina**.

(a) *position* on, above, over, on top of
c'è un libro sul/sopra il tavolo
there's a book on the table
una casa sul/sopra il mare
a house overlooking/by the sea

(b) *movement* onto, over *sth*
vado sul/sopra il balcone per un po' d'aria
I'm going on the balcony for a bit of air
l'aereo ha volato sulla/sopra la città
the plane flew over the city

25.14.2 Expressing location or direction

sulla destra/sinistra/sopra la destra/sinistra (R3)	on the right/left-hand side
mise un mattone sull'altro/ sopra l'altro	he put one brick on top of the other
mille metri sopra il livello del mare	1000 meters above sea level
un grado sopra zero	one degree above zero
cento chilometri sopra Napoli	100 km past Naples
la Marcia su Roma	the March on Rome (October 1922)
su Canale 5	on Channel 5

25.14.3 In expressions of time or number

su per giù	approximately
sul presto/tardi	early/late
sul far del mattino/della sera	in the early morning/evening

sul calar della sera	as evening was falling
sulle prime	at first
otto su dieci	eight out of ten
tre disoccupati su cento abitanti	three unemployed persons per hundred inhabitants
ventiquattro ore su ventiquattro	24 hours a day

Note the difference between **su** and **sopra** in these expressions:

costa sui 500 euro	it costs around 500 euro
costa sopra i 500 euro	it costs more than 500 euro
pesa sui cento chili	it weighs around 100 kilograms
pesa sopra i cento chili	it weighs more than 100 kilograms
un ragazzo sui vent'anni	a young man of around twenty
un ragazzo sopra i vent'anni	a young man over twenty
una donna sulla cinquantina	a woman of around fifty
una donna sopra la cinquantina	a woman over fifty

25.14.4 **su** expressing subject-matter (**sopra** is less common)

un libro su Pasolini	a book on Pasolini
un dibattito sul voto all'estero	a debate on overseas voting
una mostra sul Rinascimento	an exhibition on the Renaissance
un giudizio sulla poesia contemporanea	a judgment on contemporary poetry

25.14.5 **su** in idiomatic expressions

su scala internazionale	on an international scale
sul serio	seriously
credere a qc sulla parola	to take sb at their word
mettere una questione sul tappeto	to put the matter on the table/on the agenda
sul piede di guerra	on a war footing
un fallo su Del Piero	a foul on Del Piero
l'articolo è apparso sul *Corriere della Sera*	the article appeared in the *Corriere della Sera*
la camera dava/guardava sul cortile	the bedroom gave onto/looked out onto the courtyard
un vestito su misura	a tailor-made suit/outfit
su due piedi	immediately, without prior warning
si è tenuto sulle generali	he kept to generalities
giurare sulla Bibbia	to swear on the Bible
imposta sul reddito	income tax
imposta sul valore aggiunto (IVA)	Value-Added Tax (UK)/Goods and Services Tax (Aus)

si contano sulla punta delle dita	you can count them on the fingers of one hand
oggi è sulle spine	she is very anxious/nervy today
sulla punta della lingua	on the tip of one's tongue
lui sta sulle sue	he keeps himself to himself
su Internet	on the Internet
sul Web	on the (World Wide) Web

25.14.6 **su** and **sopra** used as adverbs

su!	come on!
su con la vita!	look up! / chin up!
su le mani!	hands up!
un foglio di carta con su/sopra scritto "Aiuto"	a sheet of paper with "Help" written on it
è una famiglia molto su (R1–2)	they are a high-placed family/ in high society
oggi è su di giri	he's very excited/in a good mood today
le azioni sono andate su	my shares have gone up
vorrebbe mettere su famiglia	he would like to marry
da dieci euro in su	from 10 euro up
dalla cintola in su (R3-from Dante)	from the waist up
di cui sopra (R3)	above, above-mentioned
come sopra, vedi sopra	as above, see above
mettiamoci una pietra sopra	let's forget it
pensarci su/sopra	to think about it
voglio dormirci sopra	I want to sleep on it (fig)

25.15 tra, fra

These two prepositions are identical in meaning. **Tra** is somewhat more commonly used than **fra**. The only clear reason to prefer one over the other is to avoid unpleasant sound combinations, e.g.:

fra tre ore is preferred to **tra tre ore**
tra fratelli is preferred to **fra fratelli**

25.15.1 Basic meanings

(a) between *(both space and time)*
tra il ristorante e il negozio
between the restaurant and the shop
tra le cinque e le sei
between five and six (o'clock)

(b) among
si muoveva tra la folla parlando con tutti
he moved among the crowd speaking to everyone

25.15.2 Expressing time or distance

fra breve/tra poco/tra non molto	soon
tra due chilometri c'è un benzinaio	there's a petrol pump in two km
arriverà fra venti minuti	she'll be here in twenty minutes

25.15.3 Common idioms and expressions involving **tra**, **fra**

tra l'altro	moreover, furthermore
detto tra noi	between us
una discussione tra amici	a discussion among friends
sei il migliore tra i miei amici	you're the best of my friends
tra tutti c'era una ventina di persone	in all there were about twenty people
tra amici e parenti ci saranno state cento persone	there must have been 100 people including friends and relatives
tra lavoro e la famiglia non ho un momento libero	with work and the family I don't have a free moment
parlava fra sé (e sé) (R.2–3)	he was talking to himself
distinguere tra caso e caso	to distinguish between one case and another

26 English prepositions

This section lists common English prepositions and some Italian equivalents. The focus is on Italian expressions that are different from the usual equivalent of each English expression.

26.1 about

26.1.1 In the sense of "concerning"

a book about neorealism	**un libro sul neorealismo**
he doesn't understand anything about the issue	**non capisce niente della questione**
what's this about?	**di che cosa si tratta?**

26.1.2 In the sense of "approximately"

about midday	**verso mezzogiorno**
about fifty people	**circa cinquanta persone/una cinquantina di persone/ cinquanta persone circa** (R3)
he is about twenty	**lui ha circa vent'anni/ha una ventina d'anni/è sui venti anni/è sulla ventina**

With multiples of ten up to 90, one can say: **è sulla ventina/trentina/ quarantina/cinquantina/sessantina/settantina/ottantina/ novantina**

R1* vulgar or indecent
R1 informal, colloquial
R2 neutral, unmarked
R3 formal, written
Italian words and expressions are R2 unless otherwise indicated. See also p. 5.

26.2 above

above the limit	**oltre il limite**
above the village	**sul/sopra il paese**
the Arno above Florence	**l'Arno sopra/a monte di Firenze**
above average	**sopra la media/al di sopra della media**

26.3 according to

according to John/in my opinion	**secondo Giovanni/me**
according to the law	**secondo la legge**

26.4 across

to go across the bridge	**attraversare il ponte**
she lives across the piazza	**abita dall'altra parte della piazza**
the house across the river	**la casa oltre/dall'altra parte del fiume**
he ran across the field (cf. chapter 21)	**ha attraversato il campo correndo/di corsa**

26.5 along

Usually **lungo** or **per**; **rasente** stresses proximity.

he is walking along the road/river/coast	**cammina lungo la strada/il fiume/la costa**
I saw them along the road	**li ho visti per la strada**
along the wall	**lungo il muro/rasente il muro**
he ran along the edge of the precipice	**correva rasente l'orlo del precipizio**
along with	**insieme a/con**

26.6 among

among the Italians	**presso gli italiani**
among friends	**tra amici**

26.7 as

as a child	**da bambino**
she was successful as a writer	**ebbe successo come scrittrice**
dressed as a priest	**vestito da prete**
as far as the village	**fino al paese**
as far as I know	**che sappia io**
as for him	**quanto a lui**
as to the financial aspects	**quanto ai risvolti finanziari**
as soon as possible	**appena possibile/quanto prima**
as well as possible	**il meglio possible**

26.8 at

26.8.1 Expressing place

at home	**a casa**
at my/his/our place	**a casa mia/sua/nostra** OR **da me/lui/noi**
at the doctor's	**dal dottore**
at school	**a scuola**
at church	**in chiesa**
at the bank/office	**in banca/ufficio**
at the theater	**a teatro**
at University	**all'Università**
at the library	**in biblioteca**
at work	**al lavoro**
at sea	**in/sul mare**

There has been an accident at sea.
C'è stata una disgrazia sul mare/in alto mare.
There he is, in the sea.
Eccolo, nel mare.

26.8.2 Expressing time

at midnight	**a mezzanotte**
at ten o'clock	**alle dieci**
at 7.20 pm	**alle 7,20 / alle 19,20 = alle sette e venti / alle diciannove e venti**
at about seven	**alle sette circa/verso le sette**
at this time	**a quest'ora**
at the same time	**allo/nello stesso tempo/alla stessa ora**
at day/night	**di giorno/notte**

at the age of twenty	**all'età di vent'anni**
at present	**in questo momento/attualmente**
at the weekend(s)	**il weekend/il fine settimana**

26.8.3 In other expressions

at best	**nella migliore delle ipotesi**
at least	**almeno/per lo meno**
at once	**subito**
at most	**al massimo**
at peace	**in pace**
at the top	**in cima/in alto**
at first sight	**a prima vista**
at bottom	**in fondo**
at the point of death	**in fin di vita**
at 100 miles an hour	**a (una velocità di) 160 km all'ora/a 160 km l'ora**
at hand	**a portata di mano**
at any rate	**ad/in ogni modo/comunque**
at stake	**in gioco**
one thing at a time	**una cosa per volta**

26.9 because of

because of his age	**per la sua età/a causa della sua età** (R2–3)

26.10 before

26.10.1 Expressing place

he stood before the house	**stava davanti alla casa**
to have sth before one's eyes	**avere qc sotto gli occhi**
the problem before us	**il problema che ci sta davanti/che abbiamo di fronte**
a crime before God and man	**un delitto innanzi a Dio e agli uomini**

26.10.2 Expressing time

before me	**prima di me**
she'll come before six	**verrà prima delle sei**
before long	**fra non molto/fra poco**
the day before yesterday	**l'altro ieri/ier(i) l'altro/avant'ieri** (R3)
Before Christ (BC)	**avanti Cristo (a.C.)**

26.10.3 Expressing order of importance etc.

he puts money before everything	**mette i soldi davanti a tutto**

26.11 below

below zero	**sotto zero**
the Tiber below Rome	**il Tevere sotto/a valle di Roma**
below average	**sotto la media/al di sotto della media**

26.12 beneath

to disappear beneath the waves	**sparire sotto le onde**
beneath contempt	**vergognoso, ignobile**
that action is beneath him	**quell'atto è indegno di lui**

26.13 beyond

twenty kilometers beyond Bologna	**venti km oltre/dopo Bologna**
beyond the horizon	**oltre l'orizzonte/al di là dell'orizzonte**
beyond human understanding	**al di là della comprensione umana**
beyond my wildest dreams	**al di là dei miei sogni più folli**
he's living beyond his means	**vive al di sopra dei suoi mezzi**
it's beyond me	**non lo capisco/non ci arrivo** (R1–2)

26.14 by

26.14.1 Expressing place

by my side	**al mio fianco/a fianco a me**
she sat down by her father (i.e. near)	**si è seduta vicino a suo padre**
she sat down by her father (i.e. alongside)	**si è seduta accanto a suo padre**

he took me by the hand	**mi ha preso per mano**
he led my by the hand	**mi ha portato per mano**
we went by his house	**siamo passati per casa sua**

26.14.2 Expressing time

by nine o'clock	**entro/per** (R1–2) **le nove** **entro** has more the meaning of "not later than." This can be made explicit: **entro e non oltre le nove** no later than nine o'clock
by Friday	**per/entro venerdì**
by now	**ormai/a questo punto**

26.14.3 Expressing measure

taller by thirty centimeters	**più alto di trenta cm**
more interesting by far	**di gran lunga più interessante**
I am paid by the hour/week	**sono pagato a ore/a settimana**
to hire by the day	**noleggiare al giorno**
he sells wine by the litre	**vende il vino al litro**
eggs are sold by the dozen	**le uova si vendono a dozzine**
she missed the target by a meter	**ha mancato il bersaglio di un metro**
15 cm by 10 cm	**15 cm per 10 cm**

26.14.4 Expressing means

to travel by train/bus/car/plane	**viaggiare in treno/autobus/macchina/ aereo** OR **col treno/con l'autobus/con la macchina/con l'aereo**
to travel by bike	**viaggiare in bicicletta**
may I pay by cheque?	**posso pagare con un assegno?**
to contact sb by phone/email	**contattare qu per telefono/email/posta elettronica**
by air mail	**per via aerea**
by means of	**per mezzo di**
by no means	**in nessun modo/neanche per sogno** (R1–2)
by all means	**certamente, senz'altro**

26.14.5 Expressing cause or agent

For the use of **by** in passive constructions, see also section 23.4.

by accident/mistake	**per caso/sbaglio**
a play by Pirandello	**una commedia di Pirandello**
made by hand	**fatto a mano**
the battery was invented by Alessandro Volta	**la pila fu inventata da Alessandro Volta**
the invention of the battery by Alessandro Volta	**l'invenzione della pila da parte di Alessandro Volta** ALSO **ad opera di** (R3)

26.14.6 In other expressions

one by one	**uno alla volta**
I know her by sight	**la conosco di vista**
side by side	**fianco a fianco**
I learned the whole poem by heart	**ho imparato a memoria l'intera poesia**
by ear	**a orecchio**
by my watch	**secondo il mio orologio**
he swore by all that is holy	**giurò su tutto ciò che vi è di più sacro** (R2–3)
by way of example	**a mo' di esempio**
by dint of hard work	**a forza di fatica**
by Jove!	**per Giove/per Bacco!**

26.15 down

we walked down the street	**camminavamo lungo/per la strada**
we walked down the stairs (cf. chapter 21)	**camminavamo giù per le scale/ scendevamo le scale a piedi**
tears ran down his cheeks	**le lacrime gli scendevano lungo le guance**
down the centuries	**lungo/attraverso i secoli**
downtown	**in centro**

26.16 during

during the day	**durante il giorno**
during one's lifetime	**per tutta la vita/vita natural durante** (R3)

26.17 except (for)

every day except Sunday	**tutti i giorni eccetto domenica**
everyone except for him	**tutti tranne lui/eccetto lui/salvo lui** (R3)
the flat is finished except for the kitchen	**a parte la cucina, l'appartamento è pronto**

26.18 for

26.18.1 Expressing benefit

a present for her husband	**un regalo per suo marito**
a reward for sth	**un premio per qc**
for your benefit	**a tuo beneficio**

26.18.2 Expressing purpose

for pleasure	**per (puro) divertimento**
what's for dinner?	**che cosa c'è per cena?**
they're coming to my house for dinner	**vengono a cena da me**
cf. guess who's coming to dinner	**indovina chi viene a cena**
for monetary gain	**a scopo di lucro** (R3)
what's it for?	**a che cosa serve?**

26.18.3 Expressing cause

to shout for joy	**gridare dalla/di gioia**
he was jailed for murder	**fu imprigionato per omicidio**
for this reason	**per questo motivo**

26.18.4 Expressing time

I have been living in Rome for three years	**vivo a Roma da tre anni / sono/è** (R1) **tre anni che vivo a Roma / è da tre anni che vivo a Roma**
we had been living in Rome for five years	**vivevamo a Roma da cinque anni / erano/era** (R1) **cinque anni che vivevamo a Roma / era da cinque anni che vivevamo a Roma**

they lived in Rome for two years when they were just married	**hanno vissuto (sono vissuti) a Roma per due anni appena sposati**
she will be in Venice for two weeks	**sarà a Venezia per due settimane**
they are here for two days	**sono qui per due giorni**
he was there for a week = he spent a week there	**c'è stato lì per una settimana/ci ha passato una settimana**
she was there for a week = she was going to stay for a week	**era lì per una settimana / si fermava lì per una settimana / si sarebbe fermata lì per una settimana**
he won't be back for a month	**non ritorna per un mese/ritorna fra un mese**
I'll do it for Monday	**lo faccio per lunedì**

26.18.5 Expressing place

at Terontola you change for Perugia	**a Terontola si cambia per Perugia**
I'm leaving for Calabria	**parto per la Calabria**

26.18.6 In other expressions

for example	**per/ad esempio**
for sale	**in vendita**
as for me	**per me**
for all I know	**per quanto ne sappia io/ne so** (R1)

26.19 from

26.19.1 Expressing place

she comes from Australia (i.e. that is her country of origin)	**lei è dell'Australia/australiana**
she comes from Australia (i.e. she is traveling or has just arrived from there)	**lei viene dall'Australia**
where are you from?	**di dove sei?**
the train from Lecce (to Milan)	**il treno da Lecce (a Milano)**
from top to bottom	**da cima a fondo**
from beginning to end	**dall'inizio alla fine**
from the beginning	**da capo**
from head to foot	**dalla testa ai piedi**
tell him from me that . . .	**digli da parte mia che . . .**

26.19.2 Expressing time

from dawn to dusk	**dall'alba al tramonto**
from today on	**da oggi in poi**
from now on	**da/d'ora in poi**
from 1 January	**(a partire) dal 1 gennaio**
from day to day	**di giorno in giorno**
from time to time	**di quando in quando/di tanto in tanto**

26.19.3 In other expressions

he is suffering from AIDS	**è malato di AIDS**
from what I've heard	**da quello che ho sentito io**
from my point of view	**dal mio punto di vista**
from the psychological point of view	**sotto il profilo psicologico**

26.20 in

26.20.1 Expressing place

in our country/region/city	**da noi**
in the Alps	**sulle/in mezzo alle Alpi**
in Turin	**a Torino** BUT **in Torino** (R3) = within Turin
in Italy	**in Italia**
BUT in southern (etc.) Italy	**nell'Italia meridionale (ecc)**
in + names of Italian *regioni*	
f sing names	**in Lombardia**
m sing names	**nel Lazio, nel Veneto, nel Molise** BUT it is increasingly common to use **in** without the article, esp **in Piemonte, in Abruzzo, in Veneto, in Trentino, in Friuli**
all pl names	**nelle Marche, negli Abruzzi**
in town	**in città/paese**
in the country/mountains	**in campagna/montagna**
in the sky	**nel/in cielo**
in heaven	**in cielo**
in the piazza	**in piazza**
wounded in the arm	**ferito al braccio**
blind in one eye	**cieco da un occhio**
in the direction of the harbour	**verso il/in direzione del porto**
in the neighborhood of	**nei pressi di/nei paraggi di** (R3)
in the air (lit and fig)	**in aria** (lit), **nell'aria** (fig)

in space	**nello spazio**
in a tent	**in tenda**
in the newspaper	**sul giornale**
in the saddle (of horse and bike)	**in sella**
to sit in an armchair	**essere seduto in poltrona**
to have sth in one's mouth	**avere qc in bocca**
in the sun	**al sole**
in the shade/shadow	**all'ombra**
in the rain	**sotto la pioggia**
in the snow	**sotto la neve** (when it is falling)/**nella neve** (on the ground)
in the kitchen/bedroom	**in/nella cucina/camera**
in the bathroom/living room	**in/nel bagno/salotto**
in the garden	**in/nel giardino**
in bed	**a letto**
in place of	**al posto di**
in your place (lit and fig)	**al tuo posto**
to save in memory	**salvare in memoria**

26.20.2 Expressing time

in the morning	**al mattino/la mattina/di mattina**
in the afternoon	**il/nel/di pomeriggio**
it is better to sleep in the afternoon	**è meglio dormire di pomeriggio**
yesterday I slept in the afternoon	**ieri ho dormito nel pomeriggio**
in the evening	**la/di sera**
in the early afternoon	**nel primo pomeriggio**
in August	**in agosto**
in mid August	**a metà agosto**
in (the) spring/ summer/ autumn/ winter	**d'/di** OR **in primavera/estate/ autunno/inverno** **di** implies some usual activity; **in** is used for a specific time reference
in the winter of 1944	**nell'inverno del 1944**
in 1948	**nel 1948**
in the twenty-first century	**nel 21° secolo**
in our time	**ai nostri giorni/tempi**
in the time of the Caesars	**ai tempi dei Cesari**
I will do it in ten days (i.e. in ten days from now)	**lo farò fra dieci giorni**
I will do it in ten days (i.e. it will take me ten days)	**lo farò in/entro dieci giorni**

I did it in ten days (i.e. it took me ten days)	**l'ho fatto in dieci giorni**
in this weather	**con questo tempo**
in the long run	**a lungo andare**
in the short/mid/long term	**a breve/medio/lungo termine**

26.20.3 In other expressions

the best in the world	**il migliore del mondo**
in a happy/sad voice	**con voce felice/triste**
in a whisper	**sotto voce/a voce bassa**
in a strange way	**in modo strano**
(in) my way	**a modo mio**
in the light of these revelations	**alla luce di queste rivelazioni**
in that case	**in questo caso**
in peace/silence	**in pace/silenzio**
to be in mourning	**essere in lutto**
in writing	**per iscritto**
in my opinion	**secondo me/a mio parere/a parer mio** (R3)
in the opinion of the judges	**secondo i giudici**
dressed in white/black/red	**vestito di bianco/nero/rosso**
dressed in mourning	**vestito a lutto**
to pay in cash or in kind	**pagare in contanti o in natura**
in power	**al potere**
in the finals/semifinals	**in finale/semifinale**
in the present situation	**allo stato attuale delle cose**
in parentheses	**tra parentesi**
four in number	**quattro di numero**
in all sincerity	**con tutta sincerità**

26.21 inside

inside the room	**dentro la/nella stanza**
inside two months	**nel giro di due mesi/entro due mesi**

26.22 instead of

instead of flowers	**invece/al posto dei fiori**
he acted instead of his son	**ha fatto le veci di suo figlio** (R3)

26.23 into

to fall into sb's hands	**cadere nelle/tra le mani di qu**
to translate into Spanish	**tradurre in spagnolo**
to drive into a tree	**andare (con la macchina) contro un albero**

26.24 of

some of them	**alcuni di loro**
all of them	**tutti (loro)**
the five of us	**noi cinque**
a friend of mine	**un mio amico**
the city of Milan	**la città di Milano**
a house (made) of wood	**una casa di legno**
of late	**ultimamente**
of old	**anticamente**
of his own accord	**di sua spontanea volontà**

26.25 off

to get off the train/tram/bus/plane	**scendere dal treno/tram/dall'autobus/l'aereo**
she fell off a ladder	**è caduta da una scala**
off shore	**al largo**
off Naples	**al largo di Napoli**
off the coast of Calabria	**al largo della Calabria**
offside	**(in) fuorigioco**

26.26 on

26.26.1 Expressing place

the book is on the table	**il libro è sul/sopra il tavolo**
the picture is hanging on the wall	**il quadro è appeso al muro/alla parete**
the cat is sitting on the wall	**il gatto è seduto sul muro**
on the ceiling	**sul soffitto**
on the stage (of a play etc.)	**sul palcoscenico/sulla scena**
on the stage (of a performer)	**in scena**
to travel on the river (i.e. by boat)	**viaggiare sul fiume**

to have a picnic on the river (i.e. beside it)	**fare un picnic vicino al fiume**
a house on the river	**una casa sul fiume**
the room looks on to the courtyard	**la stanza dà sul cortile**
on top of	**in cima di**
on the left/right	**a sinistra/destra**
on board	**a bordo (di)**
on the train	**sul treno**
to travel on the train/on a bike	**viaggiare in treno/bicicletta**
on that train/bike (i.e. on a particular one)	**su quel treno/quella bicicletta**
on the second floor	**al secondo piano**
on the stairs	**sulle scale/per le scale**
on the ground	**per terra/a terra**
on the footpath/pavement	**sul marciapiede**
on this side	**da questa parte**
on the other side	**dall'altra parte**
on all sides	**da tutte le parti**
on page 50	**a pagina 50**
on the front page (of a newspaper)	**in prima pagina**
on his face	**in faccia**
on the mouth	**sulla bocca**

26.26.2 Expressing time

on 25 April	**il 25 aprile**
on Sunday	**domenica**
on Sundays	**la domenica**
on a cold winter's day	**in un freddo giorno d'inverno**
on weekdays	**nei giorni feriali/lavorativi**
on (GB: at) the weekend(s)	**il weekend/il fine settimana**
on this important occasion	**in questa importante occasione**
on his arrival	**al suo arrivo**
(payment) on delivery	**(pagamento) alla consegna**

26.26.3 In other expressions

on the telephone	**al telefono**
on radio/television	**alla radio/televisione**
BUT the cat is sitting on the television (set)	BUT **il gatto è seduto sul televisore**
on Channel 5	**su Canale 5**

on air	**in onda**
the song has come out on CD	**la canzone è uscita su cd**
on the Internet	**su Internet**
on the Web	**sul Web** [wɛb]
we arrived on foot/horseback	**siamo arrivati a piedi/cavallo**
to go on a pilgrimage	**andare in pellegrinaggio**
they are on the way (of people)	**sono in viaggio/per strada**
they are on the way (of things)	**stanno arrivando**
on average	**in media**
on one condition	**a una condizione**
to go on tour	**andare in tournée**
to be on leave	**essere in congedo/permesso/ferie**
tell him on my behalf	**digli da parte mia**
he's on our side	**lui è dalla nostra parte**
shares quoted on the (Milan) Stock Exchange	**azioni quotate in borsa/sulla piazza (di Milano)**
on the agenda	**all'ordine del giorno**
congratulations on	**mi congratulo (con te) per**

26.27 out of

she went out of the room	**è uscita dalla stanza**
he is out of town	**è fuori città/sede**
she is out of the office	**è fuori ufficio/sede**
eight out of ten	**otto su dieci**
out of action	**fuori servizio**
out of work	**senza lavoro, disoccupato**
out of breath	**senza fiato, trafelato** (R.2–3)
out of danger	**fuori pericolo**
out of the way	**fuori mano, lontano**
out of the way!	**levati dai piedi! via!**
out of *meaning* through = **per**	
out of kindness/love/envy	**per gentilezza/amore/invidia**
out of *meaning* without = **senza**	
out of petrol/sugar	**senza benzina/zucchero**

26.28 outside

the house is outside Rome	**la casa è fuori Roma**
the campsite is outside Lazio	**il campeggio è fuori del Lazio**
outside office hours	**al di fuori dell'orario d'ufficio**

26.29 over

clouds hung over the city	**le nuvole incombevano sulla/sopra la città**
he jumped over the table	**ha saltato/scavalcato la tavola**
over the sea	**al di là del mare/oltremare**
children over three years old	**bambini sopra i tre anni/superiori ai tre anni** (R3)
over a year ago	**più di un anno fa**
over dinner	**a cena/a tavola**
over the years	**negli anni**

26.30 past

just past the shop	**poco dopo il negozio**
he ran past the shop	**ha passato il negozio correndo**
she is past seventy	**ha più di settant'anni**
five past two	**le due e cinque**

26.31 round

we sat round the table	**ci siamo seduti intorno alla tavola**
we walked round the park (round the perimeter)	**abbiamo fatto il giro del parco**
we walked round the park (in the park)	**abbiamo fatto un giro nel parco**
he travelled round Italy	**ha viaggiato in Italia/ha girato l'Italia**
round the corner	**dietro l'angolo**

26.32 through

she walked through the wood/forest/countryside	**ha attraversato il bosco/la foresta/la campagna a piedi**
to look through a window	**guardare da una finestra**
canceled through illness	**cancellato per malattia**
I went through a red light	**sono passato col rosso**
all through her life	**(per) tutta la vita**

26.33 to

26.33.1 Expressing direction

to go to school	**andare a scuola**

(both in the sense of "to attend school" and "to be travelling to the school building")

The following expressions have the same two types of meaning:

to go to church	**andare in chiesa**
to go to University	**andare all'Università**
to go to the bank	**andare in banca**
to go to work	**andare al lavoro**
to go to town	**andare in città/paese/centro**
to go to the office	**andare in ufficio**
to go to the doctor('s)	**andare dal dottore**
to go to bed	**andare a letto/coricarsi** (R3)
to go to Heaven	**andare in Paradiso/salire in cielo**
to go to Hell	**andare all'Inferno**
to go to the moon/Mars	**andare sulla luna/su Marte**
to go to Brindisi	**andare a Brindisi**
to go to Italy	**andare in Italia**

For the Italian regions, the same rules apply as for the English preposition *in*. Thus:

andare in Toscana, nelle Marche, in Veneto, in Piemonte, nel/in Lazio

to fall to the ground	**cadere in/per terra**
the bird fell to the ground	**l'uccello è caduto per/a terra**
he fainted and fell to the ground	**è svenuto ed è caduto per/a terra**
twenty to six	**le sei meno venti/venti alle sei** (R1)

26.33.2 In other expressions

to my surprise/delight	**con mia sorpresa/gioia**
to (the best of) my knowledge	**per quel che ne so io/che sappia io**
married to sb	**sposato con qu**
I told him to his face	**gliel'ho detto in faccia**
to my mind	**a mio parere**

26.34 towards

your kindness towards me	**la tua gentilezza con me**
your duty towards your parents	**il tuo dovere verso i (tuoi) genitori**

26.35 under

under the table	**sotto il tavolo**
children under three years old	**bambini sotto i tre anni** (R1–2)/ **inferiori ai tre anni** (R3)
under an hour	**meno di un'ora**
under age	**minorenne**
under consideration	**in esame**
born under the sign of Pisces	**nato sotto il segno dei Pesci**

26.36 until, till

until now	**fino ad ora/finora**
until then	**fino ad allora**
until 2002	**fino al 2002**
until the end of the month	**fino alla fine del mese**
until seven o'clock	**fino alle sette**
until after his death	**fino a dopo la sua morte**
I waited until seven o'clock	**ho aspettato fino alle sette**
he won't know until Saturday	**non lo saprà prima di sabato/lo saprà solo sabato**

26.37 up

we climbed up the hill	**siamo saliti sulla collina**
he walked up the street	**ha camminato lungo la strada**

26.38 with

come with me	**vieni con me**
I am angry with you	**sono arrabbiato con te**
with all my heart	**con tutto il cuore**
he lives with his mother	**vive con sua madre**
he lives with his girlfriend	**convive con la (sua) ragazza**
she wept with joy	**pianse di gioia/per la (grande) gioia**
covered with dust	**coperto di polvere**
together with	**insieme con** (R2–3)/**a** (R1–2)

27 Prepositional constructions with verbs and adjectives

In sections 27.1 to 27.6, each verb is listed only once, under the preposition with which it is most commonly used. The existence of alternative usages is signaled by, e.g., (ALSO **di**), but the verb is not listed under the alternative prepositions. The index may be consulted to locate verbs if necessary. Verbs which permit different constructions that have different meanings are listed in section 27.7.

27.1 Verbs with no preposition before an infinitive

27.1.1 Infinitive as subject of the verb

In the sentence **Occorre scrivere**, the infinitive **scrivere** is the subject of **occorre**, just as in the sentence **Occorre una lettera**, the noun **una lettera** is the subject of the verb. When an infinitive is the subject of a verb, there is usually no intervening preposition. A number of these verbs are sometimes used with **di**, but this usage should not be imitated by the student.

affascinare (R2–3)	to fascinate
appassionare (R2–3)	to please greatly
bastare a qu	to be enough
bisognare a qu	to be necessary
convenere a qu	to be opportune
le conviene aspettare	she should wait
costare a qu	to cost

R1* vulgar or indecent
R1 informal, colloquial
R2 neutral, unmarked
R3 formal, written
Italian words and expressions are R2 unless otherwise indicated. See also p. 5.

dare fastidio a qu	to give annoyance
gli dà fastidio sentire discorsi retorici	it annoys him to hear rhetorical speeches
dispiacare a qu	to give displeasure
le dispiace attendere fuori?	do you mind waiting outside?
entusiasmare	to give enthusiasm
essere + NOUN	to be (a pity/the easiest thing
e.g. **è un peccato/la cosa più facile del mondo**	in the world, etc.)
essere + ADJ	to be (necessary/possible/
è necessario/possibile/vietato	forbidden, etc.)
importare a qu	to be of importance
esp **non importa**	it isn't important
infastidire (R2–3)	to give annoyance
interessare a qu	to interest
occorrere a qu	to be necessary
piacere a qu	to give pleasure
rallegrare qu (R3)	to give joy
rendere + ADJ **a qu**	to make it impossible for sb to do sth
la tua lettera (**le**) **rende impossibile aiutarti**	your letter makes it impossible (for her) to help you
riuscire ONLY in the R2–3 construction **riuscire a** + **qu** + ADJ, e.g.:	
gli riesce difficile fidarsi di lei	it is difficult for him to trust her
rincrescere a qu (R2–3)	to give sorrow
le rincresce non poterti aiutare	she is sorry she can't help
ripugnare (R3)	to be repugnant
seccare a qu	to give annoyance
gli secca aspettare i ritardatari	it annoys him to wait for late-comers
servire a qu	to be of use
spettare a qu	to be the duty of
le spetta badare al bambino	it is up to her to look after the baby
toccare a qu	to fall to
gli tocca pagare per tutti	he has to pay for everyone
a chi tocca (**pagare**)**?**	whose turn is it (to pay)?
valere la pena (ALSO **di**)	to be worthwhile
val la pena (**di**) **chiedere il prezzo**	it is worth asking the price
venire + ADJ **a qu**	
le viene spontaneo pensare a lui al tramonto	she finds herself thinking of him at sunset

27.1.2 Infinitive as object of the verb

When the infinitive has the same function as a direct object, there is no preposition. Compare:

Preferisco camminare.
I prefer to walk.
Preferisco una passeggiata.
I prefer a stroll.

A number of these verbs used to take **di** in older forms of Italian but this is restricted to higher registers today and often sounds old-fashioned.

adorare (R2–3)	to adore doing sth
amare (R2–3)	to love to do sth
bramare (R3)	to long to do sth
desiderare	to desire to do sth
dovere	to have to do sth
gradire (R2–3)	to be pleased to
osare (R2–3)	to dare to do sth
potere	to be able to do sth
preferire	to prefer to do sth
sapere	to know how to do sth
sembrare	to seem
Matteo sembra dormire	Matteo seems to be sleeping
Tommaso sembra aver capito	Tommaso seems to have understood
essere solito (R3)	to be accustomed to doing sth
usare (R3)	to be accustomed to doing sth
uso andare a letto presto	I usually go to bed early
oggi usa uscire in compagnia	today one goes out in company
volere	to want to do sth

27.1.3 Verbs of perception

sento (**qu**) **cantare**	I hear (sb) singing
sento Tommaso cantare OR **sento cantare Tommaso** OR **sento Tommaso a cantare** (R1, South)	I hear Tommaso singing
sento cantare la canzone da/a Tommaso	I hear Tommaso sing the song OR I hear the sung being sung by/to Tommaso
la sento cantare da/a lui	I hear him singing it
gli sento cantare la canzone	I hear him singing the song
gliela sento cantare	I hear him singing it
sento Tommaso cantare la canzone	I hear Tommaso singing the song
lo sento cantarla	I hear him singing it
mi fa piacere sentirgliela cantare	I am pleased to hear him sing it

vedo andare via Giuseppe	I see Giuseppe go away
vedo abbattere gli alberi	I see the trees (being) felled
vedo Giuseppe pentirsi delle sue parole	I see Giuseppe regret his words

27.1.4 Causative construction

faccio cantare Tommaso	I make Tommaso sing
lo faccio cantare	I make him sing
faccio cantare la canzone	I have the song sung
la faccio cantare	I have it sung
faccio cantare la canzone da/a Tommaso	I make Tommaso sing the song OR I get the song sung by Tommaso
la faccio cantare da/a lui	
gliela faccio cantare	I get it sung by him I make him sing it
faccio pentire Tommaso delle sue parole	I make Tommaso regret his words

27.2 di **before an infinitive**

With **di**, the infinitive is in the present if the action occurs at the same time or in the future with respect to the main verb; it is in the past if the action occurred prior to the main verb. (See also "Sequence of tenses," chapter 29). E.g.:

Dice di essere d'accordo.
She says she agrees.
Dice di essere stata d'accordo fin dall'inizio.
She says she has agreed from the start.

27.2.1 The subject of certain "impersonal" verbs (cf. section 4.4)

These verbs often take a **che** clause + subjunctive, which is the subject of the verb. They may also take an infinitive clause with **di** when the logical subject of the two verbs is the same (see section 24.10 for this use with impersonal subjects), e.g.:

Gli sembra di aver capito (= **Sembra che lui abbia capito**)
It seems to him to have understood, i.e. He thinks he has understood.

(a) Verbs of seeming

parere	to appear
risultare	to turn out
sembrare	to seem

(b) Verbs of happening

accadere	to occur
capitare	to happen by chance
succedere	to happen

essere dato di (R3):
non mi fu dato di incontrarla — I didn't happen to meet her
venire fatto di (R3):
mi venne fatto di trovare il documento cruciale — I happened to find the crucial letter

(c) Certain verbs used idiomatically

andare (R1–2) — to feel like doing sth
non gli va di uscire stasera — he doesn't feel like going out tonight

passare per la mente/testa (R1–2) — to enter one's head
non le è passato per la mente di chiedere scusa — it didn't enter her head to apologize

27.2.2 Verbs of saying, promising, agreeing

These verbs take **di** + infinitive when the subjects of the two verbs are the same, and a **che** clause when they are different. Many of these verbs may also take a **che** clause with the same subjects to add weight to what is said, e.g.:

Gli ho promesso di farlo OR **Gli ho promesso che lo avrei fatto**.
I promised him I would do it.
Gli ho promesso che il mio amico l'avrebbe fatto.
I promised him my friend would do it.

accennare di — to hint that
accettare di — to accept to (do sth)
acconsentire di — to agree to (do sth)
affermare di — to state that
aggiungere di — to add that
ammettere di — to admit that
annunciare di — to announce that
asserire di — to assert that
confessare di — to confess that
consentire di (ALSO **a**) — to agree to (do sth)
decidere di — to decide to (do sth)
dichiarare di — to declare that
dire di — to say that
esclamare di — to exclaim that
giurare di — to swear that
lagnarsi di — to complain that
lamentarsi di — to complain that
meritare di — to deserve to (do sth)
negare di — to deny that
promettere di — to promise to (do sth)
raccontare di — to relate that
rischiare di — to risk (doing sth)
rispondere di — to reply that

scrivere di	to write that
stabilire di	to decide to (do sth)
svelare di (R2–3)	to reveal that

27.2.3 Verbs of mental states

(a) Verbs of remembering and forgetting

dimenticar(si) di	to forget to (do sth)
scordarsi di	to forget to (do sth)
ricordar(si) di	to remember to (do sth)

(b) Verbs of noticing and realizing

accorgersi di	to notice that
realizzare di (R1–2)	to realize that
rendersi conto di	to realize that

(c) Verbs of knowing, pretending

far finta di	to pretend that
ignorare di (R2–3)	not to know that
sapere di	to know that
scoprire di	to discover that

27.2.4 Verbs of feeling, opinion, or will

(a) Verbs of believing, doubting, hoping, suspecting

aspettarsi di	to expect to (do sth)
contare di	to count on (doing sth)
credere di	to believe that
dubitare di	to doubt that
immaginare di	to imagine that
pensare di	to think that/to think about (doing sth)
ritenere di	to claim that
sognare di	to dream of (doing sth)
sospettare di	to suspect that
sperare di	to hope to (do sth)

(b) Verbs of feeling, emotion

accontentarsi di	to be happy with (doing sth)
aver paura di	to be afraid to (do sth)
aver piacere di	to be pleased to (do sth)
aver vergogna di	to be ashamed to (do sth)
offendersi di	to be offended that
pentirsi di	to regret (doing sth)
non poterne più di (R1–2)	not to be able to (do sth) any more
preoccuparsi di	to take care to (do sth)
rallegrarsi di (R2–3)	to take pleasure in (doing sth)
rammaricarsi di	to regret (doing sth)
stupirsi di	to be amazed that
temere di	to be afraid that
vergognarsi di	to be ashamed to (do sth)

(c) Verbs of wanting, planning, trying

ardire di (R3)	to dare to (do sth)
aspettare di	to wait to (do sth)
augurarsi di	to hope that
cercare di	to try to (do sth)
godere di (ALSO **a, nel**)	to enjoy (doing sth)
mettersi in testa di (R1–2)	to get it into one's head to (do sth)
minacciare di	to threaten to (do sth)
parlare di	to talk about (doing sth in the future)
progettare di	to plan on (doing sth)
proporre di	to propose (doing sth)
riservarsi di (R3)	to reserve the right to (do sth)
risolvere di (R3)	to resolve to (do sth)
scegliere di	to choose to (do sth)
sentirsela di	to feel like (doing sth)
tentare di	to try to (do sth)
vedere di	to see to it that (sth happens)

27.2.5 Other verbs

(a) Verbs of ceasing

cessare di	to cease (doing sth)
finire di	to finish (doing sth)
(**non**) **mancare di**	not to fail to (do sth)
smettere di	to stop OR give up (doing sth)
terminare di	to stop (doing sth)
evitare di	to avoid (doing sth)
lasciare di (R3)	to leave off (doing sth)
rifiutar(si) di	to refuse to (do sth)
stancarsi di	to get tired of (doing sth)
trascurare di	to neglect to (do sth)

(b) Other verbs

aver bisogno di	to need to (do sth)
essere in grado di	to be able to (do sth)
permettersi di	to take the liberty of (doing sth)
sforzarsi di	to make an effort to (do sth)

27.2.6 Verb + direct object + **di** + infinitive

With all these verbs, the subject of the infinitive is the direct object of the main verb. If this direct object is "impersonal," it is omitted (cf. section 24.10).

Li ho ringraziati di essere venuti.
I thanked them for coming.
Si prega di non fumare.
Please do not smoke (lit. One asks [people] not to smoke).

(a) Verbs of telling or asking sb to do sth

The **di** + infinitive may be replaced in R2–3 by a **che** clause with the verb in the subjunctive, e.g.:

Ho pregato gli ospiti di entrare.
Ho pregato gli ospiti che entrassero.
I asked the guests to come in.

avvertire qu di (ALSO **a**)	to warn sb to (do sth)
implorare qu di (R2–3)	to implore sb to (do sth)
incaricare qu di	to entrust sb to (do sth)
pregare qu di	to beg sb to (do sth)
scongiurare qu di (ALSO **a**)	to beg sb to (do sth)
supplicare qu di (ALSO **a**)	to beg sb to (do sth)

(b) Verbs of accusing, thanking

accusare qu di	to accuse sb of (doing sth)
rimproverare qu di (ALSO **per**)	to reprove sb for (doing sth)
ringraziare qu di (ALSO **per**)	to thank sb for (doing sth)

27.2.7 Verb + indirect object + **di** + infinitive

With all these verbs, the subject of the infinitive is the indirect object of the main verb. If this indirect object is "impersonal," it is omitted (cf. section 24.10). The **di** + infinitive may be replaced in R2–3 by a **che** clause with the verb in the subjunctive, e.g.:

Ho chiesto all'ispettore di entrare.
Ho chiesto all'ispettore che entrasse.
I asked the inspector to come in.
NOTE **Ho chiesto che entrasse l'ispettore**.
I asked (someone else) for the inspector to come in, i.e. I asked for the inspector to be shown in.

(a) Verbs of telling or asking sb to do sth

Note that with verbs of telling, the subject of the infinitive is understood to be the same as that of the main verb when the infinitive is in the past. Compare:

Gli ho detto di vedere quali alternative ci fossero.
I told him to see what alternatives there were.
Gli ho detto di non aver mai visto l'accusato (R2–3).
I told him that I had never seen the accused.

accennare a qu di (R3)	to beckon to sb to (do sth)
chiedere a qu di	to ask sb to (do sth)
comandare a qu di	to order sb to (do sth)
consigliare a qu di	to advise sb to (do sth)
dire a qu di	to tell sb to (do sth)
domandare a qu di	to ask sb to (do sth)
impedire a qu di	to prevent sb from (doing sth)
imporre a qu di	to force sb to (do sth)
ordinare a qu di	to order sb to (do sth)
proporre a qu di	to suggest to sb that they (do sth)
raccomandare a qu di	to recommend to sb to (do sth)

(b) Verbs of allowing or forbidding

concedere a qu di (R2–3)	to concede permission to sb/allow sb to (do sth)
permettere a qu di	to permit sb to (do sth)
proibire a qu di	to forbid sb to (do sth)
vietare a qu di	to forbid sb to (do sth)
le hanno vietato di uscire dopo cena	they have forbidden her to go out after dinner
le è stato vietato di uscire dopo cena	she has been prohibited from going out after dinner
BUT (**è**) **vietato fumare** (cf. section 27.1.1)	no smoking

27.2.8 Adjectives + **di** + infinitive

A large number of adjectives in Italian take **di** before a following infinitive. They refer to mood or mental state, or to ability. Some of these adjectives may take **per** to express cause. In many cases a **che** clause may substitute for the **di** + infinitive clause.

ansioso di	anxious to (do sth)
capace di	able to (do sth), capable of (doing sth)
certo di	sure to (do sth)
colpevole di	guilty of (doing sth)
compiaciuto di	pleased to (do sth)
consapevole di	aware of (doing sth)
contento di	happy to (do sth)
curioso di	curious to (do sth)
degno di	worthy of (doing sth)
disperato di (ALSO **per**)	desperate to (do sth)
dispiaciuto di (ALSO **per**)	sorry to (do sth)
felice di	happy to (do sth)
fiero di	proud to (do sth/of doing sth)
fortunato di (ALSO **a**)	lucky to (do sth)
grato di (ALSO **per**)	grateful to (do sth)
impaziente	impatient to (do sth)
incapace di	incapable of (doing sth)
incaricato di	charged with (doing sth)
irritato di	irritated at (doing sth)
libero di	free to (do sth)
lieto di	happy to (do sth)
onorato di	honored to (do sth)
responsabile di	responsible for (doing sth)
riconoscente di (ALSO **per**)	grateful to (do sth)
sicuro di	sure to (do sth)
soddisfatto di (ALSO **per**)	satisfied at (doing sth)
sorpreso di	surprised to (do sth)

stanco di	tired from (doing sth)
stufo di	sick and tired of (doing sth)

27.3 a **before an infinitive**

In keeping with the original meanings of **a** (see section 25.1.1), verbs and adjectives that take **a** before an infinitive often express some kind of movement, either physical or metaphorical, or a state or mental attitude. With **a**, the infinitive is always in the present tense, and is understood as referring to the same time as the main verb or to a subsequent moment in time.

27.3.1 Verbs that refer to the beginning, continuing, or ending of an action

attaccare a **cominciare a** (ALSO **col**) **incominciare a** **mettersi a** **ricominciare a** **riprendere a**	to start (to do sth/doing sth)
scoppiare a (usu **piangere**/**ridere**)	to burst out (laughing, crying)
continuare a **persistere a** (R2–3) **seguitare a**	to go on (doing sth)

27.3.2 Verbs that express movement (literal or figurative)

affrettarsi a	to hurry to (do sth)
andare a	to go to (do sth)
arrivare a (fig)	to get to the point of (doing sth)
buttarsi a (fig)	to throw oneself into (doing sth)
correre a	to run to (do sth)
fermarsi a	to stop to (do sth)
giungere a (fig)	to reach the point of (doing sth)
passare a	to pass (by) to (do sth)
precipitarsi a	to rush to (do sth)
salire a	to go up to (do sth)
scendere a	to go down to (do sth)
tornare a	to go back to (doing sth)
venire a	to come to do sth
voltarsi a	to turn (round) to do sth

27.3.3 Verbs that express a mental attitude or disposition (e.g. state, tendency, or will)

abbandonarsi a	to give oneself to (doing sth)
abituarsi a	to get used to (doing sth)
accingersi a (R2–3)	to prepare to (do sth)
adattarsi a	to adapt oneself to (doing sth)
allenarsi a	to train to (do sth)
apprestarsi a (R2–3)	to prepare to (do sth)
attardarsi a (R2–3)	to linger to (do sth)
concentrarsi a	to concentrate on (doing sth)
contribuire a	to contribute to (doing sth)
decidersi a	to make up one's mind to (do sth)
divertirsi a	to enjoy onself (doing sth)
esitare a (ALSO **nel** [R3])	to hesitate to (do sth)
essere tenuto a	to be required to (do sth)
far bene/male/meglio a	to do well/badly/better to (do sth)
fare presto a	to hurry to (do sth), to do sth easily
fare in tempo a	to be in time to (do sth)
farcela a (R1–2)	to manage to (do sth)
faticare a	to have difficulty in (doing sth)
imparare a	to learn to (do sth)
impegnarsi a (ALSO **di**)	to commit oneself to (doing sth)
insistere a (ALSO **nel**)	to insist on (doing sth)
limitarsi a	to limit oneself to (doing sth)
mirare a	to aim to (do sth)
prepararsi a	to get ready to (do sth)
prestarsi a (R2–3)	to offer to (do sth)
provare a	to try (doing sth)
rassegnarsi a	to resign oneself to (doing sth)
rinunciare a	to renounce (doing sth)
riuscire a	to manage to (do sth)
sbrigarsi a (R1–2)	to hurry to (do sth)
stentare a	to have difficulty in (doing sth)
tendere a	to tend to (do sth)

27.3.4 Verbs that express being or staying

essere a	to be in the process of (doing sth)
sono tutti a dormire	they are all sleeping
restare a	to stay (doing sth)
rimanere a	to stay (doing sth)
stare a (R1–2, cf. section 20.2)	to be (doing sth)
trovarsi a	to find oneself (doing sth)

27.3.5 Verb + direct object + **a** + infinitive

These verbs express helping, encouraging, or influencing a person (or, in some cases, thing) to do something.

abituare qu a	to accustom sb to (doing sth)
aiutare qu a	to help sb (to) (do sth)
autorizzare qu a	to authorise sb to (do sth)
chiamare qu a	to call sb to (do sth)
condannare qu a	to condemn sb (to do/doing sth)
condurre qu a	to lead sb to (do sth)
convincere qu a	to persuade sb to (do sth)
costringere qu a	to force sb to (do sth)
esortare qu a	to exhort sb to (do sth)
incitare qu a	to incite sb to (do sth)
incoraggiare qu a	to encourage sb to (do sth)
indurre qu a	to induce sb to (do sth)
invitare qu a	to invite sb to (do sth)
mandare a	
mandare a chiamare qu	to send for sb
mandare a dire a qu	to send word to sb
obbligare qu a	to force sb to (do sth)
persuadere qu a	to persuade sb to (do sth)
portare qu a	to take sb to (do sth)
predisporre qu a	to predispose sb to (do sth)
programmare qc a	to program sth to (do sth)
sfidare qu a	to challenge sb to (do sth)
spingere qu a	to drive sb to (do sth)
spronare qu a (R2–3)	to urge sb to (do sth)

27.3.6 Verb + indirect object + **a** + infinitive

insegnare a qu a	to teach sb to (do sth)

27.3.7 Adjectives + **a** and infinitive

Most Italian adjectives take **a** before an infinitive.

abile a (ALSO **nel**)	good at (doing sth)
abituato a	accustomed to (doing sth)
adatto a (ALSO **per**)	useful for (doing sth)
addetto a	responsible for (doing sth)
affaccendato (ALSO **nel**)	busy (doing sth)
attento a (ALSO **nel**)	careful to (do sth)
atto a (R2–3)	suitable for (doing sth)
buono a (R1–2, ALSO **per, da**)	
il cuoco è buono a fare la pasta	the cook is good at making pasta
la pasta è buona per sfamare i ragazzi	pasta is good for feeding young people

questa pasta è buona da mangiare	this pasta is good to eat
bravo a (ALSO **nel**)	good at (doing sth)
costretto a	obliged to (do sth)
deciso a (ALSO **nel**)	determined on (doing sth)
destinato a	destined to (do sth)
disponibile a	available to (do sth)
disposto a	prepared to (do sth)
efficace a (ALSO **nel, per**)	effective at (doing sth)
esitante a (ALSO **nel**)	hesitant in (doing sth)
forte a (R1–2, ALSO **nel**)	strong in (doing sth)
idoneo a	suitable for (doing sth)
incline a	inclined to (do sth)
intento a	intent on (doing sth)
interessato a	interested in (doing sth)
necessario a (ALSO **per**)	necessary for (doing sth)
occupato a (ALSO **nel**)	busy (doing sth)
preparato a (ALSO **per**)	prepared for (doing sth)
pronto a (ALSO **da, per**)	ready to (do sth)
prossimo a	close to (doing sth)
recalcitrante a (R2–3)	recalcitrant to (do sth)
riluttante a (R2–3, ALSO **nel**)	reluctant to (do sth)
sufficiente a (ALSO **da, per**)	sufficient for (doing sth)
valido a (ALSO **per**)	valid for (doing sth)
veloce a (ALSO **nel**)	quick at (doing sth)

NOTE: With the following adjectives, the verb in the infinitive has a passive meaning. In higher registers the adjectives take **a** (with the infinitive often reflexive), but in R1–2 the adjectives usually take **da**, e.g.:

La sua voce era bella a udirsi/udire (R2–3).
La sua voce era bella da udire (R1–2).
Her voice was beautiful to hear.

bello	beautiful
commovente	moving
difficile	difficult
facile	easy
impossibile	impossible
orribile	horrible
orribile a dirsi (R2–3)	*horribile dictu*
raro	rare
strano	strange
strano a dirsi	strange to say
terribile	terrible

27.3.8 **a** + infinitive in place of a **che** clause

This usage occurs with **avere**, **lasciare**, **trovare**, **sorprendere**. Cf. verbs of perception, section 27.1.3.

Elena ha trovato Tommaso a suonare il pianoforte.
= **Elena ha trovato Tommaso che suonava il pianoforte**.
Elena found Tommaso playing the piano.

It is also found in "cleft sentences" (see section 18.2). Note where the past tense is expressed:

Sono stati loro a dirmelo.
= **Sono loro che me l'hanno detto**.
It was they who told me.

It also occurs with **il primo**, **ultimo**, **solo**, **unico**, and with all ordinal numbers (cf. section 30.4), e.g.:

Tu sarai la prima/seconda/ultima/sola/unica a saperlo.
= **Tu sarai la prima/seconda/ultima/sola/unica che lo saprà**.
You will be the first/second/last/only one to know.

It also occurs with all cardinal numbers except one and generic quantifiers in the expression **essere** (**in**) **due** (etc.) **a**, e.g.:

Sono in quattro/mille/molti/pochi a saperlo.
= **Sono quattro/mille/molti/pochi a saperlo che lo sanno**.
There are four/a thousand/many/few people who know it.

27.4 da **before an infinitive**

Da before an infinitive can follow a verb, adjective, or noun. This construction expresses a consequence or an obligation.

27.4.1 After verbs

Da occurs with verbs of being and expresses compulsion. The **da** phrase may be the subject of the verb:

non c'è da vergognarsi/ meravigliarsi	there's nothing to be ashamed of/surprised at
viene da chiedersi se lei sta/stia dicendo la verità	one begins to wonder if she is telling the truth
mi veniva da ridere	I felt like laughing

or it may be the predicate of the verb:

il film è da vedere/vedersi (R.2–3)	the film is to be seen
restano/rimangono da fare tre cose	three things remain to be done
mi restano/rimangono da fare tre cose	I still have three things to do

For similar constructions with an indirect object, see section 32.1.1.

With several common verbs, **da** plus infinitive is used in such a way that a generic noun may be understood. This noun must sometimes be added to the English equivalent expression:

ho da fare	I have work/things to do, I am busy
ci ha dato da pensare	she gave us something to think about

sta facendo da mangiare	he's cooking
che c'è da mangiare/bere?	what is there to eat/drink?

27.4.2 After adjectives or adverbs

Da normally combines with **così**, **sì** (R3), **tale**, **talmente**, **tanto**, **abbastanza**. These words can sometimes be understood.

la proposta fu così/tanto intelligente da convincere tutti	the proposal was so intelligent as to convince everyone
ha agito in maniera strana, sì da destare sospetti (R3)	he acted strangely, such as to arouse suspicion
c'era una folla (**tale**) **da farti star male**	there was a crowd such as would make you feel unwell
è talmente evidente da non ammettere dubbi	it was so obvious as not to allow doubts
era abbastanza grande da/per capire certe cose	he was big enough to understand certain things
faceva un caldo da morire	it was terribly hot

27.4.3 After nouns

The expression **da** + infinitive may also be used as an adjective, immediately after a noun, e.g.:

è un film da vedere/vedersi (R2–3)	it's a film to see/be seen

27.5 per **before an infinitive**

Per before an infinitive can follow a verb, adjective or noun. It expresses purpose or cause.

27.5.1 After verbs

Per before an infinitive may occur after any verb, to express the purpose of the main verb. It corresponds to English *to*, *in order to*:

lavora per mantenere la famiglia	she works to support her family

With verbs of movement which take **a** before an infinitive, a phrase with **a** implies that the two actions both took place, but a phrase with **per** is ambiguous as to whether the aim was realized or not. A change of auxiliary is also required with certain verbs (cf. section 22.4):

sono corso a vederla	I ran and saw her
ho corso per vederla	I ran to see her

With a past infinitive, **per** expresses cause, and corresponds to English *because* or *through*:

si è ammalato per aver inalato gas tossici	he fell ill through inhaling toxic gasses
si è lamentato per/di non aver ricevuto l'invito	he complained because he had not received the invitation

27.5.2 After adjectives or adverbs

Per combines with **troppo**:

ho mangiato troppo per poter dormire subito	I've eaten too much to go to sleep immediately
lui è troppo giovane per capire	he is too young to understand

27.5.3 After nouns

Per is often equivalent to **da** (see section 25.12). However, stock phrases with **da** cannot be modified, whereas with **per** the verb can be modified as if in a normal sentence.

una macchina da/per cucire	a sewing machine
una macchina per cucire con il filo d'oro	a machine for sewing with gold thread
una macchina per cucire lentamente	a machine for sewing slowly

27.6 con, da, in + article before an infinitive

When **con** and **in** come before an infinitive, they always combine with the definite article (masculine singular: **il** or **lo**); **da** also has this usage, with certain meanings. There are a few verbs that can only take one of these prepositions before an infinitive, but in most cases these articulated prepositions are an alternative to other constructions, and are used in higher registers.

For the use of the infinitive with articulated prepositions to form subordinate clauses, see section 32.2.1.

27.6.1 con

Con followed by an infinitive may usually be replaced by a gerund, and tends to occur with the pair of verbs indicated below. It corresponds to English *by* + gerund.

(in)cominciare col (ALSO **per**) **fare qc**	to begin by (doing sth)
finire col (ALSO **per**) **fare qc**	to end up by (doing sth)

27.6.2 da

In keeping with the original meanings of **da** (see section 25.5), verbs and adjectives that take **da** before an infinitive often express some kind of distance, or beginning (i.e. moving away from something).

Verbs

astenersi dal	to abstain from (doing sth)
desistere dal	to desist from (doing sth)
diffidare qu dal (ALSO **a**)	to warn sb not to (do sth)
dissuadere qu dal	to dissuade sth from (doing sth)
guardarsi bene dal	to be careful not to (do sth)
morire dal ridere	to die laughing
scoraggiare qu dal	to discourage sb from (doing sth)
trattenersi dal	to stop oneself from (doing sth)

Adjectives

alieno dal	
often used in the negative, e.g.:	
non sono alieno dal consentire	I'm inclined to agree
lontano dal	
sono ben lontano dal credere che	I certainly don't believe that . . .
lungi dal	
sono lungi dal pensare una cosa simile	I wouldn't dream of thinking such a thing

27.6.3 in

Out of the three prepositions included here, this is the most commonly used in this construction. It corresponds to English *in*, *at*, *on* + gerund. The verbs, adjectives and nouns which take **in** express unity or skill or, rarely, state of mind:

Verbs

consistere nel	to consist of /lie in (doing sth)
essere nel	to lie in (doing sth)
esitare nel (ALSO **a**)	to hesitate (to do/in doing sth)
stare nel	to consist of /lie in (doing sth)

Adjectives

abile nel (ALSO **a**)	clever at (doing sth)
bravo nel (ALSO **a**)	good at (doing sth)
concorde nel	in agreement in (doing sth)

consistente nel fare qc	which consists in doing sth
gentile nel	kind in (doing sth)
il primo/ultimo nel (ALSO **a**)	the first/last to (do sth)

Also the expressions:

essere d'accordo nel fare qc	to agree on doing sth
essere maestro/specialista nel fare qc	to be a maestro/specialist in doing sth

Nouns

difficoltà, **fantasia**, **godimento**, **impassibilità**, **letizia**, **ritardo**, **sorpresa**, etc., e.g.:

Non ho avuto nessuna difficoltà nel chiedergli di restituirmi le chiavi.
I had no problem in asking him to give back the keys.

27.7 Prepositional constructions

This section includes verbs followed by another verb, where different prepositions (or no preposition) are associated with different meanings of the main verb.

accennare	**mi accennava di avvicinarmi** she was beckoning to me to come nearer **non accennava a cambiare idea** (R.2–3) she was showing no signs of changing her mind
ammonire (R.3)	**ammonì suo figlio di non frequentare più quella casa** he advised his son not to frequent that house any more **ammonì il suo amico a essere più pratico** he exhorted his friend to be more practical
apprendere (R.2–3)	**ho appreso di essere stato proposto per il comitato** I found out I had been nominated for the committee **il bambino ha appreso a leggere e a scrivere** the child has learned to read and write
aspettare	**aspetta di vederlo!** wait until you see him! **aspetta a partire!**

	don't leave yet!
	mi aspetto di vedervi alla cena
	I expect to see you at the dinner
avere	**ho da fare**
	I'm busy (lit I have [things] to do)
	ho da dirti una cosa
	I must tell you something
	ho una cosa da dirti
	I have something to tell you
	ebbe a dire che si dimetteva (R3)
	(NOTE: *passato remoto* only)
	he happened to say that he was resigning
aver paura/ vergogna	**avevo paura/vergogna di chiedergli i soldi che mi deve**
	I was afraid/ashamed to ask him for the money he owes me
	avevo paura/vergogna a chiedergli i soldi che mi deve
	I felt afraid/ashamed as I asked him for the money he owes me
badare	**bada di finire in tempo**
	make sure you finish on time
	bada a fare il tuo lavoro
	you just get on with your work
bastare	**per contattarmi, basta telefonare a questo numero**
	to contact me, just phone this number
	è molto triste, e una cena fuori non basterà a rallegrarlo
	he is very sad and a dinner out won't be enough to cheer him up
cominciare	**ha cominciato a servire il primo piatto alle otto**
	he began to serve/serving the first course at eight
	ha cominciato col servire il primo piatto
	he began by serving the first course
compiacersi (R3)	**si compiaceva a stuzzicarlo**
	she enjoyed teasing him
	il ministro si è finalmente compiaciuto di riceverci
	the minister finally deigned to receive us
consentire	**questo gli consente di rimanere inattivo**
	this allows him to remain inactive

	il comitato ha consentito a rivedere il caso the committee agreed to review the case
convenire	**gli conviene tacere** it is better for him to keep silent
	abbiamo convenuto di partire alle sette (R2–3) we agreed to leave at seven
decidere	**Chiara ha deciso di partire** Chiara has decided to leave
	Chiara si è decisa a partire Chiara has made up her mind to leave
determinare (R3)	**ha determinato di perseverare** he has resolved to persevere
	l'infarto ha determinato Giuseppe a cambiare vita the heart attack led Giuseppe to change his lifestyle
	mi sono determinato a confessare tutto I resolved to confess everything
disporre (R3)	**il comandante dispose di partire** (R3) the commandant decided to leave
	ha disposto i genitori a sentire la brutta notizia (R3) he prepared his parents to hear the bad news
	si è disposta a partire she prepared to leave
fare	in the expression **Come fare a . . . ,** e.g.: **come fai a conoscerlo?** (R1–2) how come you know him?
	fece per uscire, ma lei lo fermò con lo sguardo he made as if to leave, but she stopped him with a look
finire	**alle otto ho finito di mangiare** at eight I finished eating
	c'era troppa gente in casa, e sono finito a studiare in giardino there were too many people inside, and I ended up studying in the garden
	finirai per farlo arrabbiare / finirai col farlo arrabbiare you'll end up (by) making him angry
insistere	**insisteva di non conoscere nessuno degli imputati** (R2–3) he insisted (that) he knew none of the accused

	ha insistito a salutare tutti: c'è voluta un'ora he insisted on saying goodbye to everyone: it took an hour
	insisteva per incontrarmi appena possibile (R3) he insisted he should meet me as soon as possible
	ha institito nel dire che . . . he kept on saying that . . .
intendere	**intendevo di trovarmi tra persone amiche** (R3) I understood that I was among friends
	intendevo parlare con un amico I intended to speak with a friend
interessare	**non mi interessa parlare del passato** talking about the past doesn't interest me
	sono interessato a lavorare con voi I'm interested in working with you
	l'ho interessato a scrivere per quella facenda (R3) I interested him in writing about that affair
lasciare	**ho lasciato giocare i bambini tutta la mattina** I let the children play all morning
	il tuo comportamento lascia a desiderare your behaviour leaves something to be desired
mancare	**ho mancato a non dirtelo** (R2–3) I was wrong not to tell you
	ho mancato di dirtelo I forgot to tell you
pensare	**non pensa a sposarsi** she is not thinking of/about marrying
	non pensa di sposarsi she doesn't think she will marry
persuadersi	**si persuase di essere trascurato** he became convinced that he was being ignored
	mi sono persuaso a comprarla I made up my mind to buy it
risolvere (R3)	**ha risolto di raccontare tutto** he resolved to tell everything
	si è risolto a raccontare tutto he came to the decision to tell everything
riuscire	**non sono riuscito a finire il lavoro** I couldn't (manage to) finish the job

	non mi è riuscito di finire il lavoro it wasn't possible for me to finish the job
sbagliare	**ho sbagliato a seguire le tue indicazioni** EITHER I was wrong to follow your instructions (i.e. I shouldn't have followed them) OR I followed your instructions incorrectly **ho sbagliato nel seguire le tue indicazioni** I followed your instructions incorrectly
servire	**non serve gridare** there's no point shouting **questo bottone serve a chiudere il programma** this button is for closing the program
stare	**che stai a dire?** (cf. section 20.2) what are you saying? **non posso parlare adesso: sto per partire** I can't talk now: I am about to leave
tentare	**ho tentato di aprire il file, ma era corrotto** I tried to open the file, but it was corrupt **mi ha tentato a fermarmi un'altra settimana** he tempted me to stay another week
vedere	**ho visto quell'uomo prendere soldi dall'imputato** I saw that man taking money from the accused **non ce lo vedo proprio, Matteo, a lavorare senza paga** (R1) I really can't see Matteo working for nothing **vedrò di mandarti l'indirizzo in settimana** I'll make sure I send you the address within the week
venire	**se compri tutto, ti viene a costare un occhio** if you buy everything, it will cost you an arm and a leg **mi viene da piangere** I feel like crying

27.7.1 No preposition in Italian: preposition in English

Verbs not listed above which take no preposition before a following noun but correspond to English verbs that do (cf. chapter 4):

approfondire qc	to go deeply into sth
approvare qc/qu	to approve of sth/sb
ascoltare qc/qu	to listen to sth/sb
aspettare qc/qu	to wait for sth/sb
calpestare qc	to trample on sth
cercare qc/qu	to look for sth/sb
chiedere qc (**a qu**)	to ask (sb) for sth
commentare qc	to comment on sth
compensare qc	to compensate for sth
BUT **compensare qu di/per qc**	to compensate sb for sth
disapprovare qc/qu	to disapprove of sth/sb
domandare qc (**a qu**)	to ask (sb) for sth
guardare qc/qu	to look at sth/sb
BUT **guardare a qc/qu** (R2–3)	to look to sth/sb
incendiare qc	to set fire to sth
operare qu	to operate on sb
pagare qc	to pay for sth (i.e. the thing bought), OR to pay sth (e.g. an account)
BUT **pagare qu**	to pay sb
ho pagato questa giacca cinquanta euro OR **ho pagato cinquanta euro per questa giacca**	I paid 50 euro for this jacket
pregare Dio, la Madonna, i santi	to pray to God, the Virgin, the saints
BUT **pregare qu**	to beg sb
piangere qc/qu	to weep for/over sth/sb
presiedere qc	to preside over sth
sbagliare qc	to make a mistake about sth
soffrire qc (e.g. **caldo**, **fame**)	to suffer from sth (e.g. heat, hunger)
BUT **soffrire di una malattia**	to suffer from an illness
sognare qc/qu	to dream of sth/sb
tacere qc	to keep silent about sth
vegliare qu	to keep vigil over sb (sick or dead)
BUT **vegliare su qc/qu**	to keep watch over sth/sb
votare qc/qu	to vote for sth/sb
BUT **votare per qc/qu** (R1–2)	to vote for sth/sb

27.7.2 Preposition in Italian: no preposition in English

Italian verbs which take a preposition before a following verb or noun but correspond to English verbs that do not:

abusare di qc	to abuse sth
abusare di qu, (see section 2.2)	
accorgersi di qc/qu	to notice sth/sb
adempiere a qc (R.2–3)	to fulfil sth
ALSO **adempiere qc**	
appropriarsi di qc	to appropriate sth
assistere a qc	to witness sth
chiedere qc a qu	to ask sb for sth
congratularsi con qu (**di qc**)	to congratulate sb (for/on sth)
contravvenire a qc (R.2–3)	to contravene sth
disporre di qc/qu	to have sth/sb at one's disposal
domandare qc a qu	to ask sb for sth
dubitare di qc/qu	to doubt sth/sb
esercitarsi a fare qc	to practice doing sth
fare bene a qc/qu	to benefit sth/sb
fare male a qc/qu	to hurt sth/sb
fidarsi di qc/qu	to trust sth/sb
giocare a qc (sport/game)	to play sth
giovare a qc/qu	to benefit sth/sb
influire su qc/qu	to influence sth/sb
BUT **influenzare qu/qc**	to influence sth/sb
rispondere a qc/qu	to answer sth/sb
servirsi di qc	to use sth
somigliare a qc/qu	to resemble sth/sb
ALSO **assomigliare, rassomigliare**	
telefonare a qu	to telephone sb
ubbidire a qc/qu	to obey sth/sb
volere bene a qu	to love sb

27.7.3 Some prepositions which do not correspond in Italian and English

accontentarsi di qc	to make do with sth
chiedere di qu	to ask after sb
dipendere da qc/qu	to depend on sth/sb
perdonare qc a qu	to forgive sb for sth
ricordare qc a qu	to remind sb of sth
togliere qc a qu	to take sth from sb

28 Use of tenses

The main functions of the tenses in Italian are listed here under two major types of meaning: (i) temporal, referring to time – past, present, future; (ii) modal, referring to the speaker's attitude to what s/he is saying (command, opinion, politeness, etc.). The category of aspect, referring to how an action is viewed, relates only to certain tenses and will be discussed as necessary.

28.1 Present tense (faccio, vado)

Temporal functions	*Modal functions*
Any kind of PRESENT, including reference to a general state of affairs which includes the PRESENT, e.g.: **Ti ascolto**. I'm listening to you. **Accetto con piacere**. I accept with pleasure. **Adesso so che fare**. Now I know what to do. **Oggi fa freddo**. It's cold today.	INTENTION in FUTURE, e.g.: **Se mi scassi la macchina, ti picchio**. If you smash my car, I'll hit you. **Mi fai un caffé?** Will you make me a coffee? ABILITY in general present, e.g.: **Parla tre lingue**. She speaks three languages.

R1* vulgar or indecent
R1 informal, colloquial
R2 neutral, unmarked
R3 formal, written
Italian words and expressions are R2 unless otherwise indicated. See also p. 5.

Temporal functions	*Modal functions*
Arrivo sempre alle cinque. I always arrive at five. **Il Po è il fiume più lungo d'Italia**. The Po is the longest river in Italy. **Come dice Dante nel *De Vulgari Eloquentia*, . . .** As Dante says in the *De Vulgari Eloquentia*, . . . FUTURE (R1–2), e.g.: **Domani andiamo al lago**. Tomorrow we're going to the lake. **L'anno prossimo ricorre il centenario della nascita dell'artista**. Next year the artist's centenary will be/is being celebrated. IMMEDIATE PAST (especially R1), e.g.: **Arrivo proprio adesso: cos'è successo?** I've arrived just now: what's happened? PAST in narratives ("Historic Present"), e.g.: **Ieri sera vado al cinema e chi vedo? Emilia!** Last night I go to the movies and who do I see? Emilia! **Ero fermo al semaforo, di colpo si avvicina uno, e fa "Dammi i soldi!"** I was stopped at the traffic lights, suddenly a man comes up, and he goes "Give me your money!" PAST continuing to PRESENT (see section 25.5.2), e.g.: **Vivo qui da due mesi**. I've been living here for two months.	**Da questa finestra si vedono le montagne**. From this window you can see the mountains. IMPERATIVE (see also section 28.2 and chapter 30), e.g.: **Adesso tu torni a casa e mi riporti le chiavi, capito?** Now you go back home and bring me the keys, is that clear?

Temporal functions	*Modal functions*
PAST in minutes of meetings, e.g.: **La riunione ha inizio alle 11.25. Il presidente dà il benvenuto ai nuovi componenti del comitato . . .** The meeting opened at 11.25am. The Chair welcomed the new members of the commmitee . . . PAST in curriculum vitae, e.g.: **Maria Rossi studia all'università di Roma dove si laurea nel 2002 con una tesi su . . .** Maria Rossi studied at the university of Rome where she graduated in 2002 with a thesis on . . .	

28.2 Future tense (farò, andrò)

Temporal functions	*Modal functions*
FUTURE (but increasingly rare in R1), e.g.: **Lo sapremo domani**. We'll find out tomorrow. FUTURE in PAST (R3), e.g.: **Conobbe un giovane deputato. Dieci anni dopo, egli diventerà Presidente del partito**. He met a young member of parliament. Ten years later, he was to become President of the Party.	INTENTION, e.g.: **Domani verrò senz'altro**. I'll come tomorrow for sure. IMPERATIVE (see also section 28.1 and chapter 30), e.g.: **Lo farai quando te lo dico io**. You'll do it when I tell you. **Non ucciderai (= non uccidere)**. Thou shalt not kill. SUPPOSITION in the PRESENT, e.g.: **A quest'ora sarà a casa**. At this hour he must be at home.

28.3 Future Perfect tense (avrò fatto, sarò andato)

Temporal functions	*Modal functions*
Anteriority in FUTURE, e.g.: **Quando lo vedremo, avrò finito il lavoro**. When we see him, I will have finished the job. **Chiuderanno la sala dopo che tutti saranno usciti**. They will lock the room after everyone has gone out.	SUPPOSITION anterior to the PRESENT, e.g.: **A quest'ora sarà già uscito di casa**. At this hour he must have left the house already.

28.4 Present Conditional tense (farei, andrei)

	Modal functions
	POLITENESS, e.g.: **Vorrei due francobolli per l'Australia**. I would like two stamps for Australia. **Potresti prestarmi la penna?** Could you lend me your pen? ALLEGATION of PRESENT action (made by third party, the speaker is non-committal), e.g.: **Il Presidente sarebbe pronto a dimettersi**. The President is said to be ready to resign. HYPOTHESIS in PRESENT or FUTURE (see section 31.1), e.g.: **Ti aiuterei volentieri se potessi, ma . . .** I would gladly help you if I could, but . . .

28.5 Conditional Perfect tense (avrei fatto, sarei andato)

Temporal functions	*Modal functions*
FUTURE in PAST, e.g.: **Il dottore ha detto che sarebbe tornato domani**. The doctor said he would come back tomorrow. **Mi aveva promesso che sarebbe venuto ieri, ma non si è fatto vedere**. He promised he would come yesterday, but he didn't show himself.	ALLEGATION of PAST action (made by third party, the speaker is non-committal), e.g.: **Il Presidente avrebbe consultato i leader di tutti i partiti**. The President is said to have consulted the leaders of all parties. HYPOTHESIS in PAST (see section 31.1), e.g.: **Ti avrei mandato l'invito, ma ho perso il tuo indirizzo**. I would have sent the invitation, but I lost your address.

28.6 Perfect tenses – *Passato Prossimo* and *Passato Remoto*

The *Passato Prossimo* (PP) and *Passato Remoto* (PR) are both Perfect tenses (see section 28.7). In general PR is being used less and less, especially in speech, and is being replaced by PP. The difference between these two tenses is complex and often subtle and cannot be explained by any single criterion. There are four parameters that may bear on the choice of tense.

(i) *Regional differences*
In R1–2 speech, the two tenses are both in use in Central and Southern Italy, especially Tuscany. In the North, only PP is used (as the dialects have not used PR for some centuries); in the far South – Sicily, southern Calabria and southern Puglia – PR is in common use, though PP is gaining ground.

(ii) *Type of language use*
PR is used more in writing than in speech. In a novel, PR may be used for the narrative and PP for direct speech.

(iii) *Formality*
The more formal the situation, the more likely is the use of PR. Thus PR is widely used in R3 writing, and also in R2 but not if the writing is based on, or imitates, speech. In the spoken language, PR is generally used in the third person, to "tell the story," while PP is used in the first and second persons, for reference to the people involved in the conversation.

(iv) *Distance in the past*

In general PR is used for events that are actually in the distant past or are felt as distant. In R3 writing, PR is used for actions considered as past events without any connection to the present, while PP is used for actions in a more recent time frame that includes the present. In central Italy, the two tenses may be used to express the "psychological" distance that the speaker feels from the events, e.g.:

Feci un colloquio ma non ebbi il posto.
I had an interview but I didn't get the job.
Ho fatto un colloquio e mi hanno assunto.
I had an interview and they hired me.

In the far South regions, PR was, until recent times, the only perfect tense in the dialects and so was used in Italian for all past actions, even in the very recent past. An oft-cited example is:

Dormisti bene? (first thing in the morning)
Did you sleep well?

This usage is receding.

Switching between the tenses

It is wrong to switch indiscriminately between the two perfect tenses. Whichever tense is chosen in a given situation must be maintained and should be changed only if there is some change in meaning, e.g.:

Lo conobbi a un ricevimento nel '68 e ieri, dopo tutti questi anni, l'ho rivisto per caso.
I met him at a party back in 1968 and yesterday, after all these years, I saw him again by chance.

28.7 Imperfect and Perfect

The term "Perfect" covers *Passato Prossimo* and *Passato Remoto*, since there is no difference between them in terms of their opposition to the Imperfect. The distinction between the *Imperfetto* and the two Perfect tenses is one of aspect, i.e. it concerns not the action in itself but how it is presented. Most actions or states can be referred to by either tense, depending on how the speaker views them or wishes to present them. Verb forms in English do not mark the distinction so clearly as in Italian, e.g. *would do*, *used to do*, *was doing* are imperfect, but *did* can be either perfect or imperfect. Compare the two meanings of *was* in the following:

Chi ha mangiato il Panettone? – Sono stato io.
Who ate the Panettone? – It was me.
Chi suonava il pianoforte stamattina alle 10? – Ero io.
Who was playing the piano this morning at 10? – It was me.

The Perfect expresses actions or states as individual, closed events in the past, irrespective of how long they took. The Imperfect expresses actions or states that happened in the past at the same time as something else,

stated or implied in the text: it says simply that they were taking place at a certain moment, without regard to their beginning or end. Compare:

La dominazione araba della Sicilia durò 250 anni, fino alla conquista normanna.

The Arab domination of Sicily lasted for 250 years, until the Norman conquest.

In quell'istante ho visto una donna davanti a casa mia. Stava in piedi e cantava . . .

In that instant I saw a woman outside my house. She was standing and singing . . .

In telling a story, the Perfect says what happened next, in the foreground, and moves the story forward. The Imperfect sets the scene and the background, and then interrupts the narrative flow to 'pause' the action for comment or descriptions, e.g.:

C'era una volta un pezzo di legno. Un giorno Mastro Ciliegia cercò di tagliarlo, ma il pezzo di legno pianse e si lamentò. Così lo regalò al suo amico Geppetto, che era molto povero e voleva farne un burattino. Quella sera anche lui cercò di tagliarlo . . .

Once upon a time there was a piece of wood. One day Maestro Ciliegia tried to cut it but the piece of wood wept and complained. So he gave it to his friend Geppetto, who was very poor and wanted to make a puppet out of it. That evening he too tried to cut it . . .

Two or more verbs in the Perfect usually refer to successive events. A verb in the Imperfect is usually understood as simultaneous to another verb, whether in the Imperfect or Perfect. Compare:

Quando Matteo è entrato, Chiara è uscita.

(Implies she left because he came in.)

Quando Matteo è entrato, Chiara usciva.

(Means that she was already leaving when he arrived.)

The Imperfect may express habitual actions, e.g.:

Quando Matteo entrava, Chiara usciva.

Whenever Matteo came in, Chiara would go out.

Tutte le domeniche, Tommaso si alzava tardi e faceva colazione al bar.

Every Sunday, Tommaso used to get up late and have breakfast at the bar.

With verbs of knowing, the meaning changes radically according to the choice of past aspect, e.g.:

Ho saputo la verità.

I learned/found out the truth.

Sapevo la verità ma ho taciuto.

I knew (was aware of) the truth but I kept silent.

Ho conosciuto tuo fratello ieri sera.

I met your brother last night (for the first time).

Conoscevo già tuo fratello ma non tua sorella.

I already knew your brother but not your sister (i.e. I was acquainted with him).

28.7.1 Imperfect tense: other uses

Temporal functions	*Modal functions*
PAST continuing to some point in the PAST (see section 25.5.2), e.g.: **Vivevo lì da due mesi**. I had been living there for two months. FUTURE in PAST (R1–2, cf. section 28.5), e.g.: **Il dottore ha detto che tornava il giorno dopo**. The doctor said that he was coming back the next day. **Mi ha promesso stamattina che telefonava domani**. He promised me this morning that he would phone tomorrow. PAST in R3 instead of Perfect, to confer high status to events so described, e.g.: **Dante nasceva nel 1265**. Dante was born in 1265. ALSO in sports journalism: **Maldini pareggiava all'89°**. Maldini equalized in the 89th minute.	POLITENESS, e.g.: **Volevo chiedere una informazione**. I would like to ask for some information. **. . ., volevo dire, . . .** . . ., I mean, . . . HYPOTHESIS in PAST (cf. section 31.1), e.g.: **Potevi dirle tutto: ormai è troppo tardi**. You could have told her everything: now it's too late. **Se lo sapevo non ci andavo** (R1). If I had known, I wouldn't have gone. HYPOTHESIS, esp in games (R1), e.g.: **Facciamo che io ero il re e tu eri la regina**. Let's say I am the king and you are the queen.

28.8 Pluperfect tense (*Trapassato Prossimo* – avevo fatto, ero andato)

Temporal functions	*Modal functions*
ANTERIORITY to PAST, e.g.: **Dopo che tutti avevano mangiato, l'orchestra ha cominciato a suonare**. After everyone had eaten, the orchestra began to play. PAST in PAST, e.g.: **Ha detto che l'aveva già fatto**. He said he had already done it.	HYPOTHESIS in PAST (cf. section 28.5), e.g.: **Senza quell'incidente, a quest'ora eravamo arrivati**. Without that accident, we would have arrived by now. PAST in POLITE REQUESTS (R1, replaces the Perfect), e.g.: **Ti ricordi che ti avevo chiesto (= ho chiesto) la macchina per oggi? Potrei averla?** You remember I asked you for the car today: could I have it?

28.9 Past Anterior tense (*Trapassato Remoto* – ebbi fatto, fui andato)

Temporal functions	
Temporal function Very rare, even in R3: in a temporal subordinate clause, ANTERIORITY TO PAST expressed by *Passato Remoto*, e.g.: **Quando tutti ebbero mangiato, l'orchestra cominciò a suonare**. When everyone had eaten, the orchestra began to play. The following construction is restricted to literary fiction: **Arrivata che fu, si sedette a capotavola**. When she had arrived, she sat at the head of the table. **Mangiato che ebbe la carne, bevve un calice di vino**. When she had eaten the bread, she drank a goblet of wine.	

28.10 Modals

The modal verbs **dovere**, **potere** and **volere** express a variety of nuances which correspond to different English expressions. Here are some of the most important.

deve dormire	she must/has to sleep
deve aver dormito	she must have slept
ha dovuto dormire	she had to sleep (= was obliged to sleep)
doveva dormire	she had to sleep/used to have to sleep R1–2: she should have slept
doveva aver dormito	she had to have slept
aveva dovuto dormire	she had had to sleep, she had been obliged to sleep
dovrà dormire	she will have to sleep
dovrebbe dormire	she should/ought to sleep, she should be asleep
avrebbe dovuto dormire	she should have slept
può farlo	he can/may do it
può averlo fatto	he may have done it
ha potuto farlo	he managed to do it

poteva farlo	he could do it, he used to be able to do it R1–2: he could have done it
poteva averlo fatto	he could have done it (= it was possible that he did it)
aveva potuto farlo	he had been able to do it
potrà farlo	he will be able to do it
potrebbe farlo	he could/might be able to do it
potrebbe averlo fatto	he could have done it (= it could be that he did it)
avrebbe potuto farlo	he could have done it/he would have been able to do it
vuole lavorare	she wants to work
vorrà lavorare	she will want to work
ha voluto lavorare	she insisted on working
non ha voluto lavorare	she refused to work
voleva lavorare	she wanted to work, she used to want to work
vorrebbe lavorare	she would like to work
avrebbe voluto lavorare	she would have liked to work
vorrebbe aver lavorato	she would like to have worked/she wishes she had worked

29 Sequence of tenses

The term "sequence of tenses" – Italian grammars traditionally use the Latin expression *consecutio temporum* – covers the relationship between the tense of the verb in the main clause and the tense of the verb in a subordinate clause. In some cases the subordinate verb may be in the same tense as it would be if it were in a main clause, i.e. it simply refers to the time of the action or state being indicated. But in other cases the subordinate tense must be selected according to whether the action or state it refers to is simultaneous, preceding, or following, with respect to the action or state of the main verb.

29.1 Sequence of tenses in the indicative

When the verb of the subordinate clause is in the indicative, in most cases it may be in the same tense as if it were in a main clause (as is the case in English), e.g.:

La mostra *aprirà* all'inizio dell'anno prossimo.
The exhibition will open at the beginning of next year.
Il comitato ha deciso due anni fa che la mostra *aprirà* all'inizio dell'anno prossimo.
The committee decided two years ago that the exhibition will open at the beginning of next year.

The following exceptions should be noted:

(i) When the main verb is in the *Passato Remoto*, the subordinate verb cannot normally be in the *Passato Remoto* but must be in a pluperfect tense, either *Trapassato Prossimo* or *Trapassato Remoto* (cf. section 28.8). However, the *Passato Prossimo* may be found in both clauses, e.g.:

R1* vulgar or indecent
R1 informal, colloquial
R2 neutral, unmarked
R3 formal, written
Italian words and expressions are R2 unless otherwise indicated. See also p. 5.

Allora Carlo ammise che Lucia non lo aveva insultato (NOT **insultò**).
Then Carlo admitted that Lucia had not insulted him/did not insult him.
Allora Carlo ha ammesso che Lucia non lo aveva insultato (OR **ha insultato**).
Then Carlo admitted that Lucia had not insulted him/did not insult him.

(ii) The "future in the past" must be expressed by the Past Conditional, not the Present Conditional. It is important to note that while English uses both these tenses after a main verb in the past, with different meanings, the Past Conditional must always be used in Italian, e.g.:

Matteo ha detto che sarebbe venuto a trovarmi.
Matteo said that he would come to see me (implying the speaker believes Matteo will or might carry out his promise).
Matteo said that he would have come to see me (implying that it is no longer possible).

The future in the past may also be expressed by the Imperfect, especially in R1–2, and by the imperfect of **dovere**, eg:

Matteo ha detto che veniva a trovarmi.
Matteo said he was coming to see me/would come to see me.
Ho riflettuto a lungo su ciò che doveva succedere.
I thought for a long time about what was (about) to happen.

(iii) In object clauses, the Imperfect is sometimes used, after a main verb in the past, to refer to situations that are true in the present, e.g.:

Allora è vero! Me l'aveva detto, Elena, che eri/sei malato.
So it's true! Elena had told me you were/are sick.

29.2 Sequence of tenses in the subjunctive

The choice of tense for verbs in the subjunctive in subordinate clauses depends on (i) the tense of the main verb (past or present/future) and (ii) whether the action or state of the subordinate clause is **simultaneous**, **preceding**, or **following** with respect to the main clause.

29.2.1 Main verb in the Present or Future

All four tenses of the subjunctive may be used, according to the meaning of the subordinate clause, e.g.:

Immagino che tu sia stanco.
I imagine you are tired.
Suppongo che Giuseppe conoscesse bene il problema.
I suppose Giuseppe understood the issue well.
Non so proprio dove sia andato mio fratello.
I really don't know where my brother has gone/went.
Mi domando ora dove Tommaso avesse conosciuto quel tipo.
I wonder now where Tommaso had met that bloke.

For reference to the future the Present Subjunctive or Future Indicative is used, e.g.:

Credo che Tommaso vada/andrà dal dentista domani.
I think Tommaso is going to the dentist tomorrow.

However, with main verbs which can imply only a future event, the Future is not used, e.g.:

Voglio che Tommaso vada dal dentista domani (NOT **andrà)**.
I want Tommaso to go to the dentist tomorrow.

29.2.2 Main verb in the Past or Conditional

The Present and Perfect Subjunctive may not be used. If the action or state of the subordinate clause is simultaneous with the main clause, the Imperfect Subjunctive is used, e.g.:

Non sapevo dove andassero i miei amici.
I didn't know where my friends were going.

If the subordinate clause follows the main clause in time, the Past Conditional or Imperfect Subjunctive may be used, e.g.:

Non sapevo dove sarebbero andati/andassero i miei amici.
I didn't know where my friends would go.

If the subordinate clause precedes the main clause in time, the Pluperfect Subjunctive is used:

Non sapevo dove fossero andati i miei amici.
I didn't know where my friends had gone.

Note the following particular usages:

(i) The *Passato Prossimo* acts like a true past tense if it refers to events or actions in specific moments in the past, but acts like a present tense if it refers to states set in periods of time which include the present, e.g.:

In quel momento ho sospettato che lei sapesse la verità.
At that moment I suspected that she knew the truth.

Ho sempre sospettato che lei sappia la verità.
I have always suspected that she knows the truth.

(ii) The Present Conditional in a main clause requires the Imperfect Subjunctive in the subordinate clause. The Present Subjunctive is also often used and, though frowned on by critics, is becoming more common in R2, e.g.:

Non vorrei che domani ci fosse una barriera tra i due gruppi.
Non vorrei che domani ci sia una barriera tra i due gruppi (R1–2).
I wouldn't want there to be a barrier between the two groups tomorrow.

(iii) After **come se**, only the Imperfect and Pluperfect Subjunctive may be used, regardless of the tense of the main clause (cf. section 30.4.10), e.g.:

Parla come se non fosse convinta di quel che dice.
She is speaking as if she is/was/were not convinced of what she's saying.

Ti tratteranno come se non ti avessero mai conosciuto.
They will treat you as if they had never met you.

30 The Subjunctive

The Subjunctive mood is alive and well in contemporary Italian. Although in R1 and casual conversation it is often replaced by the Indicative, in more formal styles it is often compulsory (and its imperfect tense endings are very distinctive), and it must be mastered by the student at an advanced level. It appears to be used somewhat more in the North than in the South.

The Subjunctive appears both in subordinate clauses (as its English name suggests, though in Italian it is *congiuntivo*) and also in main clauses of many different types. In some cases the Subjunctive is compulsory and thus conveys no extra meaning in the sentence, while in others, the Subjunctive and Indicative express different meanings. In many other cases, both moods are possible and the difference between them is one of nuance or register.

It is impossible to give a definition of the Subjunctive that covers all its various uses. However, there are some features that account for the majority of uses and will help the student acquire a more confident mastery of this mood. The Subjunctive is, in many ways, the opposite or complement of the Indicative mood. Verbs in the Indicative usually make statements and denials and ask questions about matters that are assumed to relate to the world of reality. Verbs in the Subjunctive, on the other hand, may refer to exactly the same events or facts but not to these events or facts *in themselves*. They may be referred to as being part of the background reason why something else happened (usually in a subordinate clause); or they may be referred to as being presented from some particular point of view, that of the speaker or someone else; or they may not be real events or facts but rather wishes or imaginings on the part of the speaker.

R1* vulgar or indecent
R1 informal, colloquial
R2 neutral, unmarked
R3 formal, written
Italian words and expressions are R2 unless otherwise indicated. See also p. 5.

The many uses of the Subjunctive are grouped here according to the grammatical structure in which they occur and according to the meaning of those structures. Cases where the choice between Indicative and Subjunctive expresses different meanings are explained in full. Alternatives to the Subjunctive – especially the use of the infinitive – are also indicated.

30.1 The Subjunctive in main clauses

The Subjunctive is used in main clauses to express wishes, commands, and incredulous questions.

30.1.1 Wishes

Dio vi benedica!
(May) God bless you!
(Che) possiate avere tutto il successo che meritate!
May you have all the success you deserve!
Vinca il migliore!
May the best one win!
(Se) vedessi che roba!
If you could only see what it is!
(Magari) non l'avessi mai detto!
If only I had never said it!

30.1.2 Third person imperative

The subjunctive is used as the imperative with the **Lei** and **Loro** form of address, though **Loro** is rapidly being replaced by **voi** in modern Italian (cf. section 16.5), e.g.:

Dottoressa Rossi, venga (**pure**)**, s'accomodi!**
(Please) come in, Ms Rossi, take a seat!
Dottori, vengano (**pure**)**, s'accomodino!** (R3) = **Venite, accomodatevi!**
(Please) come in, take a seat!

30.1.3 Third person exhortations

The subjunctive is also used in exhortations said of a third person, including generic or impersonal subjects, e.g.:

Se non sono convinti, lo dicano!
If they are not convinced, let them say so!
Chi non ha ancora comprato il libro, venga avanti!
All those who have not yet bought the book, come to the front!
Che non si ripeta!
Let it not be repeated!

Costi quel che costi!
Whatever it costs!

30.1.4 Questions

The Subjunctive expresses surprise or scepticism, e.g.:

Che sia finito?
Is it over (I wonder)?
Che fosse geloso?
Could it be that he was jealous?

30.2 The Subjunctive in noun clauses

The Subjunctive may be used in noun clauses, depending on the meaning of the main clause. This meaning may be expressed in a verb or verbal expression or some other component of the main clause. This occurs with both subject and object noun clauses. In many cases, these noun clauses are replaced by **di** + infinitive when the subjects of the two clauses are the same, e.g.:

Temo che tu l'abbia offeso.
I am afraid you have offended him.
Temo di averlo offeso.
I am afraid I have offended him.

30.2.1 With main clauses expressing emotion

The Subjunctive is used after main clauses expressing emotion, regardless of the truth or otherwise of the subordinate clause. If the two subjects are the same, an infinitive is used, preceded by **di**.

(i) *Verbs/expressions*

essere contento/scontento che	to be pleased/displeased that
essere felice/infelice che	to be happy/unhappy that
essere deluso che	to be disappointed that
essere sorpreso/stupito che	to be surprised that
aver paura che	to be afraid that
meravigliarsi che	to be amazed that
rammaricarsi che	to regret that
dispiacere, rincrescere che	to be sorry that
mi dispiace/rincresce che . . .	I am sorry that
stupirsi che	to be surprised that
temere che	to fear that

(ii) *Expressions*

meno male che (Indicative in R.1–2)	just as well that
che peccato che	what a pity that

30.2.2 With main clauses expressing opinion, doubt, uncertainty, or certainty

(a) *With verbs and expressions of opinion and belief*

The Subjunctive is usual, though the Indicative is often used in casual speech. The Subjunctive is even more likely to be used if the verbs are in the negative.

ammettere che	to suppose that
credere che	to believe that
desumere che (R3)	to infer that
essere certo/sicuro che	to be sure/certain that
essere convinto che	to be convinced that
immaginar(si) che	to imagine that
intuire che	to intuit that
pensare che	to think that
ritenere che	to maintain that
sembrare	to seem that
mi sembra che	it seems to me
sostenere che	to claim that
supporre che	to suppose that

NOTE Statements of religious belief usually take the Indicative, but in the negative take the Subjunctive, e.g.:

Credo che Dio esiste.
I believe that God exists.
Non credo che Dio esista.
I do not believe that God exists.

(b) *With verbs and expressions of certainty and conviction*

The Subjunctive is used with such expressions in the negative and interrogative, and in the affirmative is often used, in R3, when the subject of the verb is the first person, e.g.:

Non sono convinto che la sua interpretazione sia giusta.
I am not convinced that her interpretation is right.
Sono convinto che volessero solo scherzare (R3).
I am convinced they only wanted to play a joke.

essere sicuro/certo che	to be sure that
essere convinto che	to be convinced that
non aver dubbi che	to have no doubt that

30.2.3 With main clauses expressing knowing and understanding

The Subjunctive is often used in the negative, and especially with reference to the past, e.g.:

Non sanno che Elena è già partita.
They don't know that Elena has already left.
Non sapevano che Elena fosse già partita.
They didn't know that Elena had already left.

capire/comprendere che	to understand that
rendersi conto che	to realize that
sapere che	to know that

With the following "negative" verb, the Subjunctive is always used:

ignorare che	to be unaware that

NOTE when **capire** and **comprendere** mean "quite understand" they take the Subjunctive, even in the affirmative, e.g.:

Capisco che Matteo sia molto impegnato, ma non può liberarsi per almeno mezz'ora?

I perfectly appreciate that Matteo is very busy, but can't he get away for at least half an hour?

30.2.4 Saying

The Subjunctive may be used (especially in R3) after verbs of saying in the negative, e.g.:

Il ministro non ha dichiarato che le sculture debbano essere restituite.

The minister did not declare that the sculptures must be returned.

affermare che	to state that
asserire che (R3)	to assert that
dichiarare che	to declare that
dire che	to say that

With the following "negative" verbs of saying, the Subjunctive is always used:

escludere che (R2–3)	to refuse to admit that
negare che	to deny that
rifiutare che	to reject that

NOTE With **si dice**, the Subjunctive expresses hearsay, while the Indicative merely reports that something is being said:

Si dice che il ragazzo si sia messo con una brutta compagnia.

It is said that the boy has got into bad company.

30.2.5 Illusion, dream, and pretense

far finta/fingere che (R3)	to pretend that
illudersi che	to delude oneself that
immaginarsi che	to imagine that
mettere il caso che	to suppose that
sognare che	to dream that

30.2.6 With main clauses expressing wanting

If the subjects of the two clauses are the same the verb in the subordinate clause will be in the infinitive; if they are different the subjunctive is used, e.g.:

Volete che vengano a trovarci?
Do you want them to come and see us?
Tommaso non vedeva l'ora che cominciassero le vacanze.
Tommaso couldn't wait for the holidays to begin.

volere	to want
desiderare	to want
preferire	to prefer
non vedere l'ora	to be unable to wait (for)

30.2.7 Permission and prohibition

permettere che	to permit
OR **permettere a qu di** + infinitive	
evitare che	to avoid
vietare che	to forbid
OR **vietare a qu di** + infinitive	
impedire che	to prevent
OR **impedire a qu di** + infinitive	
proibire che	to prohibit
OR **proibire a qu di** + infinitive	

30.2.8 With impersonal verbs

Most impersonal expressions require a following Subjunctive if followed by a **che** clause. This construction is common when referring to a specific person. When making general statements, or when it is clearly understood who is being referred to, they often take an infinitive (cf. section 27.1). In this case, all the verbs in the following list may be used with an indirect object pronoun specifying the person concerned, with the exception of **bisogna** and **vale la pena**, which are only used for general statements, e.g.:

Conviene viaggiare in prima classe se uno se lo può permettere.
It is better to travel first class, if one can afford it.
Conviene che tu prenda il treno delle quattro (R.2–3).
Ti conviene prendere il treno delle quattro (R.1–2).
It is better for you to catch the four o'clock train.
Bisogna che tu dica qualcosa per spiegare le tue azioni.
You must say something to explain your actions.
Bisogna dire qualcosa (NOT **ti bisogna dire qualcosa**).
Something must be said, lit it is necessary to say something.

basta che	it is enough that
bisogna che	it is necessary that
conviene che	it is opportune that
dà fastidio che	it gives annoyance that
dispiace che	it gives displeasure that

mi dispiace che il lavoro non sia pronto	I am sorry the work is not ready
far piacere che	it gives pleasure that
mi fa piacere che tu sia qui	I am pleased that you are here
importa che	it is of importance that
infastidisce che	it gives annoyance that
occorre che	it is necessary that
piace che	it gives pleasure that
non mi piace che tu vada lì	I don't like your going there
può darsi che	maybe
rincresce che	it gives sorrow that
secca che	it gives annoyance that
sembra che	it seems that
sorprende che	it is surprising that
vale la pena che	it is worthwhile that

Many expressions with **essere** + noun or adjective usually take the Subjunctive after **che**, but may take an infinitive, especially where no person is specified, e.g.:

è (un) peccato che	it is a pity that
è ora/tempo che	it is a time that
è una vergogna che	it is a disgrace that
è necessario che	it is necessary that
è ridicolo che	it is ridiculous that
è vietato che	it is forbidden that
è possibile/impossibile che	it is possible/impossible that
è probabile/improbabile che	it is probable/improbable that
è facile/difficile che	it is likely/unlikely that
è utile/inutile che	it is useful/useless that
è naturale che	it is natural that
è inevitabile che	it is inevitable that

Impersonal expressions expressing "evident" or "certain" usually take the Indicative, but may take the Subjunctive in higher registers. The Subjunctive is especially common in negative sentences (even when the meaning is positive) and in questions, e.g.:

Ormai era ovvio che Elena fosse scappata (R3).
By now it was clear that Elena had run away.

Non è vero che si mangi sempre meglio nei ristoranti di lusso.
It is not true that you always eat better in luxury restaurants.

Non c'è dubbio che il colpevole sia lui.
There is no doubt that he is the guilty one.

Ma è davvero così evidente che abbiano copiato?
Is it really so obvious that they cheated?

With impersonal verbs meaning "to happen," the Subjunctive is more likely if the "happening" verb is in the present or imperfect, less likely if it is in a perfect tense, e.g.:

Spesso capitava che si trovassero soli ma senza niente da dirsi.
It often happened that they ended up alone but with nothing to say.

Capitò che scambiai (OR **scambiassi**) **qualche parola con lui durante una pausa dei lavori**.
It so happened that I exchanged a few words with him during a break in the job.

The expression **non è che** or **non che** usually takes the subjunctive, and is often followed by a second clause in the affirmative with the verb in the indicative (cf. **non perché**, section 30.4.3), e.g.:

Non è che il bambino sia cattivo, **è semplicemente vivace**.
It's not that the child is naughty, he's just lively.

30.2.9 The verb **aspettare**

Aspettate che piova!
Wait until it rains!
Aspettate che piove!
Wait! It's raining!

30.2.10 The position of the noun clause

When a noun clause is moved from its usual position for emphasis (cf. section 18.2), whether it is subject or object of the verb, it requires the Subjunctive in higher registers, e.g.:

Che fosse medico lo sapevamo già.
Lo sapevamo già, che fosse medico.
Cf. **Sapevamo già che era medico**.
We already knew he was a doctor.
Che fosse medico si sapeva.
Cf. **Si sapeva che era medico**.
It was well known that he was a doctor.

30.2.11 **il fatto che**

A noun clause introduced by **il fatto che** is often in the Subjunctive, especially if it comes before the main verb of the sentence, e.g.:

Il fatto che Giovanni sappia tutto non cambia niente.
The fact that Giovanni knows everything doesn't change a thing.

30.2.12 **come** meaning **che**

The Subjunctive is used with **come** when it means "that" rather than "how" (a usage typical of higher registers), e.g.:

Il ministro fece notare come governo e opposizione fossero d'accordo sui principi di base della riforma.
Cf. **Il ministro fece notare che governo e opposizione erano d'accordo sui principi di base della riforma**.
The Minister observed that the government and the opposition were in agreement on the basic principles of the reform.

30.2.13 Modal attraction

The Subjunctive may be used in a noun clause which follows another subordinate containing a Subjunctive. This is only usually found in higher registers and should be imitated with caution, e.g.:

Se tu sapessi che io fossi in bisogno, mi aiuteresti?
If you knew I was in need, would you help me?

30.3 Indirect questions

The Subjunctive is used in higher registers, e.g.:

Gli chiesi se ci avesse pensato sopra.
I asked him if he had thought about it.
Non sappiamo se ci abbiano visti o meno.
We don't know if they have seen us or not.
Le ho domandato dove avessero trovato le castagne.
I asked her where they had found the chestnuts.
Non è chiaro che cosa abbia spinto il comune a comportarsi in questa maniera.
It is not clear what led the Council to behave like this.
Non so che faccia abbia.
I don't know what she looks like.

The Subjunctive is also frequent with **quanto**, e.g.:

Fece così per ricordare a Peppone quanto forti fossero le sue mani (Guareschi).
He acted like that to remind Peppone how strong his hands were.

The Subjunctive is also used in higher registers for reported or indirect commands, e.g.:

Rispose che venissi subito.
He answered that I should come immediately.
Gli fece cenno che si sedesse.
She gestured to him to sit down.

30.4 Subordinating conjunctions

With a large number of conjunctions, the Subjunctive is compulsory in higher registers. In R1, some of these conjunctions are rarely heard, and when they are they may be found with the Indicative.

30.4.1 although, however

Subjunctive after **benché**, **sebbene**, **quantunque** (R3), **con tutto che** (R3); Indicative after **anche se**, e.g.:

Sebbene non possedesse un orologio, sembrava sapere sempre l'ora esatta.

Although he didn't own a watch, he always seemed to know the right time.

Subjunctive after **per quanto** meaning *however*, and with (**per**) + adj + **che**:

Per quanto gridasse, nessuno l'ha sentito.
No matter how much he shouted, no one heard him.
Un vino Chianti, (per) cattivo che sia, è sempre un piacere.
A Chianti wine, bad as it may be, is always a pleasure.

Subjunctive or Indicative after **per quanto** meaning "as far as," Indicative after **per quel che**, e.g.:

Per quanto ne sappia (R2–3)/ **so** (R1–2) **io, non hanno intenzione di vendere**.
As far as I know, they have no intention of selling.
Per quanto mi riguarda/ per quel che mi riguarda . . .
As far as I am concerned . . .

Note this expression:

che io sappia
as far as I know

30.4.2 before

Subjunctive after **prima che** if subjects of the two clauses are different; if they are the same, **prima di** + infinitive, e.g.:

Mi tradirai tre volte prima che il gallo canti.
You will deny me three times before the cock crows.
Ha letto il contratto prima di firmarlo.
He read the contract before he signed it/before signing it.

30.4.3 in order that, such that

Subjunctive after **perché**, **affinché**, **tale che**; **in modo (tale) che**, **in maniera (tale) che**.

Indicative after **perché** meaning "because". Subjunctive after **non perché**.

If subjects of the two clauses are the same, **per**, **al fine di**, **tale da**, **così da**, **in modo** (**tale**) **da**, all + infinitive, e.g.:

Parlo così perché gli studenti mi capiscano.
I'm speaking like this so the students (will) understand me.
Parlo così perché gli studenti lo preferiscono.
I'm speaking like this because the students prefer it.
Devi firmare qui, non perché io non mi fidi di te, ma perché è la legge.
You have to sign here, not because I don't trust you, but because it is the law.
Si comporta in maniera (**tale**) **che tutti lo guardino**.
He is behaving in such a way that everyone will look at him.

Si comporta in maniera (**tale**) **che tutti lo guardano**.
He is behaving in such a way that everyone is looking at him.
Si comporta in maniera (**tale**) **da provocare uno scandalo**.
He is behaving in such a way as to cause a scandal.

Verbs and expressions of making something happen also require the Subjunctive, e.g.:

Il terremoto fece sì che il palazzo crollasse.
The earthquake led to the palace collapsing.

30.4.4 unless, except

Subjunctive after **a meno che**, **salvo che, tranne che, eccetto che**; if subjects of the two clauses are the same, **a meno di** + infinitive (in both cases the use of pleonastic **non** is typical of higher registers), e.g.:

Andate, allora, a meno che (**non**) **abbiate cambiato idea di nuovo**.
Off you go, then, unless you've changed your minds again.
Non lo farò, a meno di (**non**) **capire il perché**.
I won't do it, unless I understand the reason why.

30.4.5 until

Subjunctive after **finché non** meaning "until" in the past;
Indicative after **finché non** meaning "until" in the present or future;
Indicative after **finché** meaning "as long as," e.g.:

Il dottore mi ordinò riposo assoluto finché non mi fossi sentito meglio.
The doctor ordered me to have total rest until I felt better.
Non uscirai finché non avrai lavato i piatti.
You're not going out until you've washed the dishes.
Il dottore mi ordinò riposo assoluto finché continuava il dolore.
The doctor ordered me to have total rest as long as the pain continued.

30.4.6 without

Subjunctive after **senza che**; if subjects of the two clauses are the same, **senza** + infinitive, e.g.:

Uscì senza che nessuno la vedesse.
She went out without anyone seeing her.
Uscì senza salutare nesssuno.
She left without saying goodbye to anyone.

30.4.7 provided that

Subjunctive after **purché**, **a patto che**, **a condizione che**.
If subjects of the two clauses are the same, **a patto di** + infinitive, e.g.:

Lo farò, a patto che tu dia una mano.
I'll do it, provided you give me a hand.

Accetto, a patto di cominciare subito.
I accept, provided I start immediately.

Note this construction:

Andiamo a mangiare la pizza? Ma mi raccomando: una pizza che sia una pizza!
Shall we go and have a pizza? Yes, but provided it's a real pizza!

30.4.8 in case, in case that

Subjunctive after **caso mai** (usually Imperfect or Pluperfect); **nel caso che**, **per il caso che**, **qualora**, e.g.:

Prendi un ombrello, caso mai piovesse.
Take an umbrella, (just) in case it rains/should rain.

Nel caso che tu non possa venire, avvertimi.
If (it happens that) you can't come, let me know.

30.4.9 when

Subjunctive to express hypothetical situation (cf. section 31.1.2). Only in higher registers, e.g.:

La notizia diffamatoria, pubblicata a mezzo stampa, può non costituire illecito quando prevalga l'interesse pubblico . . .
A defamatory news item, when published in the press, may not constitute an offense, when the public interest prevails . . .

30.4.10 as if

Subjunctive after **come se**, **quasi che** (R2–3), **come** (R3), **quasi** (R3). Only the Imperfect or Pluperfect Subjunctive are generally used (cf. section 29.2.2), e.g.:

Ci tratta come se fossimo ragazzini.
He treats us as if we were kids.

Erano spaventati come se avessero visto un fantasma.
They were frightened as if they had seen a ghost.

"As if to" = **come per** + infinitive, e.g.:

Aprì la bocca come per parlare.
He opened his mouth as if to speak.

30.5 Relative clauses

30.5.1 After an indefinite antecedent

The Subjunctive accentuates the doubt that such a situation may in fact exist:

Cercano un albergo che costi meno di 100 euro a notte (R2–3).
Cercano un albergo che costa meno di 100 euro a notte.
They are looking for a hotel that costs less than 100 euro a night.

The Indicative is used to refer to real situations:

Hanno trovato un albergo che costa meno di 100 euro a notte.
They have found a hotel that costs less than 100 euro a night.

30.5.2 After a negative or non-existent antecedent

The Subjunctive is required, especially in higher registers, e.g.:

Non c'è nessuno che s'intenda di queste cose.
There is no one who understands this stuff.

Conoscete qualcuno che sia veramente felice?
Do you know anyone who is truly happy?

Una persona che passasse in macchina a quell'ora vedrebbe tutto.
Someone (anyone) who drove by at that time would see everything.

30.5.3 After unique and superlative antecedents

The Subjunctive is required in higher registers, while the Indicative is increasingly common in R1–2, e.g.:

Giuseppe è il solo/l'unico che capisca la mia situazione.
Giuseppe is the only person who understands my situation.

Elena è la persona più affascinante che io abbia mai conosciuto.
Elena is the most fascinating person I have ever met.

30.5.4 Expressing a hypothesis (cf. section 31.1.2)

Un mondo in cui/dove tutti fossero uguali sarebbe il paradiso.
A world in which/where everybody was equal would be paradise.

30.5.5 "Modal attraction"

The Subjunctive may be used in a relative clause which follows another subordinate containing a Subjunctive. This is usually found only in higher registers and should be imitated with caution, e.g.:

Credo che vi siano poche persone che possano capirmi meglio di voi.
I believe there are few people who can understand me better than you [do].

30.6 Comparatives

The Subjunctive is used is comparative clauses, especially after certain conjunctions of comparison (cf. section 17.3), e.g.:

Tommaso sa più di quanto (**non**) **mi abbia detto** (R2–3)/ **di quanto mi ha detto**.
Tommaso knows more than what he has said to me.

Sembrava più vecchio che non fosse in realtà (R3).
He looked older than he actually was.

30.7 Conditional sentences

The Imperfect and Pluperfect Subjunctive are used in the if-clause (the "protasis") of hypothetical conditional sentences when the conditional is used in the main clause (cf. section 31.1.1), e.g.:

Se io parlassi quattro lingue, avrei avuto quel lavoro.
If I spoke four languages, I would have got that job.

Se tu mi avessi scritto quella lettera, io sarei già in vacanza.
If you had written that letter for me, I would already be on holiday.

An if-clause may used alone, in certain expressions, when the main clause is understood, e.g.:

Che emozione, manco avessi visto Maldini! (R1–2).
What a thrill, it was better than seeing Maldini! (lit [it would not have better if] I had seen Maldini).

31 Conditional sentences

Conditional sentences consist basically of an if-clause (or "protasis") and a main clause (or "apodosis"), although many variations are possible. It is more common for the if-clause to come first, as in the examples below, but in principle the two clauses may occur in either order. Conditional sentences can be divided into hypothetical conditionals and factual conditionals.

31.1 Hypothetical conditionals

These sentences express a hypothesis, consisting of a condition and a consequence resulting from the fulfillment of that condition: "if x, then y." The choice of mood and tense of the verbs in the two clauses reflects the degree of probability the speaker attaches to the likelihood that the hypothesis may come true. The indicative emphasizes that the hypothesis is in fact possible, while the subjunctive and conditional highlights the speculative or unreal nature of the hypothesis.

31.1.1 Verb mood and tense

Indicative in both clauses

The present, future, and *passato prossimo* may be used to express a hypothesis about present, future or past, e.g.:

Se compri il giornale, possiamo vedere cosa c'è alla televisione.
If you buy the newspaper, we can see what's on TV.

R1* vulgar or indecent
R1 informal, colloquial
R2 neutral, unmarked
R3 formal, written
Italian words and expressions are R2 unless otherwise indicated. See also p. 5.

Se domani ci sarà (**c'è,** R1–2) **bel tempo, andremo** (**andiamo**, R1–2) **al mare**.
If it's fine tomorrow, we'll go to the beach.
Se Chiara non è venuta all'appuntamento stamattina, allora è già partita per le vacanze.
If Chiara didn't keep the appointment this morning, then she has already gone on holiday.

Subjunctive/conditional

(i) If-clause

IMPERFECT SUBJUNCTIVE expresses a hypothesis about the present or future, e.g.:

Se io non fossi così testardo . . .
If I weren't so stubborn . . .
Se piovesse domani . . .
If it rained tomorrow . . .

Dovere may be used to underline the hypothetical nature of the clause, especially R2–3, e.g.:

Se dovesse piovere domani . . .
If it were to rain tomorrow . . .

PLUPERFECT SUBJUNCTIVE expresses a hypothesis about the past (therefore usually something that can no longer be true), e.g.:

Se tu fossi stata qui . . .
If you had been here . . .

(ii) Main clause

PRESENT CONDITIONAL expresses a consequence in the present or future, e.g.:

. . . non mi troverei in questo pasticcio.
. . . I wouldn't be in this mess.

PAST CONDITIONAL expresses a consequence in the past, e.g.:

. . . avrei accettato l'invito
. . . I would have accepted the invitation.

These two pairs may be combined freely, according to the meaning, e.g.:

Se io non fossi così testardo, non mi troverei in questo pasticcio.
If I weren't so stubborn, I wouldn't be in this mess.
Se io non fossi così testardo, avrei accettato l'invito.
If I weren't so stubborn, I would have accepted the invitation.
Se tu fossi stata qui, non mi troverei in questo pasticcio.
If you had been here, I wouldn't be in this mess.
Se tu fossi stata qui, avrei accettato l'invito.
If you had been here, I would have accepted the invitation.

In R1–2, the imperfect indicative may replace the pluperfect subjunctive and/or the past conditional, e.g.:

Se (tu) eri qui, non accettavo l'invito.
If you had been here, I wouldn't have accepted the invitation.

In very colloquial R1 speech, the imperfect indicative may replace the imperfect subjunctive and/or present conditional. Dialect grammar rules transferred to Italian may produce sentences with both clauses in the subjunctive (especially in the South) or both in the conditional (especially in the North and also in Tuscany). All these usages are considered ungrammatical:

Se io non ero così testardo, non mi trovavo in questo pasticcio.
Se io non fossi così testardo, non mi trovassi in questo pasticcio.
Se io non sarei così testardo, non mi troverei in questo pasticcio.

The imperative may occur in the main clause, e.g.:

Se avessi bisogno di me, chiamami a casa.
If you should need me, ring me at home.

31.1.2 Other ways of saying "if"

The conjunction may simply be omitted (in R2–3). If the subject is expressed, it follows the verb, e.g.:

Succedesse a me sarei rovinato (Pratolini).
Were it to happen to me, I would be ruined.
Me l'avesse detto lui, non l'avrei fatto.
Had *he* told me, I wouldn't have done it.
Fosse entrato in campo Maldini, si sarebbe potuta rinsaldare la difesa.
Had Maldini come on, the defence could have been consolidated.

With the same subject in the two clauses, an infinitive or gerund may be used in certain cases. A present infinitive may be used with **pur di**, **a patto di**, **a condizione di**, and with **a**, e.g.:

Pur di/A patto di/A condizione di ottenere un lavoro, mi trasferirei in qualsiasi città.
I would move to any city, provided I could get a job (just to get a job).
A pensarci bene, non avrei dovuto farlo.
Come to think of it, I shouldn't have done it.

A gerund may also be used, e.g.:

Lavorando sodo, potresti ripagare il prestito in un anno.
By working hard (= If you worked hard), you could repay the loan in a year.
Avresti imparato di più leggendo i testi nell'originale.
You would have learned more by reading the texts in the original.
Studiando tanto, avresti potuto certamente superare quell'esame.
If you had studied hard, you could certainly have passed that exam.

An adjective, adjectival phrase, or past participle may be used without a verb, e.g.:

Di ruolo, avrebbe guadagnato di più.
She would have earned more (if she had been) in a permanent position.

(Se) presa in tempo, la malattia è curabile.
If caught in time, the disease can be treated.

Other conjunctions may be used, usually in R2–3, e.g.:

qualora (R2–3), **quando** (R3), **ove** (R3), **laddove** (R3);
ammesso che, **supposto che**, **nell'ipotesi che**, **nell'eventualità che** (all R3) express greater improbability;
ammettiamo che, **mettiamo (il caso) che**, **supponiamo che** (all R2–3);
purché, **a patto che**, **a condizione che** (all R2–3) express "provided that."

NOTE the use of **quando** with the subjunctive to express "if and when," e.g.:

In base all'apertura dei Medici, Michelangelo avrebbe potuto tornare quando avesse voluto (R3).
On the basis of the open attitude of the Medici, Michelangelo could have returned if and when he wanted.

Relative clauses can also act as hypothetical conditionals. The verb in the relative clause is in the subjunctive (cf. section 30.5.4), e.g.:

Uno che avesse obiettivi chiari, non perderebbe tempo così.
If someone had clear objectives, they wouldn't waste time like that.
(= Anyone who had clear objectives wouldn't waste time like that.)

31.2 Factual conditionals

In these sentences, the two clauses do not express a hypothetical situation, but refer to some aspect of reality and establish a connexion between two states or events. The indicative is usually used in both clauses.

With both clauses in the imperfect the sentence describes a habitual event in the past, e.g.:

Se non avevamo i soldi per pagare, lavoravamo in cucina la domenica.
If/When we didn't have the money to pay, we would work in the kitchen on Sundays.

With both clauses in the present or perfect, the sentence expresses two ideas that are logically linked in some way. This rhetorical use of the conditional construction is more common in Italian (especially R3) than in English, and may be best rendered in English by some other type of clause, e.g.:

Se la situazione internazionale è preoccupante, quella nazionale non è certo tranquilla.
If the international situation is worrying, the domestic situation is certainly not calm
OR The international situation is worrying, but the domestic situation is certainly not calm.

Se (è vero che) Caravaggio rimase sempre debitore alla sua formazione lombarda, tuttavia ebbe il maggior influsso sulla pittura del Meridione (R3).

While (it is true that) Caravaggio always remained in debt to his Lombard training, he had the greatest influence on painting in the South.

NOTE these colloquial usages, which have parallels in English:

Se hai sete, c'è una birra nel frigo.

If you're thirsty, there's a beer in the fridge.

Se lui canta bene, io sono Pavarotti.

If he is a good singer, I'm Pavarotti.

32 Subordinate clauses

Subordinate clauses can be thought of in two categories. "Explicit" clauses have the verb in a finite, conjugated form (this is normally what is meant by the term "subordinate clause"). "Implicit" clauses have the verb in a non-finite form: infinitive, gerund, or participle. Compare the following sentences. The first contains an explicit subordinate clause, the second an implicit clause:

Mi sono addormentato mentre guardavo la televisione.
I fell asleep while I was watching television.
Mi sono addormentato guardando la televisione.
I fell asleep watching television.

As these examples show, the same meaning can often be expressed by either an implicit clause or an explicit clause. The difference is usually one of register: implicit clauses are more common in higher registers and particularly in writing.

32.1 Explicit subordinate clauses

Explicit subordinate clauses usually come after the main clause, although in most instances the choice is free and a question of style or emphasis. The following types of subordinate clauses tend to come before the main clause:

(i) Temporal clauses
Quando lo vedrò, gli racconterò tutto.
When I see him, I will tell him everything.

(ii) Concessive clauses (expressing "although": cf. section 30.1.4), e.g.:
Benché la scadenza sia già passata, accetteremo la Sua domanda.
Although the deadline has already passed, we will accept your application.

(iii) If-clauses (cf. chapter 31), e.g.:
Se ci sei, batti un colpo!
If you're there, knock!

(iv) Limitative clauses, e.g.:
Per quanto ne so, non c'è un numero chiuso in questa Facoltà.
As far as I know, there is no quota in this Faculty.

(v) Note that clauses beginning with **perché** meaning "because" may only follow the main clause (cf. the similar restriction on English "for"). A "because" clause which comes before the main clause must begin with some other conjunction, such as **siccome**, **poiché**, **giacché**, e.g.:

Ho dovuto prendere un taxi perché non c'erano più tram a quell'ora.

I had to take a taxi because/for there were no more trams at that hour.

Siccome non c'erano più tram a quell'ora, ho dovuto prendere un taxi.

Because there were no more trams at that hour, I had to take a taxi.

32.1.1 Relative clauses

When the relative pronoun is the subject or direct object of its clause, **che** is used. The relative pronoun is compulsory, unlike in English. Compare:

Il computer che ho comprato ha un difetto.

The computer (that) I bought has a fault.

In R2–3 a form of **il quale** may be used in place of **che**, usually when it is the subject of its clause. **Il quale** is used in a "descriptive" relative clause, i.e. one that does not identify its antecedent but adds information to something already known. It is also used to clarify potential ambiguity, e.g.:

Ho discusso il problema con la signora Brambilla, la quale (OR **che**) **ne è rimasta entusiasta.**

I discussed the problem with Mrs Brambilla, who was enthusiastic about it.

Ho discusso il problema con la signora che abita al piano di sopra.

I discussed the problem with the lady who lives upstairs.

L'amica di Matteo, la quale lavora in centro, ha avuto un incidente.

Matteo's girlfriend, who works in the city, has had an accident.

When the relative pronoun is the indirect object of its clause, the preposition is used with **cui** or **il quale** (R2–3, also used to avoid ambiguity), e.g.:

Ti voglio far vedere la casa davanti a cui/davanti alla quale eravamo parcheggiati.

I want to show you the house we were parked in front of.

In higher registers, **cui** may be used to mean **a cui**, but not with compound prepositions (e.g. **davanti a cui** cannot be replaced by **davanti cui**), e.g.:

L'autore cui è stato assegnato il premio darà una conferenza stampa (R3).

The author to whom the prize has been awarded will give a press conference.

Relative expressions of time and place may use a relative pronoun, or an adverb, or **che** (this is becoming common for time but still frowned on for place), e.g.:

Non dimenticherò mai il giorno in cui/quando/che (R1–2) **ti ho conosciuto.**

I will never forget the day I met you.

Non dimenticherò mai il luogo in cui/dove (R1–2)/**che** (R1) **ti ho conosciuto.**

I will never forget the place I met you.

In higher registers, the noun may be repeated together with the relative pronoun, and the relative clause may be written as a separate sentence, e.g.:

Tommaso scrisse almeno quattro volte al direttore. Il quale direttore gli aveva promesso di aiutarlo in qualche modo.

Tommaso wrote to the director at least four times. Who had promised him help in some form.

In speech, a pronoun is sometimes used to refer back to the antecedent. This may occur with a relative pronoun plus preposition (and may cause some uncertainty even among educated speakers), or with **che**, which is considered ungrammatical, e.g.:

E' un tipo a cui gli piacciono le donne (R1–2).

E' un tipo che gli piacciono le donne (R1).

He's a type that women like.

Il che or **cosa che** are used to refer to an entire clause, e.g.:

Hanno telefonato più volte per salutarti, il che vuol dire che ti vogliono bene.

They have phoned several times to say hello, which means they are fond of you.

Sono partiti di notte, cosa che non avevano mai fatto prima.

They left at night, something they had never done before.

"Whose" may be expressed in a variety of ways, e.g.:

Si tratta di una malattia i cui sintomi sono difficilissimi da individuare.

Si tratta di una malattia i sintomi della quale sono difficilissimi da individuare (R2–3).

Si tratta di una malattia della quale i sintomi sono difficilissimi da individuare (R3).

This is a disease whose symptoms are very difficult to identify.

"What" may be expressed by **quello che**, **quel che**, **ciò che** (R2–3), or **quanto** (R2–3), e.g.:

Non ha voluto ripetere quello che/ciò che/quanto aveva detto ai giornalisti.

He declined to repeat what he had said to the journalists.

"Whoever" or "those who" may be expressed by **chi**, **quelli che**, **coloro che** (R2–3), **coloro i quali** (R3), **quanti** (R2–3). **Chi** is very common in proverbs, e.g.:

Chi tardi arriva male alloggia.

First come first served (lit S/he who is late finds bad lodgings).

Il libro è scritto per chi desidera conoscere meglio se stesso/per quelli che desiderano conoscere meglio se stessi.

The book is written for those who wish to know themselves better.

Relative expressions with an infinitive require special care. When the antecedent is the direct object of the infinitive, **da** is used (cf. section 27.4.1), e.g.:

E' un libro da leggere/leggersi (R3) **attentamente.**

It is a book to be read, i.e. a book which one must read carefully.

If the antecedent is an indirect object, a relative pronoun (including preposition) is used before the verb, e.g.:

Cerco qualcuno con cui giocare a tennis.

I'm looking for someone to play tennis with.

E' una proposta su cui riflettere.

It's a proposal to think about.

32.2 Implicit subordinate clauses

Implicit subordinate clauses almost always require the non-finite verb to have the same subject as the main verb. Most exceptions to this are restricted to R3 and are explained below.

32.2.1 Infinitive

In Italian the infinitive is used more widely than in English to replace object clauses beginning with **che**, e.g.:

Credo di aver portato tutti i documenti richiesti.

I believe (that) I have brought all the required documents.

However, it is more restricted in only being used when the subjects of both clauses are the same (see chapter 27). Compare:

V**oglio che tu stia tranquillo.**

I want you to be happy.

The following construction, with different subjects, is now restricted to extremely formal styles:

Affermava infatti esser la famiglia, e in particolare la sua, la maledizione dell'uomo (R3, Morante).

He claimed indeed that the family, and his in particular, was the curse of mankind.

The infinitive is used with **in** and **con** plus the definite article (always masculine singular) to form implicit subordinate clauses: **in** expresses a contemporaneous action (equivalent to the gerund), e.g.:

Nel vederlo, gli ha gettato le braccia al collo. (= **Vedendolo**, . . .)

On seeing him, she flung her arms around his neck.

con is only usually found with verbs of beginning and ending, e.g.:

Cominciò/Finì col ringraziare tutti per essere venuti.

He started/ended up by thanking everyone for coming.

The infinitive is also used with other prepositions, but in modern Italian this only occurs in a number of set phrases, most of which are expressions of time, e.g.:

al sorgere del sole
at the rising of the sun
con il passar del tempo
with the passing of time
sul far del giorno/sul far della sera
at daybreak/at nightfall.

32.2.2 Gerund

The use of the present gerund (e.g. **facendo**, **arrivando**) is growing in contemporary Italian, while the past gerund (**avendo fatto**, **essendo arrivato**) is becoming restricted to higher registers.

Meanings of the gerund

The implicit gerund clause can express a number of meanings:

(i) temporal

If the time of the gerund verb precedes or includes the main verb, the gerund usually comes before the main verb, e.g.:

Arrivando a Milano, mi recai a Piazza del Duomo.
On arriving in Milan, I went to Piazza del Duomo.
Passeggiando, Elena ha incontrato Tommaso.
While walking, Elena met Tommaso.

If the time of the gerund verb covers the same time period or one subsequent to that of the main verb, the gerund usually comes after the main verb, e.g.:

Emilia lo guardò sorridendo.
Emilia looked at him (while) smiling.
L'auto ha sbandato violentemente, scontrandosi con un camion.
The car skidded violently, crashing into a truck.

(ii) "Since" or "because"

This is the most common usage of the past gerund, e.g.:

Il magistrato, non avendo riscontrato prove concrete, chiuse l'indagine.
The magistrate, having found no concrete evidence (= since he had found . . .), closed the investigation.

(iii) "although": the gerund is usually preceded by **pur**(**e**) or **anche** (R1–2), e.g.:

Pur non essendo d'accordo, rispetterò la decisione del comitato.
Although I do not agree (with it), I shall respect the committee's decision.

(iv) "if"

Only the present gerund is used in this sense (cf. section 31.1.2), e.g.:

Usando un tono più rispettoso, avresti potuto ottenere quello che cercavi.

By using a more respectful tone, you could have got what you were looking for.

(v) "how", e.g.:

Ha superato l'esame studiando giorno e notte per un mese intero.

She passed the exam by studying night and day for a whole month.

Note that many of the English translations above have a preposition before the verb in *-ing*, to specify the meaning, e.g. "on doing," "while doing," "by doing," etc. In modern Italian no preposition may ever be used before a gerund. If a preposition is used to express a precise meaning, the verb must be in the infinitive, e.g.:

Nell'entrare [= Entrando] nella stanza, Chiara ha capito l'umore dei presenti.

On entering the room, Chiara understood the mood of those present.

Adverbs, however, may be used before a gerund, especially **pur** and **anche**. See example (iii) above.

The subject of the verb in the gerund

The verb in the gerund usually takes as its subject the subject of the finite verb on which it depends, but in certain cases it may refer to an indirect object or to some other person clearly identifiable in the context, e.g.:

Mi è successo sciando.

It happened to me while (I was) skiing.

Siamo rimasti in piedi davanti al bar. Chiacchierando del più e del meno, si fece notte.

We stood outside the bar. While we chatted about this and that, night fell.

In higher registers, the gerund is sometimes used to refer to a direct object of the finite verb, but this usage should be avoided by the student, e.g.:

Luis studiò dai gesuiti: pur staccandosi dalla fede, il problema religioso lo tormentò per tutta la vita (Messori).

Luis studied with the Jesuits: though he left the faith, the issue of religion tormented him throughout his whole life.

The gerund is used in a number of set expressions, regardless of the subject, e.g.:

e via dicendo, **a Dio piacendo**, **tempo permettendo**

and so on, God willing, weather permitting

In higher registers the gerund may be used with a different subject from that of the finite verb. The subject is placed after the gerund, or after the auxiliary with the past gerund, e.g.:

Avendo la testimone ritirato le dichiarazioni rese durante l'istruttoria, la sentenza è confermata.

Since the witness has withdrawn her statements made during the enquiry, the decision is confirmed.

The position of the gerund in the sentence

A gerund may occur in virtually any place in the sentence. Gerunds expressing "why," "if," or "although" often come at the beginning; gerunds expressing "how" or "when" often come at the end of the sentence. See above for the usual position of temporal gerunds according to their meaning.

Gerunds are usually separated from the rest of the sentence by a comma (representing a pause in speech), with one exception: when the gerund comes at the end of the sentence and expresses "how" or "when," no comma is used. If it expresses other meanings, the comma tends to be used. Note the punctuation in the following:

Sorridendo, Matteo si è ritirato dall'esame.
Matteo si è ritirato dall'esame sorridendo.
Matteo left the exam smiling.
Giudicandosi impreparato, Matteo si è ritirato dall'esame.
Matteo si è ritirato dall'esame, giudicandosi impreparato.
Matteo left the exam considering himself unprepared.

32.2.3 Participles

Present participle

The present participle is seldom used with a verbal meaning to join clauses. In modern Italian it is usually found as an adjective or noun, with little or no verbal force, e.g.:

importante, **splendente**; **insegnante**, **dirigente**, **amante**, **stampante**
important, shining; teacher, manager, lover, computer printer

In very formal writing, however, the present participle is increasingly being used as a verb, although it must agree, like an adjective, with the noun to which it refers. This usage should be imitated only with great caution, e.g.:

Due associazioni del settore hanno fatto ricorso contro le decisioni del Consiglio dei Ministri approvanti una convenzione tariffale relativa agli ospedali universitari (R3).
Two professional associations have appealed against the decisions by the Cabinet approving (which approved) a fee agreement relating to university hospitals.

The following type of usage is particularly restricted to bureaucratic and formal language:

i componenti la commissione, **i richiedenti asilo** (R3)
the members of the commission (lit the persons making up the commission); asylum seekers

Past participle

The past participle is also used as an adjective or noun, e.g.:

innamorato; **laureato**, **sopravvissuto**, **significato**
in love; graduate, survivor, meaning

It is often used, without any auxiliary verb, to join clauses. Usually the participle is associated with a noun in the main clause and thus acts as a kind of implicit relative clause. The type of meaning of the participle depends on the auxiliary the verb takes (cf. chapter 22):

(i) for transitive verbs, the past participle has a passive meaning, e.g.:

Ho ricevuto ieri una lettera speditami evidentemente da una persona analfabeta.

Yesterday I received a letter obviously sent to me by an illiterate person.

(ii) for intransitive verbs which take **essere**, the past participle has an active meaning, e.g.:

Ci sono i tuoi amici fuori, venuti apposta per salutarti.

Your friends are outside, who have come expressly to say hello.

(iii) intransitive verbs which take **avere** may not use the past participle in this way. A past gerund or a finite verb must be used instead, e.g.:

Matteo tornò a casa distrutto, avendo lavorato tutta la notte (OR **poiché aveva lavorato** BUT NOT **lavorato).**

Matteo returned home exhausted, having worked all night.

In higher registers, the past participle may also be used as a separate, or "absolute," clause with a different subject from that of the finite clause. The participle precedes its own subject and agrees with it, e.g.:

(Una volta) esaminata la situazione, il comitato prenderà una decisione.

Once the situation has been examined (lit The situation having been examined), the committee will make a decision.

Partiti gli ospiti, ci siamo messi a riordinare.

Once the guests had left (lit The guests having left), we started cleaning up.

32.2.4 Nominalization

The use of a noun instead of a verb is typical of higher registers in most languages. R2–3 Italian makes greater use of nominalization than English.

Elena capì che era necessario prendere l'iniziativa.

Elena realized that it was necessary to take the initiative.

Elena capì la necessità di prendere l'iniziativa (R2–3).

Elena realized the need to take the initiative.

32.2.5 Ways of translating words in "-ing"

Great care must be taken in translating English words ending in "-ing," since they may have a variety of meanings, whereas the Italian gerund is very specific in its use. Words in "-ing" may be:

(i) a noun, corresponding in Italian to a noun or an infinitive used as a masculine singular noun (with or without article), e.g.:

La lettura (OR **il leggere**) **stimola la fantasia del bambino.**

Reading stimulates the child's imagination.

Attraversare la strada nelle ore di punta può essere pericoloso.

Crossing the road during peak hours can be dangerous.

(ii) an adjective, corresponding in Italian to a relative clause or present participle, e.g.:

La ragazza che attraversava la strada era la sorella di Giuseppe.
The girl crossing the road was Giuseppe's sister.

(iii) an adverb, corresponding in Italian to a gerund, e.g.:

E' caduto attraversando la strada.
He fell while crossing the road.

(iv) a verb, corresponding in Italian to an infinitive, after verbs of perception, e.g.:

Ho sentito Emilia cantare.
I heard Emilia singing.

TEXTS AND THEIR STRUCTURE

33 Interjections

Interjections are a feature of the more spontaneous registers of the spoken language, the same registers where the influence of dialects is strongest. Dialectal or regional interjections (and insults) are therefore not uncommon in Italian. In Italian as in English, the use and choice of interjections ultimately reflect personal taste and sensibility, with "fashion" playing a big role in this very productive field of the living language. Interjections can be "fashionable" one day and disappear the next. The following is a list of some of the more common and "established" Italian interjections: in order to avoid potential embarrassment, the students should restrict their use to the R2 expressions (at least to begin with).

English pragmatic equivalents have been indicated in some cases as a guide.

Some interjections appear more than once, under different labels. The words are the same, the tone changes.

R1* vulgar or indecent
R1 informal, colloquial
R2 neutral, unmarked
R3 formal, written
Italian words and expressions are R2 unless otherwise indicated. See also p. 5.

In some words, an accent is used to indicate the main stress but should not be used when writing. See p. 29.

Admiration	R1*	R1	R2
General	**cazzo!**	**cacchio!** **càpperi!** **cavolo!**	
		càspita!	
	madonna!	**accidenti!**	
	òstia! (North)	**òstrega!** (North-East)	**fantastico!** **perbacco!** **però!**
		ammàppete! (Rome) **ammazza(lo)!** (Rome) **orca!**	
	frégati!		
Beauty	**fico!** (Center, South) **figo!** (North) (NOTE: unambiguously vulgar in the feminine)		**bello! bellissimo!** **stupendo! che bello!** (with agreement) **che meraviglia!**
Excellence *(persons)*			**bravo! bravissimo!** (with agreement)

Agreement	R1*	R1	R2
= yes	**cazzo!**	**come no!**	**assolutamente!** **certo!** **perché no?**
		senz'altro!	
= exactly		**ecco!**	**giusto!** **esatto!**
		appunto!	
= OK		**OK** [o'kɛi] **vabbè**	**va bene** **d'accordo!** **benissimo!** **perfetto!**

<table>
<tr><th>Annoyance</th><th>R1*</th><th>R1</th><th>R2</th></tr>
<tr><td rowspan="6">General</td><td>che (rottura di) palle! (esp boredom)
(che) cazzo!
minchia! (Sicily)</td><td>(che) cavolo!
far out!
cribbio!
crikey!</td><td rowspan="3">(ma) insomma! come on!</td></tr>
<tr><td>merda!
shit! fuck!</td><td>mannaggia ((al)la miseria)!</td></tr>
<tr><td>li mortacci!
(Rome)
(porca) puttana!
porca troia!
bloody hell!</td><td>per la miseria!

miseriaccia!
blow! blast!</td></tr>
<tr><td>cristo!</td><td colspan="2">(e) che diàmine!
(ma che) diavolo!
what the heck!</td></tr>
<tr><td rowspan="3"></td><td colspan="2">accidenti! blast! blimey!</td></tr>
<tr><td colspan="2">santa pace! santa pazienza!
heavens above! for heavens' sake!</td></tr>
<tr><td colspan="2">uffa!
(also boredom)</td></tr>
<tr><td colspan="2">porcaccia . . .!
porca l'oca! porca miseria!
porco cane/mondo/giuda! damn!</td><td></td></tr>
<tr><td colspan="3">NOTE: the English vulgar use of "bloody" or "fucking" to focus one's annoyance at sth or sb roughly corresponds to the use of the Italian expression del cazzo (R1*) used after the relevant term, e.g.: questo tempo del cazzo! (R1*) = this fucking weather!</td></tr>
<tr><td rowspan="5">Directed at persons</td><td></td><td>e dài!
e su!/e via! come on!</td><td></td></tr>
<tr><td colspan="3">personal insults (with verbal/adjectival agreement)
(see also chapter 3, "STUPID")</td></tr>
<tr><td>stronzo!
(lit turd) arsehole!</td><td>asino!
(lit donkey) you dunce!</td><td>maleducato!
(lit impolite) how rude!</td></tr>
<tr><td>testa di cazzo!
(lit dickhead)
shithead!</td><td>ignorante!</td><td>you ignorant . . .!</td></tr>
<tr><td>vaffanculo!
(pl andate affanculo!) va' a dar via il culo!
(North) fuck off!</td><td>va' al diavolo!

va' a quel paese!
go to hell!</td><td></td></tr>
</table>

Commiseration	**R1***	**R1**	**R2**
			ahimé! alas!
			poveretto! **poverino!**
		poveraccio! (with agreement) poor thing!	

Disappointment	**R1***	**R1**	**R2**
	same as annoyance, different tone	(**che**) **cavolo!** **mannaggia!**	(**che**) **peccato!** **ma guarda!**

Disbelief	**R1***	**R1**	**R2**
		ma dai!/ma va'! come on!	**davvero?** **incredibile!** **non è possibile!** **non mi dire!** (**ma**) **no!**
		(**e**) **già!** (ironic) sure!	

Disgust	**R1***	**R1**	**R2**
		che schifo! **che schifezza!**	
		che porcheria!	

Encouragement	**R1***	**R1**	**R2**
		dai! (gen) **vai!** (to one person)	**avanti!** **coraggio!** **forza!**

Joy	**R1***	**R1**	**R2**
			che bello! **evviva!** **fantastico!** **sì!**

Disagreement	**R1***	**R1**	**R2**
No! never!	**col cazzo!** **manco per cazzo!**	**manco per idea!/sogno!** **manco per niente!** (Rome) **ma va'!**	**nemmeno per idea!/sogno!**
	col cavolo!		
		macché!	
Not at all!			**per carità!** **per (l')amor del cielo!** **per niente!** **niente affatto!**
Enough!			**basta!**
So what?		**embè?**	**e allora?**

regret	**R1***	**R1**	**R2**
			ahimé! alas!
			(**che**) **peccato!** (what) a pity!

surprise	**R1***	**R1**	**R2**
	same as annoyance except **che palle!**, *different tone*	**càspita!** **cavolo!** **oddìo!**	**mamma mia!** **perbacco!** **santo cielo!**

Warning	**R1***	**R1**	**R2**
		occhio!	**attenzione!**
		attento! (with agreement)	

Common 'non-word' interjections (R1–2 unless differently indicated)

pain (= ouch!)	**ahi!** [ai] (also repeated, [ai . . . ai·ai]) **ohi!** [ɔi] (also repeated) **ahia!** ['ajja] **ahio!** ['ajjo]
Doubt, ignorance (= who knows?)	**boh?** [bo] (R1) **mah?** [(m)ma] (R1)
Attracting attention	**ehi!** [ei] (R1) **aho!** [a'o] (R1*-1 Rome) **uè!** [wɛ] (R1 North)

34 Fillers

Pauses and gaps are characteristics of spoken language, born of the necessity for the speaker to coordinate thoughts, find the right word, keep the conversation alive etc. The expressions listed here are frequently used to fill such gaps in spoken Italian, allowing the speaker to "keep the floor" while thinking of what to say next. It should be noticed that both choice and frequency in the use of these "fillers" depend more on personal taste than on their literal meaning, which in these circumstances is often irrelevant.

Italian expression		**English equivalent**	
		Semantic	*Pragmatic*
allora	R1–2	then	so . . .; well . . .
be'/bèh	R1–2	well	well . . .
che dico	R1–2	what am I saying	I mean . . .
cioè	R1–2	that is	I mean . . .
cioè a dire	R1–2	that is to say	I mean . . .
come dire	R1–2	how to say	how shall I put it . . .
coso/cosa	R1	thing (m/f)	thingamebob, whatchacallit, whatsisname
diciamo	R1–2	let's say	let's say . . .
diciamo così	R1–2	let's say so	let's say . . .

R1* vulgar or indecent
R1 informal, colloquial
R2 neutral, unmarked
R3 formal, written
Italian words and expressions are R2 unless otherwise indicated. See also p. 5.

Italian expression		English equivalent	
		Semantic	*Pragmatic*
dunque	R1–2	therefore	well . . .; now . . .
è che	R1–2	it's that	the thing is, . . .
(**e**) **così**	R1–2	(and) so	(and) so . . .
(**è**) **vero**	R1–2	(is it) true	you know? . . .
ecco . . .	R1	there it is	(mid-sentence) you know? . . .; (opener) well . . .; ALSO = that's exactly it! (interjection)
eee . . ./ mmm . . .	R1	-	er . . .
facciamo così	R1–2	let's do like this	let's do (like) this
facciamo una cosa	R1	let's do one thing	let's do this
guarda (**guardate**)	R1–2	look	look (here) . . .
il fatto è che	R1–2	the fact is that	the fact is that; to tell the truth
insomma	R1–2	to sum it up	so . . .
ma . . .	R1	but	er . . .
niente . . .	R1	nothing	well . . .; oh . . .
no?	R1	isn't it?	you know? . . .
non è che	R1–2	it's not that	it's not that
non so/saprei	R1–2	I don't/would't know	I don't know . . .; how shall I put it . . .
per così dire	R2	so to speak	so to speak; as it were
possiamo dire	R1–2	we can say	let's say . . .
potremmo dire	R1–2	we could say	let's say . . .
senti (**sentite**)	R1–2	listen	listen (here) . . .
se vogliamo	R1–2	if we want	let's say . . .
vabbè	R1	OK	well . . .
vedi (**vedete**)	R1–2	see	you see . . .
vediamo (**un po'**)	R1–2	let's see (a bit)	let's see . . .
voglio dire	R1–2	I want to say, I mean	I mean . . .

35 Connector words and expressions

The "connector words and expressions" sampled in this chapter are used in both the spoken and the written language and have a cohesive function, allowing the logical flow of sentences. They are therefore different from the so called "fillers," whose use can be defined as "pragmatic," to do with maintaining successful verbal interaction, and is characteristically restricted to speech.

Adding	**allo stesso modo** **inoltre**, **per di più**	similarly also, besides
	fra l'altro	among other things, furthermore
Adding correlation	**non solo** . . . **ma anche** . . .	not only . . . but also . . .
Admitting	**anche se**, **sebbene**	even though
	nonostante, **malgrado**	in spite of
Confirming or reinforcing	**appunto**, **per l'appunto**	precisely
	e infatti, **in effetti**	indeed
	ovviamente, **certo che**	of course
	anzi	even more
Contrasting	**in effetti**, **in realtà**	in fact
	mentre	while
	ma, **però**, **ma però** (R1)	but, however
	tuttavia (R2–3)	however

R1* vulgar or indecent
R1 informal, colloquial
R2 neutral, unmarked
R3 formal, written
Italian words and expressions are R2 unless otherwise indicated. See also p. 5.

	comunque, **in ogni modo**, **in ogni caso**	anyway, at any rate
	ciononostante	nevertheless
	d'altra parte, **d'altro lato**	on the other hand
Contrasting correlation	**da una parte** . . . **dall'altra** . . . ; **da un lato** . . . **dall'altro** . . .	on the one hand . . . on the other . . .
	ora . . . **ora** . . .	now . . . now/then . . . sometimes . . . sometimes . . .
Correcting	**al contrario**	on the contrary
	anzi	in fact, to be precise
	invece	instead
	che dico (R2), **mi correggo** (R2–3)	what am I saying, I mean (both in spoken language)
Explaining	**il che vuol dire che** . . .	which means that . . .
	cioè	that is
	voglio dire (R1–2)	I mean (spoken language)
Expressing purpose	**in modo/maniera tale che**, **così che**, **così poi** (R1)	so that
Introducing cause	**poiché**, **dal momento che**, **dato che**, **giacché** (R2–3)	since (usu before stating the effect)
	perché	because (after stating the effect)
Introducing effect	**e così**, **e allora** (R1–2)	and so
	per cui	(and) for this reason
	di conseguenza	consequently, as a consequence
	dunque, **perciò**, **quindi** (R1–2), **pertanto** (R2–3)	therefore
Listing	**prima di tutto** . . . **poi** . . . **infine** . . .	first (of all) . . . then . . . finally . . .
	in primo luogo . . . **in secondo luogo** . . . **in terzo luogo** . . .	firstly . . . secondly . . . thirdly . . . (etc.)
	primo . . . **secondo** . . . **terzo** . . . (R1–2)	first . . . second . . . third . . .
Stating alternatives	(**o**) . . . **o/oppure** . . .	(either) . . . or . . .
	. . . **altrimenti/sennò** (R1) . . .	. . . otherwise/or else . . .
Summing up	**insomma**, **a/per farla breve**	to sum it all up, in short
	tutto sommato	all things considered
	in fondo, **dopotutto**	after all

Bibliography

Dictionaries

Il dizionario della lingua italiana, ed. T. De Mauro (Milan: Paravia, 2000).
Dizionario italiano Sabatino Coletti (Florence: Giunti, 1997).
Vocabolario della lingua italiana (Rome: Istituto dell'Enciclopedia Italiana, 1996).
Vocabolario della lingua italiana, 12th edition (Bologna: Zanichelli, 1997).

Italian grammars

Battaglia, S. and V. Pernicone, *La grammatica italiana* (Turin: Loescher, 1951).
Dardano, M. and P. Trifone, *La nuova grammatica della lingua italiana* (Bologna: Zanichelli, 1997).
Grande grammatica italiana di consultazione (Bologna: Il Mulino) Cited as *GGIC*.
Vol 1: *La frase. I sintagmi nominali e preposizionale*, ed. L. Renzi, 1988.
Vol 2: *I sintagmi verbale, aggettivale, avverbiale. La subordinazione*, ed. L. Renzi and G. Salvi, 1991.
Vol 3: *Tipi di frasi, deissi, formazione delle parole*, ed. L. Renzi, G. Salvi and A. Cardinaletti, 2001.
Lepschy, G. C. and A. L. Lepschy, *The Italian Language Today* (London: Hutchinson, 1977).
Maiden, M. and C. Robustelli, *A Reference Grammar of Italian* (London: Routledge, 2000).
Serianni, L., *Grammatica italiana* (Turin: UTET, 1989).

Descriptions of contemporary variation in Italian

Bazzanella, C., *Le facce del parlare: un approccio pragmatico all'italiano parlato* (Florence: La Nuova Italia, 1994).
Berretta, M. "Il parlato italiano contemporaneo." In L. Serianni and P. Trifone (eds.), *Storia della lingua italiana*, Volume 1 (Bari: Laterza, 1994).
Canepari, L., *Italiano standard e pronunce regionali* (Padua: Cleup, 1983).
De Mauro, T. *et al*. (eds.), *Lessico di frequenza dell'italiano parlato* (Milan: Etas libri). (Cited as *LIP*.)
Lavino, C. and A. A. Sobrero (eds.), *La lingua degli studenti universitari* (Florence: La Nuova Italia, 1991).
Sabatini, F., "L'italiano dell'uso medio: una realtà tra le varietà linguistiche italiane." In G. Holtus and E. Radtke (eds.), *Gesprochenes Italienisch in Geschichte und Gegenwart* (Tübingen: Narr, 1985), pp. 154–184.
Sobrero, A. A. (ed.), *Introduzione all'italiano contemporaneo* (Bari: Laterza, 1992). (Cited as *IIC*.)

The following works were consulted on specific themes (cross-referenced by chapter number) and will be useful for those who wish to study particular points in more depth.

1 Varieties of Italian

Pietrini, D., "'X' 6 :-(?' Gli sms e il trionfo dell'informalità e della scrittura ludica." *Italienisch*, 46 (2001): 92–101.

16 Pronouns

Berretta, M., "I pronomi clitici nell'italiano parlato." In G. Holtus and E. Radtke (eds.), *Gesprochenes Italienisch in Geschichte und Gegenwart*, q.v.

22 Auxiliary verbs

Sorace, Antonella, "Gradients in auxiliary selection with intransitive verbs," *Language* 76 (2000): 859–890.

25 Prepositions

Skytte, Gunver, *La sintassi dell'infinito nell'italiano moderno*, *Revue Romane* numéro supplémentaire 27 (1983).

28 Use of tenses

Bertinetto, P. M., *Tempo, aspetto e azione nel verbo italiano* (Florence: Accademia della Crusca, 1986).

Gambarara, D., "Il passato remoto nell'italiano parlato." In T. De Mauro (ed.), *Come parlano gli italiani* (Florence: La Nuova Italia, 1994), pp.183–194. (Based on *LIP*.)

29 Sequence of tenses

Vanelli, L., "La concordanza dei Tempi." In *GGIC*, II.

30 Subjunctive

Schneider, S., *Il congiuntivo tra modalità e subordinazione: uno studio sull'italiano parlato* (Rome: Carocci, 1999). (Based on *LIP*.)

Stewart, D., "The Italian subjunctive: tradition and innovation," *The Italianist* 16 (1996): 234–304.

31 Conditional sentences

Mazzoleni, Marco, "Le frasi ipotetiche." In *GGIC*, II.

32 Subordination

Solarino, R., "Fra iconicità e paraipotassi: il gerundio nell'italiano contemporaneo." In B. Moretti *et al.* (eds.), *Linee di tendenza dell'italiano contemporaneo* (Rome: Bulzoni, 1992), pp. 155–170.

Voghera, M., *Sintassi e intonazione dell'italiano parlato* (Bologna: Il Mulino, 1992). (Based on *LIP*.)

Italian word index

This Index includes all Italian words cited or discussed in the book. It covers all chapters except those which list proper, technical or foreign terms, i.e. **7** Proper Names, **8** Geographical Names, **9** Abbreviations and Acronyms, **10** Latin Expressions, **12** Numerals and Telephone Conventions, and **13** Measurement.

a 321–325, 425
abbaiare 123
abbandonare 119
abbandonarsi 375
abbassare 71, 300
abbastanza 379
abbattere 100, 103, 137, 313
abbattersi 313
abbisognare 297
abbondare 304
abbreviare 100
abbuiare 298
abile 30, 376, 381
abitabile 34
abito 186
abituare 376
abituarsi 375
abituato 376
aborigeno 122
abortire 303
abusare 42, 388
acca 287
accadere 36, 297, 368
accalappiare 116
accampamento 32, 54
accendere 160
accennare 159, 369, 372, 382
accento 221, 224
accettare 90, 369
accettazione 52
accezione 52
acchiappare 116
-acchiare 173
-acchione 173
-acchiotto 171
acciaio 184
accidente 30
accidenti! 434, 435
accingersi 375
-accio 172
acciuffare 116
accoglienza 49
accogliere 72
accollare 109
accomodare 42, 131
accomodarsi 42
accomodata 131
accompagnare 149
accompagnato 175
acconsentire 90, 369
accontentarsi 370, 388
accorciare 100, 301
accordare 109
accordarsi 90
accordo 44, 90, 158, 382, 434
accorgersi 312, 370, 388
accorrere 303
accostare 313
accostarsi 313
accrescere 301
accrescersi 111
accrescimento 52
accrescitivo 223
accusare 42, 372
acqua 175, 182, 184, 185, 186
acquazzone 144
acuto 224
adattarsi 375
adatto 376
addetto 376
addirsi 90
additare 139
addormentare 313
addormentarsi 160, 313
addossare 109
addosso 180
adempiere 388
adiacenze 126
adirarsi 91
adorare 367
adulatore 36
adulterare 101
aereo da carico 40
affabile 33
affaccendato 376
affamare 159
affanculo (mandare –) 179
affascinante 94
affascinare 35, 365
affatto 286
  niente – 437
affermare 133, 369, 406
afferrare 116
affettare 42, 100
affibbiare 109
affidare 109
affinché 411
affine 32
affiorare 296
affisso 129
affliggere 91
affogare 299
affondare 299
affrettarsi 117, 374
affrontare 33, 71
afrore 141
agenda 30
agente 128
  – delle tasse 31
agevolare 114
agevolazione 45
aggettivo 222
aggiudicare 30, 73, 109
aggiungere 369
aggiustare 42, 131
aggiustata 131
aggrapparsi 116
aggravare 301
agguantare 116
agile 151
agitazione 32
agonia 30
agonizzare 31
ahi! 438
ahia! 438
ahimé! 436, 437
ahio! 438
aho! 438
aia! 176
aiutare 114, 186, 376
ala 258
alcolico 42
alcolizzato 42, 52
alcuno 286
alieno 381
alimentare 158
all'improvviso 137
alla fine 34
allampanato 151
allargarsi 111
allegro 38, 40, 46
allenarsi 375
allenatore 40
allettante 94
allo stesso modo 441
allocco 146–147
alloggiare 31, 42, 187
allontanare 313

allontanarsi 119, 313
allora 439
  e –? 437, 442
alloro 175
allunare 68, 160
allungarsi 111
altarino 175
alterare 42, 101
altero 130
altezzoso 130
alto 153, 281
altrettanto 272
altrimenti 442
altro 276
  d'– lato 442
  d'altra parte 442
altura 115
alzare 313
  – il gomito 178
alzarsi 111, 313
amare 367
ambiente 52
àmbito 52, 86
ambìto 86
ameno 94
America 182
ammalare 301
ammalarsi 160
ammaliante 94
ammàppete 434
ammarare 68, 160
ammazzalo 434
ammesso che 419
ammettere 90, 133, 369, 405
ammettiamo che 419
amministrare 42
ammollare 73
ammonire 118, 382
ammuffire 296
amore 437
ampliarsi 111
ampolla 96
amputare 100
analizzare 105
anatra 123
anche 279, 425, 441
  – se 410, 441
andarci matto 166
andare 291–292, 296, 309, 369, 374
  – (a qu) 162
  – a male 161
  – via 119
andarsene 119, 166
angioletto 10
angolare 131
angolo 40
  – d'incidenza 35
angoscia 30
anguria 11
anello 11
anima 75
  – viva 180
animato 52
animo 75
animoso 52
annata 52
annegare 69, 299
annichilare 103
annichilire 103
annientare 103
anno 52, 85, 125
  – sabbatico 117
annoiare 42, 313
annoiarsi 313
annoso 125
annottare 298
annunciare 118, 133, 369
annuncio 31, 129
ano 85
ansa 114
ansioso 373
antico 125
anticucina 40
anzi 35, 441, 442
anziano 125
apertura 116
apice 153
apogeo 153
apostrofo 224
apparecchiare 160
apparenza 52, 92
apparire 297
apparizione 52, 92
appartenere 303, 365
appassire 296
appellativo 121
appendiabiti 10
appendino 10
appioppare 109
appisolarsi 160
applicazione 42
appoggiare 114, 299
apprendere 382
apprestarsi 375
approdare 296
approfittare 160, 312
approfittarsi 312
approfondire 160, 387
appropriarsi 142, 388
approvare 74, 387
appuntamento 42
appunto 434, 441
  prendere appunti 149
aprile 181
aprire 160
arabo 180
arca 79
archi 145
archibugio 112
archivio 260
arco 79
ardire 371
ardore 106
area circostante 126
-arellare 173
argomentazione 52
argomento 31
arguire 31
aria 92, 175
  tromba d'- 144
arido 105
arma 79, 258
  – da fuoco 112, 124
armo 79
aroma 141
arrabbiare 313
arrabbiarsi 91, 313
arraffare 142
arrampicarsi 98
arrapato 88
arrendersi 312
arricchire 301
arrivare 296, 374
arrogante 130
arrossare 53
arrossire 53, 296
arrostire 299
arrosto 177
arrugginire 301
arso 105
artefice 67
articolare 133
articolato 222
articolo 222
artificio 67
artiglieria 112
arto 119
ascendere 98
asciugare 301
asciutto 105, 151
ascoltare 387
asilo 49, 150
asino 123, 185, 435
aspettare 371, 382, 387, 409
aspettarsi 370
aspetto 92, 106
asportare 149
asporto 149
assaggiare 154
assaporare 53
assassinio 42
assatanato 88
asse 43
assegnare 109
assennato 38
asserire 133, 369, 406
assessore 31
assi 126
assistente 150
assistere 31, 114, 388
asso 175
assoggettare 102
assolutamente 434
assomigliare 388
assorbire 35
assordare 299
asta 143
astenersi 381
asterisco 224
astratto 222
-astro 172
astuto 42
atono 221
attaccapanni 10, 12
attaccare 374
attardarsi 375
attempato 125
attendente di volo 36, 40
attendere 31
attento 376, 437
attenuante 34
attenuare 34
attenzione 437
atterraggio 53
atterramento 53
atterrare 68, 299
atterrire 68
attico 31
attività 140, 156
attivo 223
attizzatoio 41
atto 41, 376
attore comico 32
attraente 94
attrattiva 53
attraverso 294, 326
attrazione 53
attrezzature 45
attribuire 109
attuale 31
augurarsi 371
aumentare 111, 299
autoctono 122
automobile 32

autorizzare 376
avanti 331–332, 436
– negli anni 125
avanzamento 53
avanzare 162, 299
avanzata 53
avanzato (di età avanzata) 125
avanzo 53
– di galera 53
avariare 101
avarizia 42
avaro 36
avena 260
avercela con qu 165
averci 9, 166
avere 377, 383
– a che fare 161
– con sé 149
averla con qu 165
avidità 42
avito 85
avvalersi 312
avvampare 296
avveduto 42
avvenente 94
avvenimento 36
avvenire 296, 297
avverbio 222
avvertimento 31
avvertire 118, 372
avviare 313
avviarsi 313
avvicinare 313
avvicinarsi 313
avvisare 118
avvisato 187
avviso 129
avvito 85
avvocato 126, 175
azienda 34
-azzo 172
azzuppare 11

babbeo 146–147, 148
babbo 11, 12
babbuccia 136
baccalà 146–147
bacchetta 143
baccelli 11
Bacco 85
baco 85
bacucco 125
bada (tenere a –) 183
badarci 166
badare 31, 383
baffo 113
bagagli 259
bagagliaio 51
baggiano 146–147
bagnato 180, 184
baiocchi 120
balena 79
balenare 298
baleno 79
balìa 86
bàlia 86
balla 79
ballo 79
in – 178
balordo 146–147, 148
balzare 296
bambino/-a 96
banale 38
banca 75
banchetto 45
banchina 140
banco 75, 134
banda 80
bandiera 143
bando 80, 129
bar 39
baracca 31, 175
barba 113
barbaro 281
barbone 11
barca 47, 95, 182
barra 39, 143, 225
barriera 108, 155
barrire 123
barrito 123
basamento 40
base 40
basette 113
basket 39
basta 437
bastare 162, 277, 297, 365, 383, 407
bastimento 95
bastoncino 143
bastone 143, 175
battaglia (cavallo di –) 176
nome di – 121
battello 95
battere 71, 102, 180, 186
– a macchina 71
battersela 165
battersi 71
battesimo (nome di –) 121
battuta 39
bau/bau-bau 123
baule 51
bavero 43
bazar 138
be'/bèh 439
bebè 96
becco 175
– di un quattrino 120
bèe 123
belare 123
belato 123
bellino 11
bellissimo 94, 434
bello 46, 94, 165, 184, 279, 377
–/che –! 434, 436
ben nutrito 106
benché 410
bene (far –) 90
– in carne 106
benedire 175
benissimo 434
benzina 36, 107
beota 146–147, 148
bere 124, 184, 185
darla a – 165
berla 165
bersela 165
bestia 91, 175
andare in – 91
bevuta 124
bianco 184
di punto in – 88, 182
in – 175
in – e nero 175
biberon 96
biblioteca 35
bibliotecario 35
bicchiere 110
bietolone 146–147
bigiare 11
bilia 93
bigliettaio 33
bilancia 76, 260
bilancio 76
biglia 93
biliardino 40
bimbo/-a 96
binocolo 110
bisbiglìo 86
bisbìglio 86
bischero 146–147
bisdrucciolo 221
bisognare 297, 365, 407
bisogno (avere –) 159, 371
bisticcio 37
bisturi 38
bisunto 104
blaterare 133
boa 252
bocca 175, 186, 289
boccaccia (fare una –) 106
boccale 110
boccata 53, 120
boccetta 96
boccia 93
boccino 93
boccone 53, 120
body 39
boh? 438
bollare 53
bolletta 182
bollire 53
bomba 43, 80, 124
tornare a – 175
bombo 80
bordare 31
bordo 43, 140
a – 43
borgata 126
borioso 130
borraccia 96
borseggiare 142
botta 76, 124
botte (f pl) 84, 175, 259
botte (f s) 84, 176, 183
bótte/bòtte 84
bottega 138
bottegaio/-a 138
bottiglia 96
bottiglione 96
botto 76, 124
bouquet 141
box 40
bozza 76
bozzo 76
braccio 175, 253
brace 180
bramare 367
bramire 123
bramito 123
branca 80
branco 80
bravissimo 434
bravo 31, 46, 377, 381, 434
breccia 116, 132
breve (per farla –) 442
brevetto 36
briciola 76
briciolo 76
bronzo 177
bruciapelo (a –) 88, 175
bruciare 299
– le tappe
brutto 165, 184, 279
buca 76, 116
buco 76, 116

budello 253
bue 176, 183, 185, 258
bufera 144
bulbo oculare 93
bum 124
buon giorno 58
buono 46, 184, 281, 376
burattini 175
burbanzoso 130
burocrate 135
burrasca 144
bussare 124
bussola 43, 181
busta 67, 80
bustarella 67
bustina 67
busto 80
buttare 152
– giù 103
buttarsi 374

cabina per la doccia 40
cacchio 434
caccia 252
andare a – 137
cacciare 71, 137
cacio 11, 185
cadde 85
cade 85
cadente 33
cadere 33, 71, 124, 296
lasciare/fare – 158
caduta 124
caffè 39
cagna 123
caì/caì–caì 123
calamità 86, 89
calamìta 86
calare 68, 299, 301
calcagno 114, 253
calcestruzzo 33
calciare 159
calcio 103, 114, 159
– d'angolo 40
scarpa da – 136
calcolatore 76
calcolatrice 76
calcolo 132
caldo 53
calende 176
calice 110
calorico 53
calorifero 53
calorifico 53
caloroso 53
caloscia 136
calpestare 387
calzatura 136
calze 126
calzoni 126
cambiamento 53
cambiare 42, 71, 300
cambio 53
camera 31
camerata 252
cameriere/-a 135
camicia 176, 179
camino 85
camminare 294, 295
cammino 85, 127
campana 124, 184
campanello 124
campare 297
campeggio 32, 40, 54
camping 40, 54
campo 32, 54
– di concentramento 56
canarini 126
cancellata 108
cancelletto 224
cancelliere 43
cancello 108
candelotto 143
cane 123, 176, 180, 184, 185
freddo – 177
porco – 435
canestro 39, 137
canna 67, 143
cannella 67
cannone 67, 68, 112
cannuccia 67
canoa 95
canone 68
canonica 76
canonico 68, 76
canotto 95
cantante 54
cantare 123, 185
cantautore 54
canticchiare 170
canto 54, 123
cantore 54
canzone 54
capace 30, 373
capelli 113, 176, 259
capello 113, 176, 177
capigliatura 113
capire 406
fare – 35
capitale 120, 252
capitare 162, 297, 368
capitolo 183
capitombolo 124
capo 166–167, 176
a – 225
andare a – 225
capo d'istituto 150
capopagina 153
capote 153
capoverso 225
cappa 252
capperi 434
cappotta 153
cappuccio 153
capra 123, 176
capriola 80
capriolo 80
captare 54
carabina 112
carabiniere 128
caramella 76
caramello 76
carattere 43
carbone 184
carburante 107
cargo 40
cariarsi 44
carica 76, 156
carico 40, 76
carino 11, 94
carità 108
per – 437
carnagione 32
carne 106, 176
caro 85, 281
carovana 145
carponi 294
carrello 54
carretta 43, 54
carriola 54
carro 32, 54, 85, 176
carrozza 54
carrozzella 54
carrozzina 54
carrozzone 54
carta 43, 176
cartella 80
cartello 43, 80, 129
cartellone 129
caruccio 11
casa 67, 80, 85, 184
faccende di – 156
casaccio (a –) 176
cascare 296
casello 108
caserma 31
casino 32, 67, 86, 182
casinò 32, 86
caso 80, 107
fare – 159
in ogni – 442
per il – che 413
caso mai 413
caspita! 434, 437
cassa 40, 85
casseruola 32
cassetta 40, 76
cassetto 77
castigo 37
casuale 32
casualmente 32
catapulta 43
catastrofe 89
catena 145
catinella 181
catorcio 43
cattedratico 150
cattiveria 55
cattività 55
cattivo 33, 279
catturare 54, 116
causa 161
cautela 32
cauzione 32
cava 32, 55
cavalcare 294
cavallo 123, 186
– di battaglia 176
cavarsela 165
caverna 32, 55
cavillare 37
cavità 116
cavo 145
cavolo 176
– /che –! 434, 435, 436, 437
col –! 437
un – 180, 287
cazzo/che – ! 434, 435
col –/manco per –! 437
del – 435
stare sul – 91, 183
testa di – 435
un – 287
cazzone 146–147
cedere 109
ceffone 11
celere 128
celerino 128
-cello 170
cemento 33, 55
cencio 11
cenno (fare un –) 159
centro 134
cera 77, 106, 176
cercare 154, 186, 371, 387
cerchia 77

cerchio 55, 77, 176
cero 77
certo 281, 373, 405–409, 434
– che 441
cervello 253
cervo 123
cessare 298, 371
cesto 39
cetriolo 32
che 9, 422–424
– dico 439, 442
cherosene 107
chi 423
chiacchierare 133
chiamare 376
chiappe 95
chiarire 301
chiaro 184
chiave (chiudere a –) 159
chicchirichì 123
chicco d'uva 260
chiedere 92, 372, 387, 388
china 115
chinare 58
chinarsi 59
chioccia 123
chiocciare 123
chiocciola 224
chioma 113
chiudere 72, 159, 160, 175
chiuso 141
ci 9, 166–167, 264, 266
ciabatta 136
cianciare 133
ciarlare 133
cicalare 133
ciccione 106
ciclone 144
cieco 184, 187
cielo 176, 186
per amor del –! 437
santo –! 437
cifra 46
ciglia 113
ciglio 113, 254
cima 153
cimento 55
cinepresa 31
cinghia 55
cinguettare 123
cinguettio 123
-cino 169
cinta 55
cintola 55
cintura 55, 126
– di castità 55
– di sicurezza 50–88
cinturino 55
cinturone 55
ciò che 423
cioè 439, 442
– a dire 439
ciononostante 442
ciottolo 132
cip/cip–cip 123
circo 55
circolare 295, 296
circolo 55
circostante (area –) 126
citrullo 146–147
cittadino 50
classe 46
clava 143
clavicola 43
clessidra 110
cloche 143
coadiuvare 114
coagulare 44
coccio 185, 186
coccodè 123
cocktail 40
cocomero 11, 32
cocuzzolo 153
coda 145, 176
coerente 33
cogliere 72, 116
coglione 93, 146–147
coglioni (rompere i –) 182
stare sui – 183
cognato 32
cognome 121
colare 68, 72, 304
– a picco 181, 300
colerico 85
colf 135
colla 80
collaborare 114
collaboratrice familiare 135
collana 43
collare 43
collaudare 154
colle 115
college 32
collegio 32, 43
collerico 85
collettivo 222
colletto 43
collettore 43
collezionista 43
collina 115
collo 43, 80
colmo 153
colonna 145
colorato 55
colore 176
colorito 55
coloro che 423
colpa 80, 99
dare la – 158
farsi una – 161
colpevole 55, 373
colpo 38, 80, 176
colposo 55
cólto/còlto 84
coma 85
comandare 372
comando (barra di –) 143
comare 11, 12
combustibile 107
come 272, 409
come dire 439
come no 434
come per 413
come se 176, 401, 413
comico 32
cominciare 186, 298, 307, 374, 383
comma 85
commediante 32
commendatore 68
commentare 387
commentatore 68
commiserazione 38
commissione 156
commovente 377
commozione 32, 33
commuovere 47, 73
comodità 32
comodo 44, 176
compagno 134
comparativo 221
compare 11
comparire 297
comparizione 92
comparsa 92
compasso 43
compensare 387
compenso 127
competente 378
competenze 127
competizione 43, 98
compiacente 32
compiacenza 32
compiacersi 383
compiacimento 32
compiaciuto 30
compiere 56
compimento 55
compiti 259
compìto 56, 86
cómpito 86, 156
compiuto 56
complemento 55
complemento oggetto 223
complessione 32
complimento 55
comporre 74
composto 223
comprendere 406
comprendonio (duro di –) 146–147
comprensibile 56
comprensione 38
comprensivo 38, 43, 56
compromesso 43
comune 187, 222
comunicare 118
comunque 442
con 326–327, 424
– tutto che 410
concedere 109, 373
concentramento 56
concentrarsi 375
concentrazione 56
conciare 177
conciliare 49, 68, 72
concilio 68
concordare 44, 90
concorde 381
concorrenza 43, 98
fare – 158
concorrere 44, 303
– alle spese 30
concorso 98
concreto 33, 222
concussione 33
condannare 376
condizionale 223, 224
condizione 145
a – che/di 412, 418, 419
condizioni 259
essere in – di 176
conducente 56
condurre 149, 376
conduttore 33, 56
confabulare 133
confarsi 90
conferenza 35–42, 44, 133
conferire 109
confessare 133, 369
confidenza 44
confortevole 44
confrontare 33, 71

confrontarsi 33
confronto (mettere a –) 33
confusione 32
congedo 117
congelare 44, 73
congelarsi 44
congiuntivo 223, 224
congiunto 32
congiunzione 222
congratularsi 312, 388
congresso 44
conoscente 56
conoscenze 259
conoscere 118, 395
conoscitore 56
conquibus 120
conquistare 102
consapevole 368
consegnare 109
conseguenza (di –) 442
conseguire 75
consentire 44, 369, 383
conservante 36
conservare 48, 72
considerare 37
considerevole 50
consigliare 68, 372
consiglio 68
– di amministrazione 43
consistente 33, 50, 382
consistere 297, 381
consonante 223
contadino 36
contanti 120, 259
contarci 166
contare 72, 370
contento 33, 184, 373, 404
contenuto 33
continuare 298, 374
conto 176
tenere – 161
fare i conti 176
contrario (al –) 442
contrattare 158
contrattempo 89
contravvenire 388
contravvenzione 99
contribuire 375
contro 327–328
controcorrente 177
controllare 44, 105
convegno 44
convenire 90, 163, 304, 365, 384, 407
convenzione 44
conversare 133
convincere 376
convivere 299
convinto 405
cooperare 114
coperchio 153
copia 85
coppia 85, 110, 126
coprire di insulti 121
coraggio! 436
coraggioso 31, 378
corda 145, 186
cordiale 34, 40
cordicella 145
cordoncino 145
cordone 145
cornacchia 123
cornata 158
corner 40, 177
corna (con le –) 88
avere/mettere le – 177
fare le – 177
corno 88, 254
cornuto 88, 185
corpo 39
corpulento 106
correggere 131
correggo (mi –) 442
correre 72, 117, 302, 374
corresponsione 127
corrispondere 90
corrompere 101
corsa 77
corsivo 222, 225
corso 41, 77, 127
córso/còrso 84
corteo 145
cortese 33
corvo 123
cosa 439
facciamo una – 440
– che 423
coscia 77, 119
– di pollo 143
coscienza 44
coscio 77, 119
così 272, 379
– che 442
– da 411
– poi 442
diciamo – 440
e – 440, 442
facciamo – 440
per – dire 440
coso 17, 439
costa 80, 115
costante 33
costare 297, 365
– un patrimonio 120
costipato 44
costipazione 44
costo 80
costretto 377
costringere 376
cotto 176
cova 77
covo 77
cra cra 123
crac 124
crasso 33
creativo 56
creatore 56
creatura 44, 96
crederci 166
credere 370, 405
credersela 165
crema 44
crepa 116
crepaccio 116
crepare 296
crescenza 52
crescere 111, 300
crescita 52
cresta 153
cretino 146–147, 148
cribbio! 435
crimine 99
crine 113
criniera 113
cristallo 110
cristianità 44
cristo! 435
critica 77, 155
critico 77
croce 10
a occhio e – 180
crocetta 10
crociera 10
crollare 296
fare – 103
crosta (terrestre) 153
cruccia 10
crudele 45
crudo 176
cucco 184
cucinare 56
cucuzzolo 153
cuffia 182
cui 422
per – 442
culmine 153
culo 95, 107
avere – 107, 177
che –! 177
mandare affanculo 179
prendere per il – 178
va' a dar via il –! 435
cuocere 56, 301
cuoia 254
tirare le – 177
cuoio 254
cuore 132, 186
cupìdo 86
cùpido 86
cupo 36
curatore 34
curioso 373
cuscinetto a sfera 93

d'accordo 44, 90, 158, 382, 434
da 309, 327, 328–331
– parte di 309
dai/ (e) –! 435, 436
dal momento che 442
danaro 120
danneggiare 101
dappertutto 140
dare 42, 109
– da mangiare 158
– nell'occhio 180
– retta 159
darla a bere/intendere 165
dati 259
dato (n) 259
dato (V) (essere –) 369
– che 442
davanti 331–332
davvero? 436
decade 33
decadere 44, 71, 296
decennio 33
decente 44
decidere 30, 369, 384
decidersi 375, 384
deciso 377
declamare 133
declino (in –) 30
declivio 115
decollare 119
decomporsi 44
decorrere 297, 303
decrepito 125
decrescere 296
deferire 45, 49, 73
deficiente 56, 146–147, 148
defluire 296
deformare 101
deforme 56
degenerare 296

degnarsi 160
degno 373
degustare 73
del luogo 122
delitto 99
delizioso 94
deludere 33
delusione 33
deluso 404
demolire 103
demonio 184
denaro 36, 120
– sporco 104
denotare 139
dente 152
denunciare 45, 161
denunziare 45
denutrito 151
deperito 151
deperire 296
depredare 142
deprimere 313
deprimersi 313
deragliare 296
deretano 95
derivare 300
derubare 74, 142
desiderare 367, 407
desistere 381
destare 313
destarsi 313
destinato 377
destino 107
destituito 33
destituzione 33
desumere 405
deteriorare 101
determinare 384
determinativo 222
deturpare 101
devastare 103
di 37, 332–334
– fatti 31
– fronte 331–332
dialetto 119
dialogare 133
diamine 435
diaria 127
diatesi 223
diavolo 177, 179, 185
che –! 435
l'avvocato del – 175
va' al –! 435
dicci 85
diceria 38
dichiarare 35, 133, 369, 406
dici 85
diciamo (così) 439
didietro 93, 95
dietro (n) 93
dietro (prep) 290–291, 335
difensore 93
difettivo 45, 56
difettoso 45, 56
differire 45, 73
difficile 377
difficoltà 382
diffidare 381
difforme 56
diffusamente 87
dilapidare 33
dilapidato 33
dilatarsi 111
diluvio 144
dimagrire 300
dimenticare 314, 370
dimenticarsi 314, 370
diminuire 300
diminutivo 223
dimissioni 259
dimostrare 34, 139
dimostrativo 222
din don 124
dinamite 143
dinanzi 331
dindi 120
dinnanzi 331
dintorni 126
dio 258
Dio 181, 186
dipendente 222
dipendere 297, 388
dire 133, 186, 369, 372, 406
mandare a – 376
direttore 33, 34, 150
dirla grossa 158
disapprovare 387
disastro 89
discendere 298
discesa 115
in – 88
disco 41, 47, 100
discordia (pomo della –) 181
discorrere 72, 133, 303
discorso 133
discussione 31
discutere 31, 133
disfare 103
disgrazia 33, 91
essere in – 33
disgustare 73
disidratato 105
disintegrare 103
disoccupazione 156
disonore 33
disperato 373
dispiacere 163, 297, 366, 404, 407
dispiaciuto 373
disponibile 377
disporre 384, 388
disposto 377
dissecare 100
disseccato 105
dissuadere 381
distare 160
distendersi 41
distensione 41
distinto 282
distruggere 103
disturbare 91
disturbo 91
dito 177, 254
ditta 34
dittongo 223
divampare 296
divenire 296
diventare 111, 296
diverso 282
divertirsi 375
divisa 120
divisorio 155
doccia (– scozzese) 177
cabina per la – 40
docente 150
documento 37, 41
doglie 47
dolce 282
dolere 186, 297
dolore 30
domanda 33, 42, 49, 92
domandare 33, 92, 368, 372, 387
domani 186
domestico (adj) 45, 156
domestico (n) 45, 135
donare 109, 186
donazione 108
donna (– delle pulizie) 135
– di servizio 135
dono 108
dopo 335
dopotutto
doppietta 112
dormire 177, 185, 186
dorso 93
dosso 115
dotare 109
dote 108
dótto/dòtto 84
dottore 34
dovere (n) 157
dovere (V) 267, 306–307, 367, 397, 417
dovunque 140
drin/drindrin 124
dring/dring-dring 124
dubbio 405
dubitare 370, 388
due punti 224
duna 115
dunque 440, 442
durare 304
duro 184
– di comprendonio 146–147

e/è 83
e commerciale 224
ebete 146–147, 148
eccellere 297
eccessivo 38
eccetto che 412
eccì 124
eccitato 88
ecco 434, 440
echeggiare 298
editore 34
– del montaggio 34
educatore 150
educatrice 150
educazione 34
eee . . . 440
effettivamente 34
effettivo 34, 56
effetto 153
in effetti 35, 441
efficace 34, 56, 377
efficacemente 34
efficiente 56
effluvio 141
ehi! 438
elaborare 37
elargire 109
elargizione 108
elefante 123
elementare 150
elemosina 108
-ellare 173
-ello 170
elsa 114
emaciato 151
emanare 304
embè? 437

emergere 296
emigrare 302
emotivo 57
emozionante 57
emozione 45
emporio 138
energetico 57
energico 57
enfasi 45
enfatico 45
entrarci 167
entrare 296
entrata 108
entro 352
entusiasmare 366
epico 45
epigrafe 129
epitaffio 129
epopea 45
equilibrio 40
equivalere 297
-erellare 173
-erello 170
erta 115
erudito 50
esalazione 141
esaminare 105
esatto 434
esauriente 43
esaurientemente 88
eschimese 40
eschimo 40
esclamare 369
escludere 406
esempio 35
esemplare 36
esercente 138
esercitarsi 388
esercizio commerciale 138
esibire 139
esibizione 37, 45
esigente 34
esigere 33, 92
esile 151
esistere 297
esitante 377
esitare 375, 381
esito 34
eskimo 40
esondare 296
esortare 376
esoso 38
espandersi 111
espatriare 296
espletivo 45
esplodere 124, 300
esplosione 124
esporre 133, 139
esposizione 45
espressione 106
espresso 52
esprimere 39, 74
esprimersi 133
essere 297, 375, 381
– dietro a 10, 291
è che 440
non è che 286–288, 440
estendersi 111
estenuante 34
estenuare 34
esteso (per –) 87, 88
estorcere 142
età 125
-ettare 173
-etto 170
evadere 304
evaporare 304
evento 36
eventuale 34
eventualità (nell' – che) 419
eventualmente 34
evidenza 34
evincere 34
evitare 371, 407
evolvere 296
evolversi 111
evviva! 436

fabbrica 34
faccenda 156
facchino 48
faccia 106, 140, 177
rompere/spaccare la – 179
facciamo così 440
facciamo una cosa 440
facciata 140
facile 34, 184, 377
facilità 45
facilitare 114
facilitazione 45
falciare 100
falla 77
fallare 57
fallire 45, 57, 303
fallo 77, 99
falò 106
fame 159, 184
famigerato 36, 57
familiare 45
famoso 57
fanciullo/-a 96
fango 68
fantasia 382
fantastico 434, 436
fantolino/-a 96
farcela 165, 182, 375
fare 123, 186, 384
– a meno 161
– in modo 161
far – 368
sul – del giorno/della sera 425
farla finita 165
farla franca 165
farla grossa 165
farla lunga 165
farneticare 133
farsi le pere 137
fastidio 42, 91, 158, 366, 407
fastidioso 34
fatica 47, 156
faticare 11, 375
fato 107
fattezze 105
fatto (n) (il – che) 409
il – è che 440
fatto (V) (venire –) 369
fatuo 130
fava 181
favella 119
favoriti 113
fede 11
fegato 177
felice 373
felicità 57
felicitazione 57
femminile 222
fendere 69, 100
fenditura 116
ferace 68
ferale 45
feriale 117
ferie 117
ferire 35, 137
ferita 35
fermare 313
fermarsi 313, 374
fermo 45
feroce 51, 68
ferro 177, 186
– di cavallo 136
toccare – 177
fertilizzare 158
fesso 146–147, 148
fessura 116
festa 45, 57, 117, 177
Buone Feste 259
festino 45
festività 57, 117
festivo 46, 57, 117
festoso 46, 57
fetore 141
Fiamme gialle 128
fiancata 140
fianco 140
fiasca / fiaschetta 96
fiasco 43, 96
fiato 100
fica 80
fico 80, 94, 434
un – secco 166, 180, 287
fidarsela 165
fidarsi 388
fiero 130, 373
figlio/-a 96
figo 94, 434
figura 46
fila 80, 144, 177
filarsela 165, 177
filmare 137
filo 80, 145, 254
– da torcere 177
filone (fare –) 11
filosofale (pietra –) 132
filtrare 300
filza 145
finale (adj) 34
finale (n) 252
Finanza 128
finanziere 128
finché 412
fine (adj) 46
fine (n) 40, 252
al – di 411
alla – 34, 88
finestra 156
finestrino 156
fingere 37, 406
finire 298, 371, 384
finirla 165
finito 165, 223
fino 294, 336
finta (fare –) 37, 370, 406
fioccare 298
fionda 43
fiore (il fior –) 177
fiorire 296
firma 34
fischiettare 169
fisica 80
fisico 34, 80
fisionomia 106
flacone 96
flemma 46

flipper 40
florido 106
focaia (pietra –) 132
foglia 77, 185
foglio 77
folla 69
folle 69
fondamento 57, 254
fondare 69, 73
fondazione 57
fondello 178
fondere 69, 301
fondi 120
fondo 93, 134
  in – 442
fondoschiena 95
fonologia 221
fontana 185
fonte 252
footing 40
forbici 126
forca 67
forchetta 67
forcina 67
forcone 67
forma 46
formaggio 11
formalità 32
formazione 30, 46
formìca 86
fòrmica 86
formicolio 260
formoso 94
fornire 109
foro 116
fóro/fòro 84
foro di ventilazione 38
forte 184, 377
fortuna 107, 120
  avere – 177
fortunale 144
fortunato 373
forza 436
forze 259
  – dell'ordine 259
fossa 57, 77, 116
fossato 57
fosso 77
fotografare 137
fotografia 137
fotografico (macchina –) 31
fottersene 166
fra 345–346
  – l'altro 441
fracassare 97
fracassarsi 97
fracasso 34
fragranza 141
franare 296
franco (farla franca) 165
frantumare 97
frantumarsi 97
frantumi (mandare in –) 97
frase 46, 50, 255
freddezza 57
freddo 57, 177, 184
freddura 57
fregare 142
fregarsene 166
frégati! 434
frequenza 35
fretta 117
frettoloso 187
friggere 179
frizione 46
frodare 142
fronte 252
  di – a 331–332
frugoletto/-a 96
frutta 77
frutto 77
fucilare 137
fucile 112
fuggire 304
full 40
fumando 41
fumante 41
fumare 41, 185
fumo 177
fune 145
funerale 259
funerali 259
fungo 46, 68
funzionario 135
funzione 156
fuoco 106, 137, 176, 177, 179
fuori 336–337
  – dai gangheri 178
  – di sé 178
  buttare – 152
fuori bordo 43, 95
fuorigioco 140
fuoriuscire 296
furbo 178
furie 91
fuso 254
futile 38
futuro 223
futuro anteriore 223

gaffe 178
galleggiare 295
gallina 123, 178, 186
gallo 123, 187
galoscia 136
gamba 77, 119
gambo 77
gamma 252
ganascia 179
ganghero 178
gara 98
garage 40
garretto 145
garrire 123
garrito 123
garzone 96
gasolio 36, 107
gatta 178, 187
gattino 187
gatto 123, 178, 185, 186
gaudio 187
gelare 73, 298, 301
gelata 57, 78
gelato 78
gelo 57
gemelli 126
gemma 132
gendarme 128
genere 222
generi alimentari 138
genesi 252
geniale 34
genitore 36
gentile 34, 382
gente 260
gergo 119
gerundio 223
gesto 254
gettare 152
  – la spugna 183
ghermire 116
ghiaccio 155, 184
ghiaia 132
ghiro 185
ghisa 128
già 436
giacca 153
giacché 422, 442
giaccone 40
giacere 297
gilè 39
ginnastica 136
ginocchio 145, 254
giocare 388
giocatore 153
giocherellare 169
gioco 178
  in – 178
giornaliero 127
giornata 58, 127
giorno 58, 117, 187
giovane 96
giovanotto 96
giovare 90, 297, 388
gioviale 34
girare 137, 185, 300
giro 178
gironzolare 295
giù 342
giuda (porco –) 435
giudicare 30, 58, 73, 154
giudiziale 58
giudiziario 58
giungere 296, 374
giurare 369
giuridico 58
giustificare 38
giustiziare 58
giusto 434
gli 9, 263–264
globo 93
glu glu /glu-glu 124
glutei 95
gnocco 12
goal 40
goccia 78, 178
goccio 78
gocciolare 304
godere 371
godimento 382
gol 40, 137
golf 40
gomito 178
gomitolo 93
gonfalone 129
gonfiare 301, 313
gonfiarsi 111, 313
gonzo 146–147
gorgheggìo 86
gorghéggio 86
governante 58, 135
governatore 58
gracchiare 123
gracchio 123
gracidare 123
gracidio 123
gracile 151
gradevole 94
gradinata 134
gradire 367
grado 222
graffo 224
grafico 221
grammatica 187
grana 78, 120
granata 252

grande 35, 184, 282
grandinare 298
grandinata 144
grano 78
grassetto 225
grasso 184
grassoccio 106
grassottello 106
gratifica 127
grato 373
grattare 142
grave 224
grazia 176
grazioso 34, 94
gregge 69
greggio 69, 107
grido 254
groppa 80, 93
groppo 80
grosso 34, 35, 106, 184
  dirla/farla grossa 165
grossolano 34
grotta 32
gruccia 10
grugnire 123
grugnito 123
grugno 30, 34
grullo 146–147
gruzzolo 120
guaire 123
guaito 123
guanti 126
guardare 387
guarda/guardate! 440
  – /ma –! 436
guardaroba 40
guardarsi 160, 381
guardia 58, 128
Guardia di Finanza 128
guardiano 58
guarire 300
guastare 101, 313
guastarsi 313
guerriglia 34
guerrigliero 34
guidare 149, 294
gustare 73
gusto 187

hi ho/i-o 123
hinterland 126
ho/o 83
hockey 143
hostess 36, 40

i 182
-icchiare 173
-iccio 171
-icciolo 170
-icciuolo 170
-icello 170
-iciattolo 171
-icino 169
idea 437
idioma 46, 119
idiomatismo 46
idoneo 377
idiota 146–147, 148
idoneo 378
iella 11, 107
ieri sera 64
-igno 171
ignorante 46, 435
ignorare 46, 370, 406
il che 423
  – vuol dire che . . . 442
illudere 33
illudersi 406
illusione 33
imbarcare 313
imbarcarsi 31, 313
imbarcazione 95
imbattersi 71, 312
imbecille 146–147, 148
imbestialirsi 91
imbiancare 300
imbianchire 300
imbrattato 104
imbronciato 36
imbrunire 301
immaginare 370, 405
immaginarsi 405, 406
immediatamente 37
immigrare 296
immondo 104
impadronirsi 116, 313
impallidire 296
imparare 375
impassibilità 382
impaurire 301
impaziente 373
impazzare 58
impazzire 58, 297
impedire 372, 407
impegnarsi 375
imperativo 223
imperfetto 223
impiccato 186
impiegato 135
impiego 156
implorare 92, 372
impolverato 104
imporre 372
importante 46
importare 163, 180, 297, 366, 408
importarsene 166
importunare 91
impossessarsi 116
impossibile 377
imprecazione 45
impresa 34
imprevisto 89
improvviso (all'–) 137
impugnare 116
impugnatura 114
imputridire 297
in 337–340, 424
  – effetti 35, 441
  – realtà 441
inabitabile 34
inasprire 301
incacchiarsi 91
incallito 88
incantevole 94
incapace 373
incaricare 372
incaricato 373
incarico 109, 156
incavolarsi 91
incazzarsi 91
incendiare 387
incendio 106
incenerire 103
inchinare 58
inchinarsi 59
inchino 59
inciampare 295
  fare – 159
incidente 30, 90
incidenza 35
incidere 100
incitare 376
inclinare 58
inclinarsi 59
incline 377
incombenza 156
incominciare 298, 374
incomodare 91
inconscio (adj) 46, 59
inconscio (n) 59
incontrare 312
incontrarsi 312
incontro 98
incoraggiare 376
incorrere 303
incosciente 46, 59
incredibile 436
incrinare 97
incrinarsi 97
incrudelire 305
incudine 178
indagare 105
indebolire 301
indecente 104
indefinito 222, 223
indennità 127
indeterminativo 222
indiano 177
indicare 139
indicativo 223
indicazione 129
indietreggiare 296
indietro (marcia –) 179
indigeno 122
indigente 33
indigenza 33
indignarsi 91
indipendente 222
indorare la pillola 181
indurre 376
inebriare 35
infangato 104
infante 96
infatti 35, 441
infelice 404
infelicità 35
inferiore 150, 364
inferire 69
infiammare 313
infiammarsi 313
infierire 69
infine 442
infinito 223
infischiarsene 166
influenzare 388
influire 42, 388
informale 32, 59
informare 118
informatica 59
informazione 59, 259
informazioni 259
informe 59
infortunio 89
infradito 136
infrangere 97
infrangersi 97
infrazione 99
infuriarsi 91
ingegnosità 35
ingelosire 301
ingenuità 35
ingiuria 35, 121
ingiuriare 35
inglese 177
ingrandire 300
ingrandirsi 111
ingrassare 111, 300

ingrassarsi 111
ingrossare 35, 111, 300
ingrossarsi 35, 111
inguine 34
iniziare 298
inizio 153
innamorati 126
innanzi 331
innervosire 91
-ino 169
inoltre 441
inosservanza 99
inquinamento 36
inquinato 104
insanguinato 104
insaporire 53
insegna 129
insegnante 150
insegnare 376
insensato 146–147, 148
inserviente 135
inserzione 31, 129
insistere 375, 384
insolazione 69
insomma 435, 440, 442
insorgere 296
insospettire 300
inspirare 73
insulso 146–147, 148
insultare 42, 121
insulto 121
intagliare 100
intelligente 146–147
intemperie 259
intendere 46, 385
  darla a – 165
intendersela 165
intendersi 118
intentare 161
intento 377
intercorrere 303
interessamento 59
interessare 305, 366, 385
interessato 377
interesse 59, 259
interno 45
interrogare 92
interrogatorio 35, 59
interrogazione 35, 59
intervenire 46, 296
intimare 35
intimidire 300
intoppo 89
intossicare 35
intransitivo 223
introdurre 46
intuire 405
invalido 47
invecchiare 300
invecchiato 125
invece 442
investigare 105
investire 47
invidioso 35
invitare 376
invogliare 313
invogliarsi 313
inzuppare 11
ipermarket 138
ipermercato 138
ipotesi 419
irascibile 36
irascibilità 36
irritabile 36
irritabilità 36
irritare 91, 313
irritarsi 313
irritato 373
iscrizione 129
isolamento 69
ispezionare 105
ispirare 73
istanza 35
istituto universitario 32
istitutore 150
istitutrice 150
istruire 47
istruito 47
istruttore 150
istruttrice 150
istruzione 34

jeans 40
jolly 40
joystick 143

labbro 254
laburista 47
laccio 11, 145
laddove 419
ladro 128
lagnarsi 313, 369
lamentela 59
lamentarsi 369
lamento 59
lampeggiare 298
lancia 47, 81, 95
  spezzare una – 178
lanciare 152
lancio 47, 81
  – del disco 47
lapide 129, 132
largo 35
  al – 87
  alla larga 87
lasciare 119, 371, 378, 385
  – in asso 175
lascivo 88
lastrico 182
lato 106, 140
  da un – 140
  d'altro – 442
  da un – . . . dall'altro . . . 442
  di – 140
latrare 123
latrato 123
lattante 96
lavanderia 40
lavarsene le mani 179
lavorare 11
lavoro 47, 156
legaccio 145
legare 73
leggiadro 94
legna 78
legno 78, 95
Lei 268–269, 403
lente (d'ingrandimento) 110
lenzuolo 255
leone 123
leopardo 123
lercio 104
lesione 35
letizia 382
lettera 225
letto 178
lettore 150
lettrice 150
lettura 35
letture 259
levare 149
lezione 35
lezzo 141
libero 38, 373
libertà 87
libraio 35
libreria 35
libro 185
licenza 47, 117
lieto 373
lievitare 300
lima 81
limitarsi 160, 375
limitrofo (zona limitrofa) 126
limo 81
linea 178
lineamenti 105
lineetta 224
lingotto 39
lingua 59, 119, 181
  – materna 122
linguaggio 59, 119
liquido 120
lira 120, 178
liscio 184
lite 31, 34
litigante 187
litigio 37
livello 153
locale 122
locandina 129
locazione 35
locuzione 46
lontano 187, 381
look 92
lordo 104
loro 267, 316
Loro 268–269, 403
loto 85
lotta 81
lotto 81, 85
lucci 85
luccicare 297
luce 178
luci 85
lumaca 184
lume 178
luminoso 129
lungi 381
lungo (prep) 294, 348
lungo (adj) (a –) 88
  alla lunga 88
  farla lunga 165
  saperla lunga 165
  tirarla per le lunghe 165
lunotto 156
luogo 122
  – convenuto 38
  in primo – 442
lupara 112
lupo 123, 185
lurido 104
lusso 35, 59
lussuoso 35, 59
lussuria 35, 59
lussurioso 35, 59

ma . . . 440
  –/– però 441
  – dai! 436
  – guarda! 436
  – insomma! 435
  – no! 436
  – va'! 437
macché! 437

macchia 178
macchiato 104
macchina 34
– da presa 31
– fotografica 31
macigno 132
macilento 151
madonna 434
della – 182
madrelingua 122
madrepatria 122
madrina 11
maestro 150, 382
magari 403
magazzino 138
maggiordomo 135
maggior parte 261
magico 143
maglia 39
maglione 40
magnifico 94
mah? 438
mai 187, 286
maiale 123, 184, 185
maiuscolo 225
male 187
andare a – 161
fare – 35, 158, 375, 388
maleducato 37, 435
malgrado 441
mamma mia 437
mammalucco 146–147
mancanza 159
mancarci 167
mancare 159, 163, 277, 305, 371, 385
– una rotella 182
manco 286, 415
– per cazzo/idea/sogno/niente 437
mandare 376
– a quel paese 179, 435
maneggìo 86
manéggio 86
manganello 143
mangiare 179, 180, 185
dare da – 158
mangiarsi le mani 179, 181
mangiucchiare 170
manica 81, 175
maniche 179
manico 81, 114
maniera (in – (tale) che) 411, 442
manifestare 34, 139
manifestazione 47
manifesto 129
maniglia 114
mannaggia! 435, 436
mano 179
dare una – 114
manodopera 47, 157
manovella 114
mansione 156
mantello 113
mantenere 38, 73
mantenimento 59
manubrio 114
manutenzione 59
marcare 59
marchiare 59
marcia 47
– indietro 179
mettere in – 47
marciapiede 36
marciare 69, 294, 295
marcire 44, 69, 297
mare 186
margine 140
marmocchio 96
marrone 35
– rossiccio 35
martello 178
maschile 222
massiccio 115
massima 178
massimo 153
masso 132
materia 50
materiale 47
materno 122
matta 40
mattina 59, 187
mattinata 59
mattino 59
matto 181
maturare 300
maturo 125
Matusalemme 184
mazza 81, 143
mazzetta 67
mazzo 67, 81
media 60
mass – 60
mediano 60
medicamento 47, 60
medicazione 47, 60
medicina 47, 60, 149
medico 34
medio 60, 150
medium 60
meglio 102, 154, 275
fare del proprio – 154
mellone 11
melone 11
membro 255
menare 149, 176
mendicante 11
meno (– male) 404
a – che/di 412
del più e del – 180
fare a – 161
mensile 127
mensilità 127
menta 81
mente (venire in –) 36
mentecatto 146–147
mento 81
mentre 441
meraviglia 434
meravigliare 313
meravigliarsi 313, 404
meraviglioso 94
mercante 180
merce 32, 260
mercede 127
merda! 435
meritare 369
merlo 146–147
messa 69
messe 69
mestiere 156
meta 40, 87
metà 87
meticoloso 34
metronotte 128
metterci 167
mettere 118
– al corrente 118
– alla prova 154
– in marcia 47
– in mostra 139
mettersi 374
– dalla parte di 161
– in testa 371
mettiamo (il caso) che 419
mezzo (adj) 88
mezzo (n) 260
mi 262
– correggo 442
miagolare 123
miagolio 123
miao 123
miasma 141
mica 8, 286
migliorare 300, 303
migliore 153, 275
migrare 296
miliare 132
milite 128
milizia 128
minacciare 371
minchia 435
minchione 146–147
mingherlino 151
minuscola 225
mirabile 94
mirare 375
miscela 40
miscuglio 40
miseria 35, 435
miseriaccia! 435
misero 36
misfatto 99
mister 40
mitra 112
mitragliatrice 112
mm . . . 440
mobile (adj) 47
mobile (n) 47
mocassino 136
moccioso/-a 96
moda 78
modo 78, 223
allo stesso – 441
fare in – 161
in – (tale) che 411, 442
in – da 411
in ogni – 442
modulo 46
moglie 183, 258
molestare 91
mollare 74, 109
moltiplicarsi 111
momento (dal – che) 442
monaca 11
monaco 186
mondo 179, 435
monello 96
moneta 36, 120
montagna 60, 115
montagnoso 60
montanaro 60
montano 60
montare 98, 298
montato 130
monte 60, 115
montone 123
montuoso 60
mora 78, 85
morale 252
morbido 36, 60, 260
morboso 36, 60
morfologia 221

morire 159, 186, 297
– dal ridere 381
moro 78
moroso 36
morra 85
morsa 78
morso 78, 120
mortacci! 435
mortaio 112
morte 184
mosca 179, 184
moschetto 112
mostra 45, 81
mettere in – 139
mostrare 139
mostro 81
mota 81
moto 81, 253
motocicletta 81
motorino d'avviamento 41
motoscafo 95
mozzare 100
mucca 123
muffa 141
muggire 123
muggito 123
mulattiera 127
mulinello 144
munizioni 260
muovere 47, 73, 301, 313
muoversi 47, 121, 313
muraglia 155
muraglione 155
muretto 155
muricciolo 155
muro 55, 155, 185, 255
muso 106, 179
mutande 126
mutare 300
mutilare 100
muto 184
muu 123

nafta 36, 107
narrare 133
nascere 176, 297
naso 178, 179
nastro adesivo 41
natale 122
natiche 95
natio 122
nativo 122
nave 95
– da carico 40
navetta 183
navigare 294, 295
nazionale 45
ne 264–265, 272
né 286
neanche 286
necessario 377
negare 69, 74, 369, 406
negoziante 138
negozio 138
nemmeno 286
– per idea/sogno 437
neon 129
neonato/-a 96
neppure 286
neretto 225
nero 175, 183, 184
nessuno 286
neve 144, 184
nevicare 298
nevicata 144
niente 9, 180, 286, 289
– . . . 440
– affatto 437
per – 437
nitrire 123
nitrito 123
no 284–285, 286–288
–? 440
come –! 434
ma –! 436
perché –? 434
nocciòlo 87
nòcciolo 87
noce 253
noia (dare –) 91
noialtri 262
nome 121, 222
nomignolo 121
nomina 42
nominativo 121
non 270–272, 285–288, 289, 412
– . . . che 284–285
– che 405–409
– è che 286–288, 405–409, 440
– è possibile 436
– mi dire! 436
– perché 411
– plus ultra 153
– so/saprei 440
– solo . . . ma anche . . . 441
nonno 86
nono 86
nonostante 441
nota 37
note 86
notificare 118
notorio 36
nottata 60
notte 60, 86, 175, 185
notturno 128
novella 67
nozze 260
nubifragio 144
nulla 176, 180, 187, 286
nullo 51
numero 46, 222
numeroso 282
nuocere 101, 187
nuotare 185, 294, 295
nuovo 282
– di zecca 180
nutrito 106
nuvola 180

o/ho 83
obbligare 376
obeso 106
oblò 156
obolo 108
obsoleto 125
oca 123, 146–147, 181, 435
occhiali 50, 110, 126
occhiata (dare un'–) 38
occhio 180, 186, 437
non chiudere – 180, 289
saltare agli occhi 180
-occio 172
occorrenza 36
occorrere 36, 163, 303, 366, 408
occupato 377
occupazione 156
oddio! 437
odioso 35
odore 141
odorino 141
offendere 313
offendersi 313, 370
offerta 108
office 40
officina 66
offrire 109
oggetto 223
oggi 186
ogni (in – caso) 442
in – modo 442
-ognolo 172
ohi 438
OK 434
olezzo 141
-olino 169
olio 107, 178, 184
-olo 170
oltrepassare 74
omaggio 108
ometto 10
omicidio colposo 55
onda 60
ondata 60
-one 170, 172
onomastico 57
onorario 127
onorato 373
-onzolo 171
opera 156
operare 387
opportunità 47
oppure 442
ora (– di punta) 82
– . . . – . . . 442
è – che 408
non vedere l'- 407
orario 127
orca 434
ordinare 372
ordinario 150
ordine 30
ore 126
orecchia 180
orecchio 180, 182
orfano 48
orgoglioso 130
orifizio 116
originale 61
originario 61, 122
oriundo 122
orologio 124
orribile 377
osare 367
osceno 104
ospitare 42
ospite 36
ossequioso 36
osso 180, 255
in carne ed ossa 176
pelle e ossa 151
oste/ostessa 36
ostentare 139
ostia 434
ostrega 434
ostrica 36
-ottare 173
-otto 171
ottuso 146–147, 148
ove 419
ovunque 140
ovviamente 441

pace 435
padella 180
padrino 11
padrona di casa 40
padrone 36
paesano 36
paese 36, 186
  mandare a quel – 179, 435
paf/paffete 124
paffuto 106
paga 127
pagare 181, 186, 387
paio 126
pala 81, 86
palanche 120
palato 153
palazzo 48
palcoscenico 41
palesare 139
paletto 143
palla 86, 93
pallacanestro 39
palle (che (rottura di) –!) 435
  rompere le – 91, 182
pallina 93
pallino 93
palloncino 93
pallone 93
pallottola 93
palma 78
palmo 78
palo 81, 143
pam/pamfete 124
panca 134
panchetto 134
panchina 134
panciotto 39
panciuto 106
pane 67, 97, 180, 184
panino 67
panna 44, 81
panno 81
pantalone 260
pantofola 136
pantomima 36
papa 48, 86, 87
papà 11, 87
pappa 86
para 87
parà 87
parabrezza 156
parafulmine 33
paraggi 126
paragone 36, 132
paragrafo 225
parcella 127
parente 32, 36, 49
parentela 49
parentesi 224
parere 164, 297, 368
parete 140, 155
  – rocciosa 36
pargolo/-a 96
parlarci 167
parlare (n) 119
parlare (V) 133, 180, 185, 371
parlarsi addosso 180
parlata 119
parlottare 169
parola 32, 119, 289
  essere di – 181
  prendere la – 133, 181
  rimangiarsi la – data 182
parolaccia 45
parte 69, 330
  da – 140
  da una –.. dall'altra . . . 441, 442
  d'altra – 442
  la maggior – 261
  mettersi dalla – di 161
  schierarsi dalla – di 161
partecipare 118
participio 223
partire 119, 296
partita 81, 98
partito 47, 81
parto 69
pascià 185
pasqua 184
passata 12
passare 74, 155, 300, 305, 374
  – per la mente/testa 369
  – per le armi 137
  col – del tempo 183, 425
passarla bella/brutta 165
passarsela 173
passato 223
passeggiare 294, 295
passione 106
passivo 223
passo 181
pasta 152
patapum/patapunfete 124
patatrac 124
patente 36, 47
patria 122
patrimonio (spendere un –) 120
pattìno 87
pàttino 87
patto (a – che/di) 412, 418, 419
paura (avere –) 370, 383, 404
pavimento 36
pazienza 435
pazienza (perdere la –) 91
pazzo da legare 181
peccato 99, 184
  –/che –! 404, 408, 436, 437
pecora 123
peculio 120
pecunia 120
pedagogo 150
peggio 185
peggiorare 300, 303
peggiorativo 223
pelle 181
  – d'oca 181
  – e ossa 151, 255
pelliccia 113
pelo 113, 181
  per un – 181
peluria 113
pendenza 115
pendice 115
pendio 115
pendola 78
pendolo 78
pensarci 167
pensare 370, 385, 405
pensiero 108
pensionato 32
pensione 43, 48
pentirsi 313, 370
per 340–342, 348, 352, 411
  – così dire 440
  – cui 442
  – di più 441
  – quanto 411
  – quel che 411
pera 137
perbacco! 434
percepire 48
perché 411, 422, 442
  – no? 434
  non – 411
perciò 442
percorrere 303
percorso 127
perdonare 388
perfetto 434
periferia 126
periodo 50, 222
  – di tirocinio 41
perire 297
perito 31
perizoma 145
perla 145
perlustrare 105
permanere 297
permesso 117
permettere 373, 407
permettersi 371
pernottare 160
però 434, 441
perquisire 105
perseguire 48, 61, 75
perseguitare 61
persiana 11
persistere 297, 374
persona 224
  di – 181
personaggio 43
personale (adj) 222
personale (n) 135, 150
persuadere 376
persuadersi 385
pertanto 442
pertica 143
pertinente 37
pertinenza 37
pertugio 116
perturbazione 144
pervenire 296
pesa 78
pesante 106
pesare 74, 300
pésca/pèsca 84
pesca (canna da –) 143
pesce 184, 185, 186
  – d'aprile 181
  bastoncino di – 143
peso 78
peste 177
petrolio 36, 107
petulante 36
petulanza 36
pezza 11, 78
pezzente 11
pezzo 48, 78
  – d'artiglieria 112
  – di sopra 153
  – forte 48
  – grosso 48, 181
  fare a pezzi 97
piacente 94
piacere 164, 277, 297, 366, 408

avere – 412
fare – 408
piacevole 94
piagnucolare 169
pialla 61
piana 61
pianella 136
pianeta 253
piangere 124, 185, 374, 387
piano (adj) 61, 187, 221
piano (n) 52, 61, 153
pianta 81
piantare 175
piantarla 165
pianto 81, 124
pianura 61
platano 61
picca 82
picche 38, 82
picchetto 143
picchiata 181
piccino/-a 96
piccione 181
picco 82, 115
colare a – 181, 300
piccolo/-a 96
piede 181, 183
piedipiatti 128
piegare 102
piegarsi 59
pieno 40
– di sé 130
pietra 132
pietrisco 132
pigiama 260
pigliare 116, 186
pignolo 34
pigolare 123
pigolio 123
pillola (indorare la –) 181
pim/pam 124
pingue 106
pinna 40
pinza 260
pioggia 144
piolo 143
piombo 181
pio-pio 123
piovere 181, 298
pira 106
pirla 146–147
pirulino 11
pispolino 11
pista 127
pistola 112
più 286
per di – 441
pizza 113
pizzardone 128
pizzicagnolo 16
pizzicarolo 16
placca 129
plurale 222
poco 289
– intelligente 146–147, 148
poema epico 45
poggio 115
poi 442
poiché 422, 442
poker 41
polentone 13
poligono di tiro 137
polipo 61
politica 78
politico 78
polizia 128
poliziotto 128
pollo 143
polluzione 36
polpa 82
polpo 61, 82
polso 48
poltrona 134
polverizzare 103
polveroso 104
pomata 44
pomello 11, 114
pomo 114
– della discordia 181
ponte 117
pope 48
popone 11
poppante 96
porcaccia! 435
porcheria/che –! 436
porco 123
– cane/giuda/mondo! 435
porca l'oca/ miseria! 435
porca puttana/troia! 435
fare il – 176
porgere 109
porre 74
porta 40, 82, 108
portafinestra 156
portamento 92
portare 74, 142, 376
– via 149
porte 126
portento 48
portiere 11, 48
portinaio 11
porto 82
posate 260
posizione 35
possessivo 222
possiamo dire 440
possibile (fare il –) 154
non è – 436
posta 82
le Poste 260
poster 129
posteriore 95
posto 35, 82, 134
– di lavoro 156
potare 100
potenza 61
potere (n) 61
potere (V) 267, 306–307, 367, 397
non – fare a meno 178
poterne (non – più) 166, 370
potremmo dire 440
poveraccio! 436
poveretto! 436
poverino! 436
povero 33, 182, 282
povertà 33
pozza 79
pozzo 79
pratica 187
precettore 150
precipitare 300
precipitarsi 117, 374
precipizio 36
precorrere 303
predisporre 376
preferire 367, 407
pregare 92, 372, 387
pregiudicare 73
pregiudicato 61
premere 74, 297
prendere 116, 149
– sul serio 182
prendersela 165
preoccuparsi 370
prepararsi 375
preparativo 48, 61
preparato 48, 61, 377
preparazione 48, 61
preposizione 69, 222
presa 31
presagio 48
presentare 46, 61, 139
presentazione 47
presente (n) 108
presente (adj) 161, 223
presenziare 31, 61
preservare 48, 72
preservativo 36
preside 150
presiedere 387
prestare 158
– soccorso 114
prestarsi 375
prestazione 156
prestito 158
presto (fare –) 117, 375
presuntuoso 88, 130
pretendere 33, 37, 92
pretenzioso 130
prevalere 297
prevaricare 37
prevenire 118
preziosa 132
prezzo 158
prima (di) 331–332
– che/di 411
– di tutto . . . 442
primato 41
primavera 186
primitivo 48
primo 378, 382, 403, 442
in – luogo . . . 442
principale 222
princìpi 87
prìncipi 87
principio 153
privo 51
– di sensi 46
proboscide 51
procedere 303, 305
procedimento 61
procedura 61
procella 144
processare 37, 154
processione 61, 145
processo 48, 61, 161
proclamare 133
prodigio 69
prodigo 38, 69
prodotto 32
prof 150
proferire 133
professione 156
– legale 39
professore 150
professoressa 150
profumo 141
profumare 304
profumino 141
progettare 371
programmare 376

progredire 303
progressi 260
proibire 373, 407
proiettare 152
proiettile 93
prolungarsi 111
promessa 182
promettere 369
pronome 222
pronto 37, 377
pronunciare 133
pronunciarsi 133
propaganda 48
propellente 107
proporre 371, 372
proposito 62
proposizione 48, 69, 222
proposta 48, 62
proprio 222, 282
prosciugare 301
prosciugato 105
proseguire 48, 75, 298, 303
prossimo 221, 377
protervo 130
protesta 144
prova 34
  dare – 139
  mettere alla – 154
provarci 167
provare 74, 154, 375
provenire 296
provvedere 48, 109
provvidenza 107
pseudonimo 121
pubblicazione 92
pubblicità 31
pubblicitario (cartellone –) 129
pubblico 51
pucciare 11
pugno 159
pulce 182
pulcino 123, 184
pulizia 135
punizione 37
punta 82
punti (due –) 224
puntini 182
  – di sospensione 224
  – puntini 224
punto 82, 224, 226, 286
  – di vista 140
  – e virgola 225
  – esclamativo 225
  – interrogativo 225
  – vendita 138
  a un – morto 182
  di – in bianco 88, 182
può darsi 408
pupilla 82
pupillo 82
pupo/-a 96
pur di 418
purché 412, 419
pure 425
puro 282
putiferio 182
puttana 435
puzza 141
puzzo 141

quadro 224
quale 422–423
qualificativo 222
qualora 413, 419
quando 413, 419
quanti 423
quanto 272, 410, 423
quantunque 410
quasi (che) 413
quattordicesima 127
quattrini 120
quattrino 120
quattro 41, 178, 179, 181, 183
quattrocchi (a –) 182
quel(lo) che 423
quelli che 423
querela 37
questione 49
questurino 128
quindi 442

rabberciare 131
rabberciata 131
raccogliere 72
raccomandare 372
racconciare 131
racconciata 131
raccontare 72, 133, 369
raddoppiare 300
radere 100
  – al suolo 103
radersi 100
radio 62, 253
raffazzonare 131
raffazzonata 131
ragazzaccio 96
ragazzino/-a 96
ragazzo/-a 96
raggio 62
ragguagliare 118
ragione (avere –) 161
  dare – 161, 182
ragliare 123
raglio 123
rallegrare 366
rallegrarsi 370
rammaricarsi 370, 404
rammendare 69, 131
rammentare 69
ramoscello 143
rana 123
randello 143
rapimento 62
rapina 62
rapinare 62, 142
rapire 37, 62, 142
rappezzare 131
rappezzata 131
rapporto 69
raro 184, 377
rasare 100
rasarsi 100
rasente 348
raspa 82
raspo 82
rassegnarsi 375
rasserenare 313
rasserenarsi 313
rassomigliare 297, 388
rattoppare 131
rattristare 313
rattristarsi 313
razza 82
razzia (fare –) 142
razziare 142
razzo 82
ré/rè 84
reale 31, 49
realizzare 370
realtà (in –) 441
reato 99
reattore 49
recalcitrante 377
recapitare 109
recare 149
reception 49
recidere 100
recinto 40
reciprocamente 312
recita 37, 62
recital 37, 62
recitare 133
reclamare 92
réclame 129
record 37, 41
recupero 62
redattore 34
refe 145
regalare 109
regalo 108
reggersi 181
reggipetto 153
reggiseno 153
registrare 37, 49
regno 49
regola 79
regolo 79
relativo 222
relax 41
relazione 49
reliquia 62
relitto 62
remo 182
remoto 221
remunerazione 127
rendere 366
  – conto 313
  – noto 118
rendersi conto 313, 370, 406
reni 255
repentaglio 182
responsabile 373
resta 145
restare 297, 309, 375
  – di sasso 131
restaurare 49, 131
restaurazione 62
restauro 62
resti 49
restio 49
resto 49, 120
rete 40, 137
reticente 49
retìna 87
rètina 87
retrarre 63
retribuzione 37, 127
retro 93
retrocedere 300
retta (dare –) 159
rettificare 131
rettore 43, 150
reumatismi 260
revisione 49
revolver 112
riarso 105
riassumere 37
ribassare 71, 300
ribellarsi 313
ricadere 71
ricambiare 71
ricerca 260
ricerche 260

ricetta 62
ricettazione 62
ricevimento 49
ricezione 49
richiesta 33, 92
richiudere 72
ricognizione 37, 62
ricominciare 37, 374
ricomporre 74
riconciliare 49, 72
riconoscente 373
riconoscenza 37, 62
riconoscimento 62
ricoprire 37
ricordare 37, 314, 370, 388
ricordarsi 314, 370
ricordo 37
ricorrenza 35, 49, 117
ricorrere 49, 73, 303
– in giudizio 48
ricovero 62
ricuperare 37
ricupero 62
ridere 187, 374, 381
ridotto sul lastrico 182
ridurre 100
– in cattivo stato 33
riferire 49, 133
riferirsi 49
rifilare 109
rifiutare 371, 406
rifiutarsi 371
rifiuti 260
riflessivo 223
rifornire 158
rilasciare 62
rilassare 62
rilassarsi 41, 62
rilegare 73
rilevante 37
rilevanza 37
riluttante 49, 377
rima 182
rimandare 45, 49, 176
rimanere 131, 297, 309, 375
rimangiarsi 182
rimbalzare 296
rimbambito 146–147, 148
rimbombare 298
rimediare 69, 131
rimediata 131
rimproverare 372
rimunerazione 127
rimuovere 149
rincarare 300
rinchiudere 72, 159
rincorrere 73, 303
rincrescere 297, 366, 404, 408
rinforzare 302
rinfrescare 302
rinfusa (alla –) 182
ringiovanire 300, 302
ringraziare 372
rinnegare 74
rinsecchito 151
rintoccare 124
rintocco 124
rintronare 298
rinunciare 375
rinvenire 75
riparare 131
riparata 131
ripassare 74
ripasso 49
ripercorrere 303
riportare 49
riporto 69
riposo 41, 49
riprendere 37, 137, 374
riprendersi 37
ripristinare 131
riprovare 74
ripugnare 366
ripulire 142
riscaldare 302
rischiare 369
risentire 37
risentirsi 37
riserva 49
riservarsi 371
risicare 186
risolvere 371, 385
risparmi 120
rispettabile 44
rispondere 182, 369, 388
rissa 34
ristorare 49
ristorazione 62
ristoro 62
ristrutturare 131
risultare 297, 368
risuonare 298
risuscitare 300
ritardo 382
ritenere 370, 405
ritirare 63, 313
ritirarsi 313
ritirata 63
ritiro 63
ritornare in sé 182
ritrarre 63
ritrattare 63
ritrovare 37
riuscirci 167
riuscire 50, 164, 296, 366, 375, 385
riva 140
rivalità 43, 98
rivelare 139
rivendicare 38, 75, 92
rivendita 138
rivenditore 138
rivenditrice 138
rivenire 75
riverenza 59
rivolgere 313
rivolgersi 313
rivoltella 112
rocca 63
– di Gibilterra 131
roccia 63, 131
muro di – 155
rogo 106
romancio 63
romanesco 15, 63
romanico 63
romanista 63
romano 63
romantico 63
romanza 82
romanzo 63, 82
romeno 63
rompere 97, 186
– il muso/la faccia 106, 179
– le scatole/le palle/i coglioni 91, 182
rompersi 97, 124
rondine 123, 186
rosa 183, 253
rosicare 186
rosone 156
rossiccio (marrone –) 35
rosso 187
rotare 63
roteare 63
rotella 182
rotolare 300
rotto 182
rottura 124, 435
rovescio 93, 144
alla rovescia 93
rovina (in –) 33
mandare in – 33
rovinare 38, 101
ruba (andare a –) 175
rubare 74, 142
rubinetto 38, 160
rude 37
ruggire 123
ruggito 123
rumeno 63
rumore 38, 122
ruota 175
ruotare 63

sabbatico 117
sabotare 101
saccheggiare 142
sagace 42
salame 146–147
salario 127
salire 31, 98, 298, 374
salita 115
salpare 119, 300
saltare 302
– agli occhi 180
saltellare 169, 294, 295
salterellare 169
salto 143, 155
salumiere 16
salvare 176
salvarsi 177
salvato 187
salvo che 412
sampietrino 132
sandalo 136
sano 184, 187
santo (adj) 282
– cielo! 437
santa pace/pazienza! 435
santo (n) 180
stinco di – 183
santuario 49
sapere 118, 267, 306–307, 367, 370, 395, 406
fare – 118
saperla lunga 165
saponetta 39
sasso 132, 184
sassolino 132
sbagliare 312, 386, 387
sbagliarsi 312
sbaragliare 102
sbarcare 300
sbarra 39, 108, 143, 225
sbarretta 225
sbattere 71, 124
sbattersene 71
sberla 11
sbiadire 300
sbiancare 300
sbigottire 302
sbirro 128

sbocciare 297
sbolognare 109
sbottare 297
sbrigarsi 117, 375
sbucare 296
scacciare 71
scadere 71, 296
scaglia 70
scagliare 152
scala 70, 82, 260
scalare 98
scalo 82
scalogna 11, 107
scalpello 38
scambiare 71
scambievolmente 312
scambio 53
scampanare 124
scampanellare 124
scampanellio 124
scampanio 124
scampare 305
scamparla 165
scandaglio 70
scandalo 70
scandire 38
scannare 38
scannerizzare 38
scanno 134
scappare 296
scappata 155
scaracchio 46
scaraventare 152
scarno 151
scarogna 11
scarpa 136
scarpata 115
scarpe 126
scarpone 136
scassare 97
scassarsi 97
scatola 40
  rompere le scatole 182
scattare 305
scaturire 297
scavo 116
scegliere 371
scemo 146–147, 148
scena 41
scenario 49
scendere 298, 374
schei 120
scheletrico 151
schermare 70
schermire 70
schernire 70
schiaffeggiare 159
schiaffo 11, 124, 159
schiantare 97, 305
schiantarsi 97
schiarire 302
schiattare 297
schiavo 135
schiena 93
schienale 93
schierarsi 161
schifezza/che –! 436
schifo/che –! 182, 436
schifoso 104
schioppo 112
schiudere 72
schizzare 300
scia 87
scià 87
sciagura 89
scialuppa 47
  – di salvataggio 95
sciare 294, 295
scimunito 146–147, 148
sciocchezze 260
sciocco 146–147, 148
scippare 142
sciupare 101
sciupato 151
scivolare 306
scocciare 42, 91
scoglio 132
scolare 52, 72, 304
scolaro 50
scomparire 297
scomporre 74
sconcio 104
sconfiggere 102
scongiurare 92, 372
scongiuro 177
scontare 72
scontento 404
scontro 89
scopo 40
scoppiare 297, 374
scoprire 175, 182, 370
scoraggiare 313, 381
scoraggiarsi 313
scordare 314
scordarsi 314, 370
scorrere 72, 300, 303
scortare 149
scossa 33
scostumato 12
scotch 41
scottare 302
scozzese 41, 177
scranna 134
scranno 134
scritta 129
scrivere 370
scrofa 123
scroscio 144
scrutare 38, 105
sculacciare 159
scuola 32, 150
scuotimento 33
scurire 300
scurrile 104
sdegnoso 130
sdraio 134
sdrucciolare 296
sdrucciolo 221
se 95
  – vogliamo 440
sé (fuori di –) 178
  ritornare in – 182
sebbene 410, 441
seccare 42, 91, 366, 408
secco 105, 151
secolare 50, 125
seconda mano 125
secondario 222
sede 134
sedere (n) 95
sedere (V) 297, 312
sedersi 312
sedia 11, 134
sedile 134
seducente 94
sega (fare –) 11
segaligno 151
seggio 134
seggiola 11, 134
seggiolino 134
seggiolone 134
seghino (fare –) 11
segnale 129
segnare 137
segretario 64
segreteria 64
seguire 64, 75, 298
seguitare 64, 298, 380
selce 132
sella 134
sellino 134
selvaggio 45, 51, 64
selvatico 45, 64
sembrare 164, 297, 367, 368, 405, 408
semplice 32, 222, 282
  tempo – 223
semplicemente 32
semplicione 146–147
senile 125
sennò 442
sensato 38, 64
sensibile 38, 64
sensitivo 64
sentenza 50
senti /sentite! 440
sentiero 127
sentirci 167
sentire 367
sentirsela 165, 371
sentore 141
senz'altro 434
senza che/di 412
sepolcrale 132
sequela 145
sequestrare 142
sera 64, 187
serata 64
serie 145
serio 182
serranda 11
servile 36
servire 164, 306, 366, 386
servirsi 388
servitore 135
servitrice 135
servitù 135
servizio 135, 156
servo 135
setola 113
settimanale 127
sezionare 100
sfasciare 97
sfasciarsi 97
sfera 93
sfidare 376
sfiga 11, 107
sfigurare 101
sfilare 306
sfilata 145
sfilza 145
sfiorire 297
sfociare 297
sfogare 301
sfollagente 143
sfollare 302
sfondare 73
sfortuna 107
sforzarsi 154, 371
sfuggire 304
sfumare 301
sgabello 134
sgambetto 159
sganassone 11
sgelare 298, 302
sgherro 128
sgocciolare 304
sgoccioli (agli –) 183

sgominare 102
sgonfiare 302
sgorgare 296
sgraffignare 142
sguattero/-a 135
si 314–315, 316
sì 379, 436
si dice 406
siccome 422
Sicilia (fare –) 11
sicurezza 50
sicuro 50, 373, 405–409
signore 40
signorina 96
silenzio 155
sillaba 223
simpatia 38
simpatico 38
singolare 222
sinistra 79
sinistro 79, 89
sino 336
sintassi 221
sistemare 131
sistemata 131
slanciato 151
slittare 296
sloggiare 121
smantellare 103
smettere 371
smetterla 165
smilzo 151
sminuzzare 97
smoking 41
smorfia 106
smottare 297
smunto 151
snello 151
sobborgo 126
soccorrere 114, 303
soccorso (prestare –) 114
soddisfatto 33, 373
sofferenza 35
soffiare 142
soffitta 31
soffocare 302
soffriggere 301
soffrire 387
Sofìa 87
Sòfia 87
soggetto (adj) 50
soggetto (n) 50, 223
soggiogare 102
sognare 370, 387, 406
sogno (manco/nemmeno per –) 437
soldi 36, 120, 183, 260
soldo 120
sole 184
solennità 117
solere 161
solido 50
solito (essere –) 161, 367
sollecitare 92
solo 184, 187, 282, 378, 403
non – . . . ma anche 441
somigliare 388
somma 46
sommato (tutto –) 442
somministrare 42, 109
sommità 153
sonare 124
soppesare 74
sopportare 38, 74
sopra 343–345
di – 153
sopracciglio 113
sopraggiungere 296
soprannome 121
soprascarpa 136
sopravvivere 297
sordido 104
sordo 184
sorgere 296
sorpassare 74
sorprendere 377, 408
sorpresa 382
sorpreso 373, 404
sorreggere 114
sorsata 120
sorso 120
sorte 107
sospeso 176
sospettare 370
sostantivo 222
sostanziale 49, 64
sostanzioso 50, 64
sostenere 31, 38, 64, 73, 114, 133, 405
sostentare 64
sottile 151
sottintendere 35
sotto 342–343
esserci – qualcosa 183
sottomettere 102
sottrarre 142, 149
sozzo 104
spaccare 97
– il muso/la faccia 179
spaccarsi 97, 124
spacciatore 138
spacciatrice 138
spaccio 138
spacco 124
spada 38
spago 145
spaghetti 260
spalle 93
spalliera 93
sparacchiare 170
sparare 124, 137
spararsi 137
sparecchiare 160
sparire 297
fare – 142
sparo 124, 137
sparuto 151
spaventare 313
spaventarsi 313
specialista 382
specie 64
spegnere 160
spendere un patrimonio 120
spendereccio 38
spennare 142
speranza 187
sperare 370
sperimentare 50, 154
spese 260
spettacolo 36, 50
spettare 297, 366
spettatore 51
spettegolare 133
spezia 64
spezzare 97
– una lancia 178
spezzarsi 97
spezzettare 97
spiacere 297
spianare 103, 302
spiattellare 133
spiccare 160
spicciarsi 117
spiccioli 120, 260
spiegare 133, 139
spifferare 133
spin 153
spine (sulle –) 183
spingarda 112
spingere 376
spinto 104
spiovere 298, 304
spiritico 64
spiritoso 64
spirituale 64
splendido 94
spocchioso 130
spogliare 38, 142
spola 183
sponda 140
sporco 104
sporgere 301
sportello 156
sportivo 38
sposare 314
sposarsi 314
spostarsi 121
spranga 143
spregiudicato 61
spremere 74
sprezzante 130
sprizzare 301
sprofondare 301
spronare 376
spugna 183, 185
spuntare 100
sputo 46
squadra 65, 140
squadriglia 65
squadrone 65
squagliarsela 165
squillare 298
squit/squit-squit 123
squittio 123
squittire 123
stabilimento 50
stabilire 370
staffe 91, 181
stage 41
stagionato 125
stalla 183
stampella 10, 12
stancare 313
stancarsi 313, 371
stanco 374
stanfella 10
stanga 143
starci 167
stare 290–291, 297, 375, 381, 386
– sui coglioni/sul cazzo/sullo stomaco 183
starnutire 124
starnuto 124
starsene 166
starter 41
statistica 260
stecca 79, 143
stecco 79, 143
stendardo 129
stentare 375
sterminare 103
sterpo 143
stesso 282
stillare 301

stinco di santo 183
stitichezza 44
stitico 44
stivale 136
stivaletto 136
stoffa 34, 47
stolido 146–147
stolto 146–147
stomaco (stare sullo –) 183
storia 50, 67
storiella 67
storpiare 101
stoviglie 260
stracciare 102
straccio 11
stradale 128
stradicciola 127
stradina 127
strano 377
straparlare 133
strapuntino 134
straripare 297
strato 153
stravagante 38
stravincere 102
strenna 108
stretto 41
stringa 11, 145
stringere 187
strisciare 294
striscione 129
strofa 39
stronzo 435
struzzo 36
studiare 105
studio legale 34
studioso 50
stufa 106
stufo 374
stupendo 94, 434
stupido 146–147, 148
stupire 302, 313
stupirsi 313, 370, 404
stupito 404
stuprare 37
su 343–345, 425, 435
subentrare 297
subito 37
subordinato 222
succedere 50, 297, 368
successo (avere –) 50
sudare 176
suddito 50
sudicio 104
sudore 141
sufficiente 377
suffisso 223
suggerimento 50, 65
suggestione 50, 65
suicidarsi 313
suola 79
suolo 79
suonare 124, 306
suono 124
suora 11
super 107
superbia 130
superbo 50, 130
superficiale 34, 153
superficie 106, 153, 258
superiore 150, 153, 362
superlativo 222
supermarket 138
supermercato 138
supplicare 92, 372
supponiamo che 419
supporre 405
supposto che 419
surgelare 73
suscettibile 50
susseguire 302
sussistere 297
svaligiare 142
svanire 297
sveglia 66
svegliare 75, 313
svegliarsi 75, 313
svelare 370
svelto 151
svenire 75, 296
sventura 89
svenuto 46
svignarsela 165
svilupparsi 111
svolgere 156

tabella 65
tabellone 129
tabula rasa 183
tabulato 65
tacchino 123
tacco 114
tacere 387
tagliare 100
tagliuzzare 100, 169
tale 379
  – che 411
  – da 411
talento 108
tallone 114
talmente 379
talpa 184
tamburo 143
tanfo 141
tanto 379
  – . . . quanto 272
tappa (bruciare le tappe) 183
tapparella 11
tappo 30, 38, 153
tardi 187
targa 129
tassa 82
tasso 82
tattica 260
tavola 43, 50, 65
tavolata 79
tavolato 65, 79
tavolino 65
tavolo 50, 65
te 8, 84, 262
té/tè 84
teenager 96
telecamera 31
telefonare 388
telefono 124
televisione 65
televisore 65
temere 370, 404
tempesta 144
tempestato 65
tempestivo 65
tempestoso 65
tempio 257
tempo 183, 187, 223
  è – che 408
  fare in – 375
temporale (adj) 50
temporale (n) 50, 144
tendere 375
tendine del ginocchio 145
tenebre 260
tenerci 167
tenere (– a bada) 183
  – conto 161
  – presente 161
tennis 136
tentare 154, 371, 386
tenuto 375
tergiversare 37
terminare 298, 371
termine 50, 88
terna 51, 79
terno 79
terra 65
terreno 65
terrestre 65
  crosta – 153
terribile 377
terrone 13
terzetto 51
terzina 79
terzino 79
terzo 187
teso 41
tessuto 34
testa 70, 82, 180, 183
  – di cazzo 435
  cenno con la – 166–167
testata (dare una –) 158
teste 70
testicolo 93
testimonianza 34
testo 70, 82
testone 88, 146–147
tetro 36
tetta 70, 82
tetto 70, 82, 153
tettoia 70
ti 262
ticchettare 124
ticchettio 124
tic-tac 124
tifone 144
tight 41
tigre 123
tirare 137, 152
  – le cuoia 177
  – sul prezzo 158
tirarla per le lunghe 165
tirata 120
tirato per i capelli 176
tiro 137
tirocinio (periodo di –) 41
titolare 150
toc toc 124
toccare 164, 297, 366
  – ferro 177
togliere 149, 388
tombale 132
tonale 65
tondo 224
tonico (adj) 65, 221
tonico (n) 65
tonno 70
tono 70
tonto 146–147, 148
top 153
top spin 153
topo 123, 186
torcere (filo da –) 177
tormenta 82, 144
tormentare 91
tormentarsi 31
tormento 82
tornado 144
tornare 296, 374
  – a bomba 175

tornarsene 166
toro 123, 183, 184
torta 83
tórta/tòrta 84
torto 83
  avere – 161
  dare – 161, 182
tosare 100
tosto 177
tra 345–346
traboccare 178, 304
tracimare 304
tracotante 130
tragitto 127
traiettoria 127
trambusto 32
tramezzo 155
tramontana 181
tramontare 296
tranciare 100
tranne che 412
transatlantico 95
transitivo 223
trapassato 224
trapelare 296
trascorrere 301, 303
trascurare 371
trasferirsi 47, 121
trasgressione 99
traslocare 47, 121
traslocarsi 121
trasportare 149
trattamento 66
trattato 66
trattenere 313
trattenersi 313
tratti 106
trattino 225
tratto 66
traversa 143
treccia 145
tredicesima 127
tremare 185
trillare 123, 124
trillo 123, 124
trimestre 50
trinciare 100
trio 51
trionfare 102
trisdrucciolo 221
tritare 100
triviale 38
troia 435
tromba d'aria/marina 144
trombone 112
troncare 100
tronco (adj) 221
tronco (n) 51
tronfio 130
trono 134
troppo 187, 380
trottola 180
trovare 186, 377
  andare/venire a – 155
trovarsi 375
trafugare 142
trattenersi 381
tu 268–269, 316
tuffo 86
tufo 86
tuonare 298
tuono 70
turbine 144
turco 180, 185
turpe 104
tuttavia 441
tutto (– sommato) 442
  fare di – 154

uàuà 124
ubbidire 388
ubriacare 35
ubriaco 183
uccellino 123
uccello 123
-ucchiare 173
uccidere 137
-uccio 170
-uccolo 170
-ucolare 173
udienza 51
uè! 438
uèuè 124
uffa! 435
ufficiale 66
ufficio 40, 66, 156
ufficioso 66
ultimo 153, 187, 378, 382, 403
ululare 123
ululato 123
umore 51
umorismo 51
unico 282, 378, 403
università 32, 150
uno (l'un l'altro) 312
unto 104
-uolo 170
uomo delle pulizie 135
uovo 181, 186
uragano 144
uranio 143
urlo 254
urtare 124
urto 124
usa e getta 152
usanza 186
usare 367
usato 125
uscire 119, 296
uscirsene 166
uscita 34, 92, 108
usignolo 185
utile 378
uva 260
-uzzare 173
-uzzo 170

va' (a dar via il culo) 435
  – a quel paese 435
  – al diavolo 435
vabbè 434, 440
vacante 51
vacanza 38, 117
vacca 123
vaffanculo 435
vagare 295
vagliare 105
vago 51
vai 436
valente 66
valere 160, 187, 297
  – la pena 366, 407–408
valido 47, 66, 377
valigie (fare le –) 183
valle (a –) 88
valore (di –) 66
valoroso 66
valuta 120
valutare 105
valvola dell'aria 41
vanaglorioso 130
vanga 38
vanitoso 51, 130
vano (adj) 51
vano (n) 51
vaporetto 95
variare 301, 303
vario 282
varo 47
vascello 95
vaso 178, 185
vecchio 125, 184, 282
vederci 167
vedere 154, 155, 166, 368, 371, 386
  (non) – l'ora 407
  – tutto nero/ rosa 183
  fare – 139
vedersela (brutta) 165
vedi/vedete 440
vediamo (un po') 440
veglia 66
vegliare 75, 387
vela 83
veleggiare 294
velenifero (dente –) 152
veliero 95
vello 113
velo 83
veloce 184, 377
velocemente 137
vena (in –) 183
vendicare 38, 75
venire 75, 292, 296, 308, 366, 374, 386
  – a trovare 155
  – alla luce 178
  – alle mani 179
  – su 111
vénti/vènti 84
vento 38, 144, 184, 185
venuta 38
vera 11
verbalizzare 39
verbo 223
verde (al –) 182
verga 143
vergogna 33, 408
  avere – 370, 383
vergognarsi 313, 370
verificare 51, 105
verificarsi 51
vernacolo 119
vero 31, 282
  è – 440
versante 140
versetto 39
verso (n) 39, 122
verso (prep) 336
vertice 153
veste 39
vestito 260
vetrata 66, 156
vetrina 66, 156
vetrino 66
vetro 66, 110
vetta 153
vetusto 125
vezzeggiativo 223
via 127, 253
  – libera 183
  buttare – 152
  e –! 435
  portare – 149
viaggiare 294, 295
viale 127

vialetto 127
vicenda (a –) 312
vicinanze 126, 260
vietare 373, 407
vigile (urbano) 128
vigna 67
vignetta 67
vincere 102
vincita 66
vincolo 145
vino 180
violazione 99
violentare 37
viottolo 127
virgola 225, 226
virgolette 225
visita 155
visitare 105, 155
viso 106
vita 183, 187
vite 185
vittoria 66
vivacchiare 295
vivere 180, 299
viveri 260
viziare 38, 101
viziato 66
vizioso 51, 66
vocale 223
voce 38, 183
voglio dire 440, 442
voi 268–269
voialtri 262
volare 302
volante 253
volerci 167, 297
volere 187, 267, 306–307, 367, 397, 407
– bene 388
volerne 166
volgare 34
voltare 313
voltarsi 313, 374
volto 106
votare 387
votazione 66
voto 66
vuoto 51, 116
whisky 41
zaffata 141
zampa 119
zanna 152
zappa 183
zazzera 113
zecca (nuovo di –) 180
zoccolo 136
zona limitrofa 126
zoppicare 187, 294
zoppo 187
zozzo 104
zuccone 146–147
zuppare 11

Grammar index

a, with direct object 8, 9, 325
a vs **ad** 321
accents on vowels 29
adjective, in impersonal expressions 315–316
– negative 286–288
– position 280–283
adverb, negative 286–288
– position 279–280
agent, in passive 309–310
agreement, past participle and pronouns 262
– past participle and reflexive 311–312
alphabet 226–228, 258
anche, position 279
andare, and gerund 291–292
– and passive 309
animals, gender 240
– noises 123
apodosis 416
articulated prepositions with infinitive 380–382, 424–425

causative expressions 368
che, in comparisons 270–272
chi, in relative clauses 423–424
ci, and auxiliaries 307
– in idioms 166–167
– pleonastic use 264
cleft sentences 279, 378
collective nouns, agreement with verb 261
con, with infinitive 380
comparative clauses 273, 414
compound nouns, gender 248–252
– plural 258–259
conditional, and sequence of tenses 400
conditional perfect tense 393 (*see also* Future in the past, hypotheses about the past)
conditional sentences 416–420 (*see also* **periodo ipotetico**)
conjunctions, in conditional sentences 418–419
conjunctions requiring the subjunctive 410–413
connectors 20, 22, 441–442
consecutio temporum = sequence of tenses 399–401

da, with infinitive 378–379, 381
– in relative clauses 424
definite article with infinitive 380, 428
di, in comparisons 270–272
– with other prepositions 327, 335, 336, 343
dialect 2–5
– in interjections 433
direct object with **a** 8, 9, 325
direction, in verbs of movement 293–294
double consonants 6, 84–86

either . . . or 261
emphasis and word order 276
essere, as auxiliary 277, 295–307
– singular or plural 261
explicit subordinate clauses 421–424

factual conditionals 419–420
far fare 368
fillers 20, 22, 439–440
foreign words, gender 39, 239–240
– plural 258
future in the past, conditional perfect tense 393, 400
– future tense 391
– imperfect tense 396
future perfect tense 392
future tense 391
future, expression of 390

gerund, in conditional sentences 418
– in periphrases 290–292
– in subordinate clauses 425–427
– position of subject 277, 426
– with **stare, andare, venire** 290–292
gli, range of meanings 263–264

hypotheses about the past, conditional perfect 393
– imperfect tense 396
– **trapassato prossimo** 396
hypotheses about the present 391, 396
hypothetical conditionals 415, 416–419

if, in conditional sentences 418–419
il fatto che, and the subjunctive 409
imperative, future tense 391
– present tense 390
– subjunctive 403
imperfect and perfect 394–395
imperfect tense, with **da** 329
– and sequence of tenses 400
– in conditional sentences 417, 419
impersonal expressions 314–316, 407–409
implicit subordinate clauses 424–429
in, with infinitive 381–382
indirect questions, and subjunctive 410
infinitive, in conditional sentences 418
– in periphrases 291
– in subordinate clauses 424–425
– with **da** 323–330, 381
– with **stare, essere dietro** 291

-ing, how to translate 428–429
interjections 20, 22, 433–438

la in idioms 164–165
Lei 268–269, 403
location, expressed with **a** 323–324
– expressed with **in** 337–338
– expressed with **su, sopra** 343
loro, position 267
– impersonal 316
Loro 268–269, 403

manner, expressed with **a** 322–323
– expressed with **in** 338–339
– in verbs of movement 293–294, 295
modal attraction 414
modal verbs, and auxiliaries 306–307
– and pronouns 267
– and reflexives 314
– different tenses 397–398
movement, expressed with **a** 321
– expressed with **da** 328
– expressed with **in** 337–338
– expressed with **per** 340
movement verbs 293–294

ne 264–265, 272–273
– and auxiliaries 307
– in idioms 166
negative antecedents 414
neither . . . nor 261
nominalization 428
non 285–286, 289
– pleonastic 272, 273, 288, 412
nouns, gender 239–255
– number 256–260
number, expressions with **su, sopra** 343–344
numbers, and **altro** 283

object, impersonal 316–317
– position 277–279
open vs closed vowels 6–7, 83–84

passato prossimo, and **passato remoto** 393–394
– sequence of tenses 399, 401
passato remoto, and **passato prossimo** 393–394
– and sequence of tenses 399
passive 308–310, 314
past gerund 425, 426
past participle, agreement with pronouns 262
– in impersonal expressions 316
– in subordinate clauses 427–428
– position of noun 277, 428
per, with infinitive 379–380
perché clauses, position 422
periodo ipotetico = conditional sentences 416–420
place names and prepositions 356
pluperfect 396–397
plural of nouns 256–260
prefix, negative 288–289
prepositions, articulated 321, 424–425
– following adjectives 373–374, 376–377, 379, 380
– following verbs 365–388
present conditional tense 389–391, 392
– sequence of tenses 401
present participle in subordinate clauses 427
present tense 389–391, 392
– with **da** 329
pronoun, and auxiliaries 307
– proclisis and enclisis 267
– negative 286–288
– reflexive, when omitted 311
– stressed vs unstressed 262, 311
pronouns of address 268–269
proper names, plural 258
protasis 416

reflexive verbs 301, 307, 311–315
regions of Italy, prepositions 356
register 5
relative clauses 9, 422–424
– and the subjunctive 413–414
– in conditional sentences 419
restare, and passive 309
rimanere, and passive 309

same subjects in noun clauses 404
sequence of tenses 399–401
sex, and gender 239–240
si, and passive 314–315
– impersonal 314–316
– with other pronouns 263–265, 266
singular and plural, meanings of nouns 259–260
subject, impersonal 314–316
– position 276–277, 418, 426
subjunctive, in conditional sentences 417–418
– in dependent clauses 404–415
– in main clauses 403–404
– meaning 402–403
– sequence of tenses 400–401
subordinate clauses, before or after the main clause 409, 421–422, 427
suffixes, affective 168–173
– superlative 274–275
superlatives 273–275, 414
– with **di** 272, 334
syntactic doubling 7

telephone alphabet 226–228
time, expressed with **a** 322
– expressed with **da** 329
– expressed with **di** 333
– expressed with **in** 338
– expressed with **per** 340–341
– expressed with **su** 343–344
– expressed with **tra** 346
transition words 20, 22, 441–442
trapassato prossimo tense 396 (*see also* hypotheses about the past)
– and sequence of tenses 399
trapassato remoto tense 397
tu, impersonal 316
– vs **Lei** 268–269

uno, impersonal 316

venire, and gerund 292
– and passive 308
verbal periphrases 8, 10, 290–292
verbs of perception 367–368
vi 266
voi 268–269

weather verbs 298
word order, pronouns and verb 265–268
– subordinate clauses 421–422